ASPECTS OF MAHĀYĀNA BUDDHISM.

AND ITS RELATION TO HINAYANA

BY

NALINAKSHA DUTT, M.A., B.L., Ph.D. (Cal.), D.Litt. (Lond.).

Premchand Roychand Scholar; formerly Professor of Pali, Judson
College, Rangoon; Lecturer, Post-Graduate Department (Pali and
Ancient Indian History and Culture), Calcutta University

WITH A FOREWORD

BY

PROF. LOUIS DE LA VALLÉE POUSSIN of the University of Ghent, Belgium

LUZAC & CO., LONDON 1930

MUNSYI RAM MANOHAR LAL SANSKRIT & HINDI BOOK-SELLERS NAI SARAK, DELHI-6.

3218

Thesis (pt. i) approved for the Degree of Doctor of Literature in the University of London

3218. 16. 8. 55. 294.321 DueTO

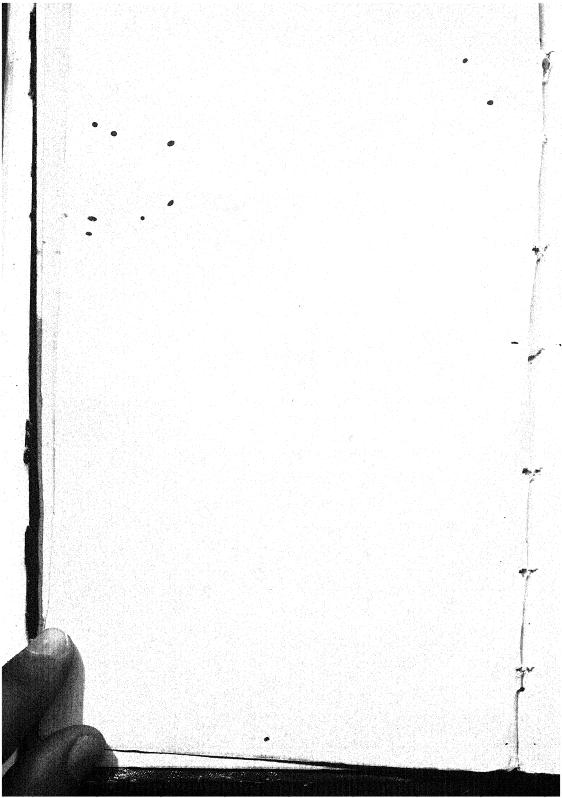
DR. NARENDRA NATH LAW

THIS HUMBLE TRIBUTE

OF

ESTEEM AND FRIENDSHIP





FOREWORD

MY DEAR FRIEND,

You have done me an honour by requesting me to write a few words by way of Preface for your work on the Hinayāna and Mahāyāna and this request reminds me indeed of the many happy hours passed by us in the study of some Buddhist texts and in the discussion of the innumerable questions, of which your well-meaning curiosity expected to have from me the solutions. Often our learned palabra did not of course yield satisfactory solutions; it drifted on, one śāstra leading us to another; commencing from Hīnayāna, we landed in Vijnaptimātratā where quite naturally we lost ourselves. While making our way, however, each of us profited by the discussions.

Your aim, rather modest, is to present a clear view of the relations, historical and doctrinal, between the two Vehicles, and your book responds very well to your purpose. In your treatment of the numerous questions interesting in themselves and more interesting by reason of their general significance, you have not omitted to direct your attention to the exposition of the process of ideas, the action of foreign influences, the stages covering some centuries and an extensive region, by which the early form of Buddhism developed into the wonderful efflorescence of beliefs, myths and metaphysics of the Great Vehicle. It will be clear to your readers that the systems of the Great Vehicle are an adaptation of the theories of the Small Vehicle: praptis and bijas, asamskrtas, kāyas, the tathatā itself, the Sukhāvatīs and the heaven of Maitreva, etc. It is necessary to understand that there was never anything like Protestantism in the history of Buddhism. It is this that you show very well in the course of an examination of an important point.

You have not denied yourself the trouble of giving expositions of the topics on which you have some new observations to make. I wish you had expanded the portion dealing with the history of Buddhism into three or more independent chapters. One can well see from your volume

that the Buddhism of the most ancient sutras differs from that of the philosophical sutras; the Buddhism of the Mahasānghikas is not the Buddhism of the Sarvāstivādins, which again is not identical with that of the Sthaviras; the Mahāyānic tendencies, both doctrinal and religious, are of great antiquity and the Mahāyānic writings refer to aspects of Buddhism very different from one another, e.g., the Lalita, the Pundarīka, the Prajnās, and the treatises of Asanga, not to speak of the Śraddhotpāda and such other works, in which the archaic Śākyamuni disappears giving place to the five Jinas. The researches which will give a little of chronplogy and geography have hardly been begun. Accordingly you do not pretend to write the history of Hīnayāna-Mahāyāna, that is to say, the history of Buddhism.

One of your best chapters, the newest by virtue of both the subject and the method, is that devoted to the Vinaya of the Great Vehicle. While reading it I have taken many of your notes and references. You have rectified some errors that have been current for a long time. We know that the Chinese pilgrims noticed long ago that the members of the two Vehicles resided together in a number of convents. monks,-some adhering to the Great Vehicle and some to the Small, but belonging to the same sect, as also members of different sects within the convent of a particular sect,lived in excellent harmony performing in unison the ecclesiastical acts, and evidently complying quite closely with the same disciplinary rules. Many European critics, not the less, or the least prudent, have denied it in the name of logic: "The sects have for their basis", says one of them, "not only traditional formalities but also some canonical writings, and precise doctrines; a sect divided into two yanas is therefore almost inconceivable. The statements of this nature found in the accounts of the Chinese pilgrims are due probably to confusion, or point to variations purely local and do not permit one to draw from them a general principle." All this is not clear; but we know, from the account given by I-tsing, the story of a Buddhist of the Great Vehicle, who had a horror for meat food: his master, of the Small Vehicle, refused him ordination as long as he did not eat the "three

vii

pure (kinds of meat)." This anecdote, so touching, shows where the difficulty lies. The master of Cittavarman saw nothing wrong in the fact that his disciple read books of the Great Vehicle; his sect had undoubtedly definite views about sarvam asti, about the inutility of the cult of the Bodhisattvas and so forth, but these were problems that did not affect the life of the monks within a convent. The important point is the respect shown to the traditional Vinaya. Cittavarman's master cannot tolerate the scruples about eating which Cittavarman had foolishly learnt from the Lankavatāra. In the same way, the king of Koutcha received respectfully Hiouen Tsang despite his Mahāyānism, but he had in mind to persuade him to take pure meat. Nevertheless, Cittavarman was received amongst the convinced and irreconcilable Hīnayānists, but all Hīnayānists were not of this sort and finally the diversities of diet were allowed in the same convent.

In fact, Mahāyāna is sometimes allied to Tantrism; it has sometimes sanctioned the marriage of monks and the overthrow of the ancient Buddhist institution. It cannot be denied that from the beginning it had a tendency to place the lay-supporters on the side of, if not above, the monks. But you show well that the Mahāyānic disciplinary initiatives at the earliest stage were very modest; the purpose was satisfied by adding a certain number of new rules to the ancient Vinaya (the avoidance of meat and so forth) and by increasing the rigour of some precepts. The scale of values is modified; it is believed that the preaching of the Law and service to others are more precious than the exercises which are of personal utility and certain ancient rules, though favourable to Arhatism-"no possession, no anxiety" -were no longer regarded as obligatory. The progress was generally slow but it was pursued without any harm. "The upholders of the more rigorous discipline should not be blamed, the upholders of the less rigorous are also blameless." Devadatta, the Abbé Tempête of the history of Buddhism, did not play an important rôle in this history. As concerns the doctrines, it cannot be conceived that Vasubandhu on adopting the doctrine of Tathatā had to quit his sect for

entering into a sect of the Mahāyānists. Where are the sects of the Mahāyānists, and by which names should they be known? There are only eighteen sects, all of which were represented in the assemblage of scholars of Nālandā. Can it be doubted that the communities of the Sthaviras practised the cult of relics? However, according to the definite views found in the Dīgha, the cult of relics concerns the laity and not the monks, whose endeavour should be exclusively confined to the supermundane.

Your critical exposé of the views formerly and lately offered concerning Nirvāna is very lucid. It is a problem full of difficulties because it is not easy for unmystical minds to understand a thing which can only be "realised" in trance. Clearly, the Hinayana denied the existence of any psychological principle outside the Skandhas. Evidently, the Skandhas (which are also named Upadhi) disappear at the death of a saint. Nevertheless, if the (Sautrantika) author of the Sutra says: "Five things are mere name, viz., things of the past, things of the future, space, Pudgala and Nirvana," Buddhists, as a rule, admit that Nirvana is bliss; but the saint, when dead, does not touch, seize, possess, realize Nirvana, as he used to do when living. Such is the doctrine of the Vibhāsā. For early Buddhists, the Nirvāna was, of course, an immortal state beyond existence and non-existence. The thirst for non-existence is very bad, the aspiration to Nirvana is the very root of salvation and happiness.

In conclusion, I do not wish to omit to point out the diligence with which you have collected the information and discussed the few points with which we are acquainted about the geographical origin of Mahāyāna; and also the interesting results that you have furnished by your study of the *Prajnā-pāramitās*.

It now remains for me to thank you for your desire that my name should be associated with your work.

BRUXELLES
5th November, 1929

Yours very sincerely, Louis de La Vallée Poussin

PREFACE

The object of this work is to present an exposition of the principal doctrines of Mahāyāna as found in the early Mahāyānic treatises and to show points of agreement and difference between the doctrines of Hinayana and Mahayana. For the convenience of comparison and for comprehending clearly the gradual changes undergone by the Buddhistic doctrines, I have sometimes placed in a detached way the views as found in the authoritative texts of Hinayana and Mahayana without attempting to mix them up into a composite whole. The reason for following this method of presentation is that the Buddhist texts are the products of different periods and regions separated sometimes by long distances of time and space and, therefore, they cannot always be expected to fit into one homogeneous whole. It would be obliterating the signposts of development of philosophical or religious thought or its distinctions due to its development in different schools or regions if we treat the views embodied in the different treatises as a composite entity. The views found in every volume of the Buddhist scriptures should be sublected to an examination from this standpoint before they could be mixed up into an amalgam. In these circumstances, it will be helpful to Buddhistic studies, if the facts collected from the various texts be stated accurately but in separate groups so as not to blur in any way the peculiar significance of each group.

The FIRST chapter is meant to help the readers to have a bird's-eye view of Buddhism for about seven centuries. The doctrines dealt with in the second and subsequent chapters belong to this period, though the sources from which the information has been drawn may be later.

The SECOND chapter shows that the Mahāyānists regarded themselves as the true followers of Buddha, and asserted that Buddha had only one form of teaching, the Mahāyāna; but the Hīnayānists being, according to the Mahāyānists, intellectually weak, could not comprehend it thoroughly.

They considered themselves far superior to the Hinayanists and adduced reasons for this superiority.

The THIRD chapter is divided into four sections. It will be found from the first section that according to the Saddharmapundarika and other Mahavana texts, the Hīnayāna teaching was only an expedient adopted by Buddha to suit the mental calibre of his early disciples, and that the Hinavanists were taught only Pudgalasunyata and not Dharmaśūnyatā. It has been shown in the second section that the Buddha of the Hinayanists was really. according to the Mahāvāna view, one of his Nirmānakāvas. his two other kāyas being Sambhoga and Dharma. A review of the speculations of Trikaya in the various texts has been given in the section. The third section treats of the interpretations of Nirvana. In it the conclusions drawn by scholars from the Pitaka passages have been reviewed and the expositions of Buddhaghosa, Vasubandhu, Nāgārjuna and others have been summarised and compared. The fourth section deals with the four Truths and the Causal Law, the Paramarthasatyas of the Hinayanists. They are, however, Samvrtisatvas to the Mahāvānists, whose Paramārtha or Parinispanna-satva is Dharmaśūnyatā or Tathatā.

The FOURTH chapter contains an exposition of the Bodhisattva-bhūmis, showing that the first six bhūmis correspond to the four stages of spiritual progress of the Hīnayānists, and that the last four bhūmis are meant exclusively for bodhisattvas for the comprehension of Dharmasūnyatā or Dharmasamatā and the acquisition of the extraordinary powers of a Buddha.

It has been shown in the FIFTH chapter that the Mahā-yānists depended upon the Hīnayānists for their disciplinary code, adding to it some rules and practices in conformity with their own ideals.

In the APPENDIX an attempt has been made to ascertain the probable time of composition of the $Prajn\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$.

The difficulty of finding suitable English equivalents of the technical terms of Buddhist philosophy has compelled me at times to use the original Pāli and Sanskrit words without their English renderings. To make these words PREFACE

хi

easily intelligible, an alphabetical list of same with the English renderings has been given at the end of the book.

A tendency is noticeable in scholars making a special study of a particular branch of Buddhistic literature to develop a love for same, leading him to look upon the other branches of the literature with disfavour. This accounts for the lack of sympathy sometimes evinced by a scholar in the field of Hīnayāna towards the subjects pertaining to Mahāyāna. This state of things ought to be removed by a widening of outlook through an extension of the field of study by each scholar so as to embrace the one towards which he is unsympathetic without any good grounds.

In sectarian disputes it is not unusual that one sect should misrepresent the views of the rival sect. As the result of my study of Hinayana and Mahayana, however, I can state without hesitation that the Buddhist writers are not open to this charge. Uniformly, the Mahāyāna works have represented accurately the position of the Hinayanists. This can be well corroborated by actual references to the Hinayana works in regard to the expositions of particular Hīnayānic views. I have attempted to demonstrate that the Mahāyānists had no personal grudge against the Hīnayānists though, of course, the doctrines of the former differed essentially from those of the latter. The Mahāyānic criticisms of the Hinayanic doctrines throw a flood of light on points which would have remained obscure if we had to depend on the Hinayana works alone. In order to clear up their own position, the Mahayanists carefully analysed the Hīnayāna doctrines. Hence, instead of obscuring or misrepresenting the position of the Hinayanists, the Mahayana works made substantial contributions towards the elucidation of Hinayanic doctrines. Hence, to my mind, it is essential that we should utilise both the Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna works in order to arrive at the right conclusions with regard to the Buddhist doctrines.

In conclusion, I want to acknowledge my debts of gratitude to the scholars who have rendered me help in various ways in the preparation of this work. I am thankful to Prof. R. L. Turner, Dr. L. D. Barnett and Dr. N. N. Law, under

whose directions the plan of the book was matured and who did not spare themselves the trouble of going through it to remove its blemishes. The sympathy with which Dr. Barnett used to come to us, the Indian students, in the Oriental Room of the British Museum to furnish us with the pieces of useful information come across by him in the course of his studies and to help us otherwise in our subjects of research will always be a pleasant memory to me. The help derived by me from Prof. Louis de la Vallée Poussin of the University of Ghent proved very fruitful. Little did he realize the services he was rendering to me through the answers to my "queries" which by their nature and number often taxed to the utmost his delicate health. But his genial temper was never ruffled, and the best efforts were made by him to lead me through the maze of technicalities of the Mahāyāna scriptures. It was indeed a pleasure to meet him at Brussels in his cosy study with the master-minds of the Buddhistic age preserved in the numerous volumes nicely arranged all around. He has increased my obligation to him by contributing a Foreword to this volume. My thanks are also due to Prof. Max Walleser of Heidelberg and Dr. E. J. Thomas of Cambridge for giving me facilities for research, the former by placing his whole library at my disposal during my stay at Heidelberg and guiding me to consult the Tibetan and Chinese works, and the latter by enabling me to have access to the rare Buddhist manuscripts deposited in the Cambridge University Library. take this opportunity to express my thanks to the Principal of the London School of Oriental Studies, Dr. E. D. Ross, who is always ready to extend his helping hand to the Indian students, and who took much interest in my Tibetan and Chinese studies.

Though this work was written in Europe, I had in India a few sincere friends who helped me in diverse ways in spite of the distance; particularly mentionable among them is Prof. Durgamohan Bhattacharya, M.A., of the Scottish Church College.

Mr. N. C. Barua, M.A., has helped me much by preparing the Index to this work. The way in which a young friend of

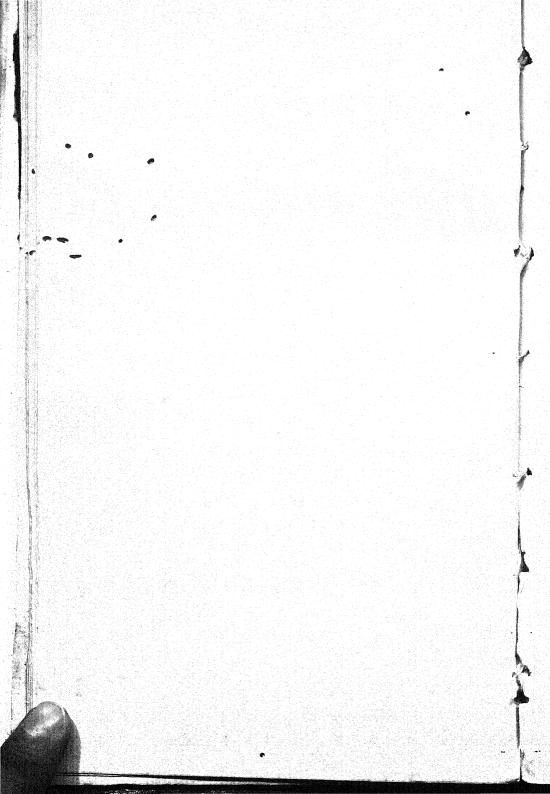
PREFACE xiii

mine, Mr. Abani Mohan Chakravarti, has assisted me in making my manuscript ready for the Press merits special mention. As a mere expression of gratitude to Dr. N. N. Law would be inadequate for the help received from him, I take this opportunity to dedicate to him this humble volume.

The acknowledgments of my indebtedness will not be complete unless I express my gratitude to the authorities of the Post-graduate Arts Department of the Calcutta University for the study-leave granted to me for enabling me to prosecute my researches in Europe.

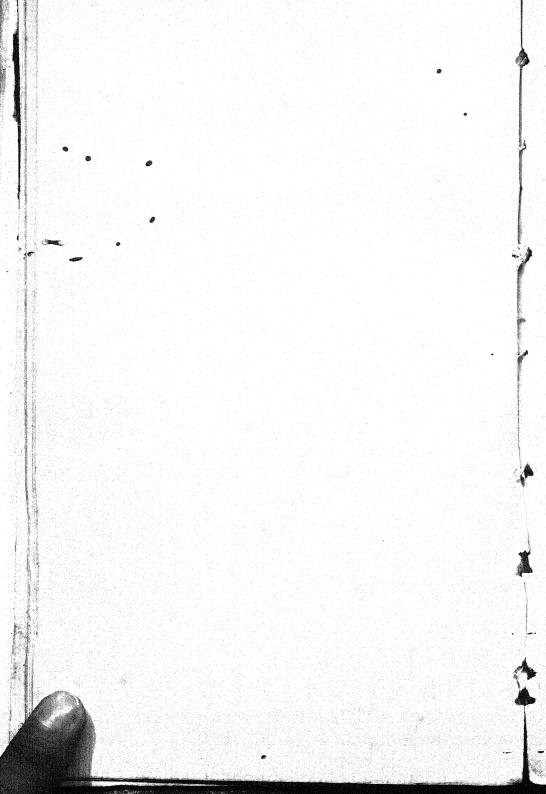
NALINAKSHA DUTT

Calcutta University 30th July, 1930



CONTENTS

보이는 물로 가득하는 것을 보고 있다. 그런 것이 되었다. 그런 그를 보고 있다. 일 대한 장이를 모르는 것이 같아 있다. 장면 전에 있는 것이 되었다. 그런 이를 보고 있다.	PAGE
Foreword	⊽
Preface	ix°
CHAPTER	
I. A Historical Survey of the Period of Transition	
from Hīnayāna to Mahāyāna	1
II. General Observations on the Relation between	
Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna	46
III. The Doctrines of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna Compar	ed:
(a) Preliminary	91
(b) The Doctrine of Kaya	96
(c) The Doctrine of Nirvāna	129
(d) The Doctrine of Truths	205
IV. The Stages of Spiritual Progress	238
V. The Vinaya of the Mahāyānists	290
Appendix. A Note on the Prajñāpāramitā	323
Table of Abbreviations	337
A List of Pāli and Sanskrit Words	341
Index	347



CHAPTER I

A Historical Survey of the Period of Transition from Hinayana to Mahayana

The history of Buddhism for the first six or seven centuries may be looked upon as covering the following three periods:

- A. Early or Pure Hinayana Buddhism, preserved mainly in the Pali Nikayas and Vinaya, or in the fragments of their Sanskrit versions hitherto discovered.
- B. MIXED HĪNAYĀNA BUDDHISM, represented by the various schools which came into existence about a century after Buddha's death. The sources for this period are scanty, being limited to a few books, either expressly attributed to a particular school, or having sufficient evidence to indicate the school to which the works belong, and also the treatises dealing exclusively with the history of the schools and their doctrines.
- C. The Beginning of Mahāyāna, or as Rosenberg puts it, the period of conflict between Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna. ¹ The sources for this period are mainly the *Prajñāpāramitās*, the Saddharma Punḍarīka, the Daśabhūmikasūtra, the Ganḍavyūha, the Lankāvatāra as also the works of Nāgārjuna, Aśvaghoṣa, Asanga and others so far as they throw light on the relative position of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna.

FIRST PERIOD

(i.e., circa 450 to 350 B. C.)

A. EARLY OR PURE HĪNAYĀNA BUDDHISM

There has already arisen a fairly large amount of literature upon the first period (i.e., the first century after the inception

¹ A similar division was also suggested by Wassiljew in his *Buddhismus*, pp. 38 ff.: Die erste Periode = ein Jahrhundret nach dem Tode des Buddha; die zweite Periode = die Zeit des Streits; und die dritte Periode = Mahāyāna.

Rosenberg divides the period a little differently in Die Probleme der buddhistischen Philosophie, p. 35: Die Periode des sogennanten "reinen

of Buddhism), offering us solutions of many problems—a result which has been made possible by the strenuous labours of the Pāli Text Society in regard to the publication of the Pāli canonical texts. By the early or pure Hīnayāna Buddhism, we mean only that form of Buddhism which is presented to us by a considerable portion of the Vinaya and the four Nikāyas.¹ For the present purpose of drawing a rough sketch of the period of transition from Hīnayāna to Mahāyāna we shall state some of the conclusions reached by scholars about the Buddhism of this period in order to ascertain how it changed in course of time and gave rise to the different schools. These conclusions are as follows:—

Hinayana" und seiner verschiedenen Richtungen, d. h. der älteste Buddhismus; die Periode des Entstehens des Mahayana und seines Kampfes mit dem Hinayana; die Periode des Sieges und des Aufblühens des Mahayana. The first two periods of Rosenberg's division cover our three.

1 Not all the suttas of all the Nikäyas, because there are many that were incorporated in a later period. The Khuddaka Nikāya contains a few early works, but many are of much later date. The Divyāvadāna always speaks of four Agamas, implying that the four Nikayas or Agamas were the only recognised canonical texts even at the time of the compilation of the Divyāvadāna. See Divyā., pp. 17, 253, 333. Prof. Bapat contends in his article, "The different strata in the literary material of the Digha Nikāya" in the Annals of the Bhandarkar Institute (vol. VIII, pt. i) that the Pāli canon like all other sacred literatures is 'a mosaic of earlier and later material.' His view is that the suttas, containing among other things, accounts of miracles, mythological, and metaphysical or Buddhological speculations, are later than those which contain simple teachings of sīla, samādhi, and paññā. difficult to agree with some of his conclusions, specially his remarks that the suttas of the first volume of the Digha Nikāya are earlier than those of the second, and that the suttas of the second are earlier than those of the third, for in the first volume there are suttas like Kevaddha. Ambattha, containing materials, which, according to his own statement, should be of a later date.

As early as 1911, Prof. Winternitz in his learned review of the translations of the Dīgha Nikāya in the J.R.A.S. raised this point of the Nikāyas being a mosaic of materials, early and late. He analysed the Mahāparinibbāna-sutta and the Mahāpadāna-sutta, and showed the various strata contained in them. Prof. Bapat does not seem to have noticed this review as otherwise he could have seen many other means of testing the different strata. These matters, however, are still far from a complete solution.

- 1. The spread of Buddhism was confined to a few towns or villages situated in the central belt of India from the east to the west. Of these the more noteworthy are (commencing from the east): Kajangala, Campā, Rājagaha, Gayā, Kāsi, Nālandā, Pāṭaliputta, Vesāli, Sāvatthi; the dominion of the Licehavis, Vajjis, Videhas, Mallas, Bhaggas, and Koliyas; Kosambi, Sankassa, Ujjeni, Avanti, Madhurā, and Verañja. There were a few adherents who came from the northern country of Maddaraṭṭha, and two brāhmaṇa villages of Kuru, and also from the southern places like Paṭṭṭṭhāna. Gandhāra and Takkhasilā were as yet unknown to them.¹
- 2. The kings and clans mentioned in them are all pre-Asokan, e.g., Bimbisāra, Ajātasattu, Pasenadi Kosala, and Caṇḍa Pajjota, and the clans like the Bulis, Koliyas, and Vajjis.²
- 3. The place of the laity was not yet well defined. Laymen appeared more as supporters of the Sangha than as its actual members. They only revered Buddha and his disciples, heard their teachings, and observed some of the precepts and, on occasions, uttered the formulae of trisarana—the only mark that distinguished a devotee of Buddha from others. This, however, did not affect their social status, which in India has always been associated with religion, as they continued to be the members of the society to which they belonged.³
- 4. The religion in its full form was meant exclusively for those who would retire from the household life, enter the order of monks, and observe the *Pātimokkha* rules, the observance of which was not possible for a householder. Householders could not observe completely even the ten sīlas.
- 5. The Pāramitās were yet unknown. The Life of Buddha usually commenced from the time of retirement to the attainment of Bodhi with occasional references to his previous existences, as in the Mahāgovinda sutta or the Mahāsudassana

¹ See my Early History etc., pp. 82 ff.; E. J. Thomas, Life of the Buddha, Map.

² Ibid.

³ N. Law, Studies in Indian History and Culture, ch. v. "Early Buddhism and the Laity."

sutta. The conception of the life of a Bodhisattva performing pāramis was hazy, if not unknown.

- 6. The Jātakas, as one of the nine Angas, referred to only some of the stories relating to the previous births of Buddha as found in the Mahāgovinda, Mahāsudassana, Makhādeva and other Jātakas traced by Dr. Rhys Davids in the Nikāyas and Vinaya but they did not appear as yet as a separate collection depicting the Bodhisattva's practice of the pāramitās.²
- 7. Buddha was a human being but possessed of omniscience, supernatural powers, and other attainments unattainable by other beings. The appearance of a Buddha is exceedingly rare in the world, only one occurring in several kalpas.
- 8. The doctrines were confined to the three essentials, Anicca, Dukkha, and Anatta, and the four Ariyasaccas, the Paticcasamuppāda, and the Atthangika-magga; practices were limited to the thirty-seven Bodhipakkhika dhammas. The practices were usually divided under three heads: sīla (moral precept), samādhi (mental training), and paññā (development of insight and knowledge enabling one to realise the Truth).
- 9. The goal of life was Arhathood and rarely Pacceka-buddhahood, but never Buddhahood. The stages of progress to Arhathood were four, viz., sotāpanna, sakadāgāmi, anāgāmi and arahatta.
- 10. Nibbāna was a state of absolute rest and marked the end of all kilesas (afflictions) and hence of all dukkha. It was an extremely happy and peaceful (sānta, paṇīta, accantasukha) condition.

SECOND PERIOD

(i.e., circa 350 to 100 B.C.)

B. MIXED HĪNAYĀNA BUDDHISM

The history of the events and doctrines of Buddhism of this period—one of the most important periods in its history—is still not fully known; first, because the sources from which the

¹ See E. R. E., II, sv. Bodhisattva. 2 See infra., pp. 6 f.

³ See Saunders, *Epochs in Buddhist History*, pp. xviii-xix for a scheme of Buddhology.

reconstruction can be made are scanty, and secondly, because the dates of composition of those that are available have not yet been definitely ascertained. This period witnessed the breaking up of the Buddhist Sangha into many sections and the scattering of these sections over the various parts of India, each growing in its own way. Though dissensions in the Church may be undesirable from the orthodox point of view, they were indicative of the great interest taken by the disciples in ascertaining the real teachings of Buddha as also of the attempts to interpret the old teachings in a new way, and to adapt them to the changed circumstances brought about by the advancement of thought for over a century.

THE GROWTH OF THE Abhidhamma LITERATURE

To keep pace with this movement of thought, the older schools had to gird up their loins in order to make their position strong and unassailable. As the result of this effort, we have the Abhidhamma literature of the Theravāda and the Sarvāstivāda schools. The great agreement between the Nikāyas (=Āgamas)² and the Vinaya³ of the Theravāda and the Sarvāstivāda schools, and the great disagreement between their Abhidhamma⁴ literatures show clearly that while compil-

1 E.g. Sanskrit: Mahāvastu, Lalitavistara, Divyāvadāna, Avadāna6ataka, Aśokāvadāna, Vasumitra's treatise on the Schools, fragments
of the Sanskrit Canon discovered in Eastern Turkestan and the neighbouring regions;

Pāli: Kathāvatthu, Milinda-pañha, Ceylonese chronicles, Nikāya-

sangraha.

² Theravāda: Suttapitaka: Dīghanikāya, Majjhimanikāya, Anguttaranikāya, Samyuttanikāya and Khuddakanikāya.

Sarvāstivāda: Dīrghāgama, Madhyamāgama, Ekottarāgama and Samyuktāgama.

3 Theravāda: Vinayapitaka: Pātimokkha, Mahāvagga, Cullavagga, Suttavibhanga and Parivāra.

Sarvāstivāda: Vinayapitaka: Vinayavastu, Prūtimokṣasūtra, Vinayavibhāga, Vinayaksudrakavastu and Vinaya-uttaragrantha.

4 Theravāda: Abhidhamma: Dhammasangani, Vibhanga, Dhātukathā, Puggalapaññatti, Kathāvatthu, Yamaka and Paṭṭhāna.

Sarvāstivāda: Abhidhamma: Sangītiparyāya, Dhātukāya, Prajňaptisāra, Dharmaskandha, Vijñānakāya and Prakaraṇapāda.

For details see Early History etc., pp. 277 ff.

ing their Nikāyas and the essential parts of the Vinayas, the two schools lived close to each other in Magadha or thereabouts, and utilised a common source, but while compiling their Abhidhammas, they were far from each other and developed the Abhidhamma literatures independently. From the nature of the contents of the Kathāvatthu of the Theravādins, it is also evident that the Abhidhammas were developed not only to add strength to their respective views but also to criticise the views of their opponents and establish their own against them. Hence, we can say that this period witnessed not only the appearance of the new schools but also a new development of the older ones.

THE APPEARANCE OF THE Jātakas AND Avadānas

Besides the efforts of the old and the new schools to vie with one another in the field of literature, one notices also a keen competition among them for propagating among the masses the tenets of their respective schools, which, as a matter of fact, resulted in a great measure in the wide propagation of Buddhism.⁵ It is a well-known fact that the $J\bar{a}takas$ and the

1 i.e., in the first period.

² For a comparison of the fragments of Sarvāstivāda Āgamas with the corresponding portions of the Pāli Nikāyas, see Hoernle, *Manuscript Remains etc.*, pp. 30 ff.

For the correspondence, verbal and otherwise, between the Prātimoksa-sūtra of the Sarvāstivādins and the Pātimokkha of the Theravādins, see J.A., 1913; see also Lévi, J.A., 1912; Oldenberg, Z.D.M.G., vol. lii; Watanabe, Tables of Problems in the Samyukta Āgama and Samyutta Nikāya (Tokio, 1926).

3 See J.P.T.S., 1904-5, pp. 60 ff.

⁴ An evidence for the later growth of the Abhidamma literature is the orthodox tradition (Attha., pp. 28-32) that Buddha did not preach the Abhidhamma in extense but gave only the mātikā, which was later on developed by Sāriputta and handed down by him through his disciples to Revata. This evidence is important in view of the fact that this is a statement made by persons who believe that every thing of the scriptures is Buddhavacana. The rejection of the Abhidhamma by the Mahāšānghikas as non-canonical is also an evidence in support of our contention. See Early History etc., p. 235. In the Kośa-vyākhyā (p. 12) it is stated that the Abhidharma was preached in fragments by Buddha.

5 The inscriptions, which speak of the gifts made to a particular

Avadānas were meant for inspiring in the minds of the people a faith in Buddhism and thus popularising the religion. The Jātakas were only an afterthought of the Theravādins. They originally did not form part of their scriptures (Buddhavacana). The Jātaka Book of the floating mass of Jātakas, some of which found their way into the famous stone-monuments of India, belongs certainly to an ancient date as is proved by scholars like Rhys Davids, Cunningham, Oldenberg, and Winternitz, but still all of them are not considered to be of the same age as the Nikāyas. Rhys Davids' suggestion that the stories found both in the Nikāyas (i.e., Suttanta-Jātakas of the Cullaniddesa) and in the Jātaka collection form the oldest type

of Jātaka stories and may be called pre-Jātaka is of great value. The mention of Jātakas among the Navāngas, a very ancient division of the Buddhist scripture, may lead one to think that the most ancient Buddhists were not without a Jātaka literature of their own. This seems plausible at first sight, but it should be remembered that the division of Buddhist scriptures into nine Angas does not refer to nine different groups of literature but to nine types of composition to be found in the collections of the ancient Buddhists. In

school, add sometimes that the gifts were meant also for the cāturdiśa sanghas, i.e., members of the Buddhist Sangha in general.

Compare the Ava. S., p. xxxix (Kalpadrumāvadāna):
Gacchata bhikṣave yūyam sattvānām vinayārthatah,

Desan pratyabhigacchantah prakāsayata samvrtim.

(The word samvrti in this verse is noteworthy. The Mahāyānists will not admit that the dharmas which were mostly propagated by the Hīnayānists at first were anything but the truth in disguise. There is, of course, also the hint that paramārtha truth is a matter for realisation and cannot be the subject of preaching.)

1 See Speyer, Preface to the Ava. S., pp. v, vi.

² In the *I.H.Q.*, vol. iv, p. 6, Prof. Winternitz draws our attention to the fact that the Mandalay and Phayre Mss. of the Jātaka-Book (i.e., Verse-Jātaka) have been examined by Dr. Weller and found to be extracts made from the Jātaka commentary. He, however, still cherishes the view that there was a canonical Jātaka-Book and that it was in verses.

3 Buddhist India, pp. 190 f.; Mr. G. D. De (Cal. Rev. 1929-30) however shows that versions of some of the Suttanta-Jātakas are posterior to the versions of those of the Jātaka-Atthakathā; hence all Nikāya-Jātakas

are not of the oldest type and cannot be called pre-Jataka.

one Sutta or Suttanta there may be portions which can be called a sutta, a geyya 1, a gāthā, an udāna, a veyyākarana, an abbhutadhamma, or a jātaka. It was long after the navānga division was known that the compilations Udana, Itivuttaka, and Jātaka came into existence. The explanation of navāngas as attempted by Buddhaghosa 2 also shows that he did not know any particular sections of literature corresponding to the navāngas. It is very interesting to notice in his exposition that for two of the nine angas, viz., Vedalla and Abbhutadhamma, he could not find any work or group of works which could be classified under these headings and so he named some suttas which came under them. Taking these two as our clue, we may suggest that the other seven of the navangas should also be explained in the same way. Instead of putting the whole Abhidhamma collection under Veyvākarana,4 the Suttas, in which Sāriputta, Mahākaccāyana or Buddha⁵ gave detailed expositions of the four truths or the eightfold path, or of any tenet of Buddhism or of any of the pithy sayings of Buddha, should have been included. So also the Jātaka-Anga does not refer to the 550 Jātakas as Buddhaghosa says, but to the few stories found in the Nikāyas, in which Buddha refers to incidents in one of his

² Sum. Vil., pp. 23, 24; Attha., p. 26; Petavatthu A., p. 2.

4 As done in the Attha., pp. 27-28.

¹ Attha., p. 26: Sabbam pi sagāthakam suttam Geyyan ti veditabbam.

³ Attha., p. 26: Sabbe pi acchariyabbhutadhammapatisamyuttā suttantā Abbhutadhamman ti veditabbam. The 'Acchariyabbhutadhamma Sutta' (Majjhima, III, pp. 118 f.) may be treated as one of the Abbhutadhamma class. For Abbhutadhamma, see also Mtu., III, p. 200.

⁵ The Mahākaccānabhaddekaratta-sutta (*Majjhima*, III, No. 133) offers an excellent example of a sutta containing gāthā and veyyākaraṇa. The Mahākammavibhaṅga-sutta (*Majjhima*, III, No. 136) is a type of veyyākaraṇa sutta.

Buddhaghosa makes himself quite clear in his attempt to establish that the Kathāvatthu is as much Buddha-bhāsita as were the Madhupindika and such other Suttas expounded by Mahākaccāna, Ānanda and others. His argument is that Buddha at some places gave only the mātikā (substance), which was sometimes explained by Mahākaccāna, and the whole of it was regarded as Buddhavacana. Suttas of this type, in my opinion, were meant to be included under Veyyākaraṇa-division. See Attha., p. 5.

previous births. Pūrvānusmṛti is one of the abhijñās (superior knowledge) acquired by the Arhats; so it is quite in keeping with the tenets of early Buddhism to speak of one's previous existences. But the idea of utilising these stories of Pūrvānusmṛti as a means of propagation of the religion came later, at least, subsequent by a century and a half to the inception of Buddhism. So it is in the second period of our division that we must place the compilation or composition of the Abhidhamma and the Jātaka literatures.¹

Like Buddhaghosa, the Mahāyānic expositors attempted to classify their literature according to the twelve angas—a division current among the Sarvāstivādins, the Mahāsānghikas and others, placing the Aṣṭasāhasrikā-Prajñāpāramitā under Sūtra, the Gaṇḍavyūha, Samādhirāja and Saddharmapunḍarīka under Vyākaraṇa, and so forth.² But this division of scriptures into twelve Angas was not the work of the Mahāyānists. It had been made by the Sarvāstivādins³ and the Mahāsānghikas and followed by some of the other Hīnayānic schools. The three additional Angas are Nidāna, Avadāna and Upadeša.⁴ Burnouf explains Nidāna as those treatises which show the causes antecedent to events, e.g., how Śākyamuni became a Buddha. The cause

² Burnouf, Intro., pp. 51-67; Hodgson, Notices etc., in the Asiatic Researches, XVI; Wassiljew, Buddhismus, pp. 118 f.

¹ In addition to what has been said in connection with the Abhidhamma (see fn. ante, p. 6), it may be pointed out that the Mahāsānghikas also rejected the claim of the Theravādins that the Abhidhamma and the Jātakas were canonical. Compare the Yogācāra tradition that in the first part of his life, Buddha preached the four Āgamas, Dharmānusmṛṭyupasthāna, Lalitavistara, Karmaśataka and Avadānaśataka. Wassiljew, Buddhismus, p. 352. According to the Sarvāstivādins, each of the Abhidharma books had a compiler. Cf. Koša-vyākhyā, p. 12: Śruyante hi abhidharmaśāstrānām kartārah.

³ Kośa, VI, 29b. Professor La Vallée Poussin drew my attention to the fact that the 12 angas are mentioned in Yaśomitra's Vyākhyā and not in the Kośa itself.

⁴ Taking Vaipulya=Vedalla, see Kern, Manual of Buddhism, p. 7. For a discussion about Vaipulya=Vaitulya, see J.R.A.S., 1907, pp. 432ff and 1927, pp. 268ff; but cf. Buddhaghosa's interpretation in the Atha., p. 26.

was the completion of the Paramitas by Buddha and so the treatises, or the portions of treatises, describing the completion of pāramitās are called Nidānas. He also points out that there is no literature which is classified under Nidana.1 The explanation of Burnouf is supported by the Nidanakatha of the Jatakatthavannana. But in the Mahavāna literature as well as in the Mahavastu, Nidana signifies the introductory description which sometimes contains, as in the case of the Mahavastu,2 hints of the topics to be dealt with in the treatise. The description of the preparations made by Buddha, viz., entering into samadhi and putting forth rays of light from the body, the appearance of Buddhas on lotus, and so forth before the preaching of the Prajñāpāramitā, is called Nidāna.3 In the Tibetan versions of the Ratnakūta-sūtras, the place where a particular Sūtra was delivered is referred to as Nidana.4 Considering the uses of this expression, we may take it as that anga (portion) of a treatise, which contains the introductory matters. The sense of the term Avadana is clear and needs no comment. It includes all stories of previous births whether of Buddha or of any of his disciples or of any prominent figure professing the Buddhist faith, and a huge literature has grown under this heading.⁵ In the explanation of the term Upadesa, however, there is some obscurity. There is hardly any justification for considering the Buddhist Tantras as coming under the heading Upadesa, for they had not come into existence when the term Upadesa came into vogue.6 It certainly means "instruction" and this is supported by the Tibetan rendering of the term by bab-par-bstan pahi-In one 7 of the Chinese texts it has been explained

¹ Burnouf also points out the technical signification of the term Nidāna as=12 links of the Pratītyasamutpāda. Cf. Nidānasutta in the Dīgha.

² Mtu., I, pp. 2, 4.

³ Pañca., p. 17. ⁴ M. Lalou's paper in the J.A., 1928.

⁵ See Speyer's Intro. to the Ava. S. The Pāli collection has also an Apadāna. It contains accounts of the previous lives of Arhats.

⁶ Burnouf, op. cit., pp. 55-6; As. Res., XVI, p. 427; Wassiljew, op. cit., p. 119: "die Upadesas eine analystische Untersuchung der Lehre."

⁷ On 12 Angas, see Nanjio's Catalogue, No. 1199 (Taisho ed. of the Tripitaka, vol. 31, p. 586).

as those discourses which contain expositions of the profound and mysterious dharmas. That the term later on bore this sense is also apparent from the fact that the Abhisama-yālaṅkārakārikā is sometimes called $Praj\~nāpāramitopade$a-sāstra.$

Incorporation of *Pāramis* in the doctrines of the

One can easily observe the type of literature that was intended for inclusion under at least two of these headings. It consisted more of anecdotes, stories, parables and so forth than of the actual doctrines of Buddhism. They were incorporated into the Buddhist literature in the garb of Pūrvānusmrtis, and the chief object was to popularise Buddhism and to show that they were meant as much for the benefit of the masses as for the selected few who could retire from the world. This is an innovation which the earliest orthodox school, the Theravadins, had to make reluctantly under the pressure of circumstances. Their early literature was ignorant of the pāramitās, 2 and much later, when they spoke of pāramis it was only to inspire faith in the minds of the people and not to set an example to incite them to fulfil the pāramis. The attitude of the Sarvāstivādins and the Mahāsānghikas. however, was different. They did not diminish in the least the extreme difficulty of the task of fulfilling the pāramitās, but they did not discourage people from the endeavour. Not only to inspire faith, but also to encourage people in the performance of dana, sila, kṣanti, virya, dhyana and praina, they invented story after story and associated them not only with the life of Buddha but also with the lives of persons who attained prominence in the history of the Buddhist faith.

The Theravadins, it will be observed, speak of ten paramis,

1 See my Intro. to the Pañca.

² The omission of the Pāramis in the Dasuttara and Sangīti suttantas of the Dīgha is significant. The word 'pāramippatto' (Majjhima, III, p. 28) is sometimes found in the sense of perfection but not in the technical sense of six or ten pāramis.

viz., dāna, sīla, nekkhamma, paññā, viriya, khanti, sacca, adhitthana, metta, and upekkha. Throughout the Sanskrit literature, whether Hinayana or Mahayana, earlier or later, the pāramitās are mentioned as six 1. It is in the Daśabhūmikasūtra² that we first find mention of ten pāramitās, adding the following four to the usual six, -Upāyakauśalya, Pranidhāna. Bala, and Jñāna. If we compare the three lists, it is evident that the conception of six paramitas was the oldest. The Theravadins added to it Nekkhamma, Sacca. Adhitthand, Metta, and Upekkha, and dropped Dhyana. Apparently this list lacks a system, 3 for the last two Metta and Upekkhā are the two of the four brahmavihāras and have to be practised by all Arhats to perfection, while Sacca may easily be included in Sīla. Of the other two, Adhitthana is to form a resolution (which in the case of Sumedha only was to become a Buddha) and to carry it out at any cost. It corresponds to Pranidhana of the Mahayanists.4 The Nekkhamma pārami, i.e., retirement from the household life, was emphasised by the Theravadins, and, in fact, formed one of the chief features of the doctrines of this school, while it was let alone by the Mahāsānghikas and the Sarvāstivādins. The Mahāyānists also gave to Nekkhamma a superior place, but they did not make it imperative upon every being to retire in order to derive the benefits of the religion.

One of the main reasons for the differential treatment of the Pāramitās by the three schools is that the Theravādins rejected the idea of any being aspiring to Buddhahood, while the other two regarded the probability of a being becoming Buddha as a very rare event. In the *Divyāvadāna*, we find passages in which it is said that after the delivery of a discourse, some beings were established in the Truth,

¹ Divyā., pp. 95, 127, 490; Lal. Vis., pp. 345, 474; Sata., p. 242.

² Daśa., pp. 63, 72, 81, 94. Cf. Mvyut. 34.

³ Cf. Prof. La Vallée Poussin's remark in the E.R.E., sv. Bodhisattva.

⁴ See *Infra*, ch. IV; for four kinds of Adhitthāna, see *Mvyut.*, 80 and *P.T.S. Dict.*; Adhitthāna in the *Mahāvaṃsa*, ch. XVII, *ŝl.* 46.

⁵ Divyā., pp. 226, 271, 368, 469, 476, 478, 495, 569.

some in one of the four stages of sanctification, some developed aspiration for the attainment of Śrāvakabodhi or Pratyekabodhi, and some for Anuttarasamyaksambodhi. Remarks like these are significant and show that the Sarvāstivādins, to which school the Divyāvadāna belongs, were not as conservative as the Theravādins. The Mahāsāṅghikas, as is well-known, were the first to bring about this change in the angle of vision. They were the precursors of Mahāyāna, and hence, it is hardly necessary to adduce reasons why the practice of Pāramitās should form an integral part of their doctrines. So the introduction and formulation of the Pāramitās were due originally either to the Mahāsāṅghikas or the Sarvāstivādins and were adopted later on in a modified form by the Theravādins.

Closely connected with the Pāramitās are the Jātakas and the Avadānas, and consequently the Bharaut and Sanchi sculptures. All the three schools put forth their best efforts in propaganda, but it is still an open question as to which of the three schools inspired the origin of the famous stone monuments. Attempts have been made by many scholars to identify the sculptural representations of Jātakas, and many have been traced in the Jātakatthavannanā, but still the identifications are not all beyond doubt, and it is not improbable that a better elucidation of these sculptures will be found in the huge literature of Avadānas which are still in manuscript.

PROPAGATION

The efforts of the various schools to propagate their particular faith met with success, as is evidenced by the early stone monuments of India. Every school no doubt increased the number of its adherents and we have evidence of this in some of the inscriptions, belonging to a period little later than that with which we are here concerned. These inscriptions are records of gifts made specially to a particular school³. But along with these we find some inscriptions in

¹ Csoma Körösi, As. Res., XX; Speyer, Intro. to the Ava. S'.

² Of whom Cunningham, Oldenberg, Barua, Charpentier may be mentioned.

³ E.g. Lüder's List, Nos. 1105, 1107.

which no particular sect is mentioned, but gifts are made for the benefit of the sangha of the four regions (cāturdiśa sangha).¹ This shows clearly that the devotees might have had faith in the tenets of one of the schools but they supported all the schools, i.e., Buddhism in general. As the dates of these inscriptions do not help us much with regard to the period under review, we have to confine ourselves to the scanty evidence yielded by the few works, whose dates of composition might be a little later, but which may be regarded as yielding materials for this period.

We have seen from the Nikāyas that early Buddhism was confined to the central belt of India from Anga to Avanti. claiming also a few adherents from the distant countries of the north and the south.2 The account of the distribution of relies as given in the Mahāparinibbāna Sutta in its Pāli and Tibetan versions 3 gives a fairly correct idea of the spread of Buddhism towards the beginning of the first period. The people who shared the relics were the Licchavis of Vesāli, Sākyas of Kapilavatthu, Bulis of Allakappa, Koliyas of Rāmagāma, Brāhmaņas of Vethadīpa, Mallas of Pāvā and Kusinārā, Moriyas of Pipphalivana, and the people of Magadha. The places mentioned are all in eastern India. The only place mentioned outside the eastern territory is Gandhārapura where a tooth of Buddha is said to have been enshrined.4 This is, as the commentator points out, a later addition; in any case, the people of Gandharapura did not share in the relics. A further hint about the spread of Buddhism in the first period is furnished by the boundaries of the Majjhima-janapada as given in the Mahāvagga of the Vinaya.5 The boundaries are as follows: Kajangala nigama in the east, next to the Mahāsālā forest, the river Sallavatī on the south-east, Setakannika nigama on the south, Thuna brahmanagama on the west and Usira pabbata on the north. According to this account, Avanti-

¹ E.g. Lüder's List, Nos. 1099, 1107.

² See for details, *Early History*, etc., pp. 92, 137ff., 155, 169ff; Dr. E. J. Thomas, *Life of the Buddha*, Map.

Dīgha, II, p. 167; As. Res., XX, p. 316.
 Dīgha, II, p. 167.
 Mv., I, p. 197; Jāt., I, 49; Divyā., p. 21.

dakkhināpatha is a paccantima-janapada (border country). and so also the country in the east beyond Kajangala. which is identified with Bhagalpur.² The Divuāvadāna³ preserves this tradition replacing only the eastern boundary Kajangala by Pundravardhana. If Pundravardhana be identified with a place in North Bengal, the Divyāvadāna shows a slight extension of the eastern boundary. The only other name in this account that deserves attention is the Usīraddhaja of the Mahavagga and Usiragiri of the Divyavadana. We know of an Usira mountain situated near Mathura.4 and Tāranātha also tells us that Upagupta, the famous monk of Mathura and preceptor, according to the Sarvāstivāda tradition, of Asoka, lived there for three years before going to Kashmir after leaving Vārānasī.5 So it is apparent that Mathura, a stronghold of the Sarvāstivādins, was included in the Maiihima-janapada.

From the accounts of the Vesāli Council also, as given in the Cullavagga and in the Vinayas of the Sarvāstivāda and Dharmagupta schools, it seems that the horizon of Buddhism, even at the beginning of the second century after the rise of Buddhism, did not extend far. The geographical information that can be derived from this account is as follows: Yasa, the convener of the orthodox council of Vesāli came from Vesāli to Kosambi, and from Kosambi he sent messengers to the bhikkhus of Pāṭheyya and Avantidakkhiṇāpatha. Sambhūta Sāṇavāsi was at that time living on the Ahoganga mountain where assembled the sixty bhikkhus of Pāṭheyya and eighty bhikkhus of Avantidakkhiṇāpatha, all observers of Dhutanga precepts. Revata, who lived at Soreyya, pass-

¹ Mv., I, p. 197.

² For the identification of the boundaries of the Majjhima-janapada see S. N. Majumdar's Intro. to Cunningham's Geography, p. xliii.

³ Divyā., p. 21: Puṇḍravardhana on the east; Sarāvatī on the south; Sthūṇopasthūṇaka brāhmaṇagrāmas on the west; and Usīragiri on the north.

⁴ Watters' Yuan Chwang, I, p. 308. 5 Tara., pp. 10, 13.

⁶ Cv., XII, i, 7f. See Ind. Ant., 1908, Councils, etc.; Pag Sam Jon Zang, p. viii; for the Mahisāsaka tradition, see Wassiljew's notes in the App. to $T\bar{a}ra$., pp. 289-290.

ing through Sankassa, Kannakujja, Udumbara and Aggala-Salha of Sahajāti found after delipura, came to Sahajāti. beration that the Pathevyaka bhikkhus were right, while the Pācīnaka bhikkhus were wrong. For the settlement of the disputed questions was formed a committee on which Sabbakāmi, Saļha, Khujjasobhita and Vāsabhagāmika represented the Pācīnakas, and Revata, Sambhūta Sānavāsi, Yasa, and Sumana represented the Patheyvakas. An important fact that should be noticed in this account is the division of monks into two sections, the Pācīnakas and the Pātheyyakas. The Pācīnakas indicated the easterners, of whom the Vesālians were the foremost; to this section belonged Sabbakāmi, a disciple of Ananda, and Salha, a distinguished monk of Sahajāti. The Pātheyyakas were the monks dwelling in Kosambi, Pātheyya and Avantidakkhi. nāpatha; to this section belonged Sambhūta Sānavāsi, an important figure in the traditions of both the Theravadins and the Sarvāstivādins, also Revata, an old bhikkhu of Soreyya, and Yasa, famous in connection with the Second Council.2

Traditions of Ācariyaparamparā

The traditions of the second council as preserved by the Theravādins and the Sarvāstivādins are the same, 3 and as far as the succession of monks is concerned, there is also no disagreement. The Theravādins only refer to Sambhūta Sāṇavāsi as a member of the committee of the second council, while the Sarvāstivādins speak of him as the patriarch who succeeded Ānanda. The two traditions bifurcate after the second council, one speaking of the Asokan Council under the leadership of Moggaliputta Tissa, while the other ignores it, speaking of Upagupta as the religious adviser of Asoka, and dwelling at length on the Kaniskan Council at Jalandhara instead of the Asokan Council. This

¹ According to the Cv. (xii, 21) he was then ordained 120 years, i.e., he must have been more than 140 years old. Pag Sam Jon Zang (p. 81) refers to his taking part in the Second Council, which was held, according to it, under the auspices of Mahāpadma Nanda.

² For details, see I.A., 1908.

³ I.A., 1908, pp. 4 ff; 89 ff.

divergence of tradition is significant, and henceforth the history of Buddhism is no longer the history of one form of Buddhism but of many, principally of the three schools, Theravada, Sarvastivada, and Mahasanghika. 1 The Theravāda is pre-eminently a Vinaya school, 2 and though the Tibetan tradition ascribes to Kaccayana its leadership,3 we may notice that Upāli as the compiler of the Vinava was highly venerated by the Theravadins, and his connection with the Asokan Council is established through his disciples. It should be observed that though the Theravādins speak of the line of disciples (ācariyaparamparā) from Upāli or Sāriputta, there is no idea of patriarchal succession. In the Majjhima Nikāya 4 it is expressly stated that in the Buddhist Sangha there is no recognised head. The Tibetan and Chinese traditions have, in fact, given currency to the idea of patriarchal succession. The Atthasālinī also gives us a list of ācariyas of the Abhidhammikas, tracing it from Sariputta, which, however, is not worth credence.⁵ The traditions of the Theravadins and the Sarvastivadins about the ācariyaparamparā of the first two centuries may be combined thus:-

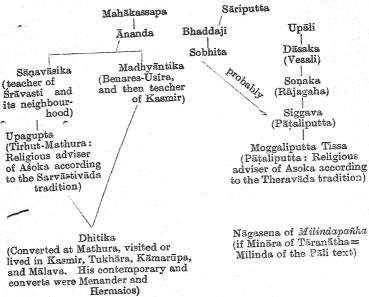
¹ Tāranātha (p. 44) refers also to Sthavira Vatsa who introduced the Ātmaka theory. He adds that Dhitika, who succeeded Upagupta, convened a council in the Puskarinī vihāra (of Maru Land) to suppress the Ātmaka theory of Vatsa and succeeded to convince the followers of Vatsa and, ultimately, the teacher himself of the untenability of the theory. This legend evidently refers to the Vātsīputrīyas or the Vajjiputtakas, from whom sprang the Sāmmitīyas who attained prominence during the rule of Harṣavardhana. See Harly History etc., pp. 297 ff.

² Early History etc., p. 211; Watters, Yuan Chwang, I, p. 302 referring to the Vinayists, (i.e., the Theravadins) as worshipping Upāli.

³ Wassiljew, op. cit., p. 295., Eitel, Handbook etc.

⁴ Majjhima, Sutta 108; see also Dutt, Early Buddhist Monachism, pp. 141 f.

⁵ Attha., p. 32: Ācariyaparamparā: Sāriputtatthero Bhaddaji Sobhito Piyajāli Piyapālo Piyadassī Kosiyaputto Siggavo Sandeho Moggaliputto Visudatto Dhammiyo Dāsako Sonako Revato ti. (Then in Ceylon) Mahindo Iddhiyo Uttiyo Bhaddanāmo ca Sambalo.



As I have already remarked, we must not take acariyaparampara as patriarchal succession, nor should we attempt to calculate the duration of abbotship on the basis of an average period, as is usually done in connection with kings, for the Buddhist saints were generally long-lived, and there was no custom of a disciple succeeding his teacher. Moreover the ordination of disciples could have happened in the earliest or the latest part of a teacher's life. According to Tāranātha, Madhyāntika was ordained by Ānanda shortly before his death; 1 hence it is quite possible that he was a contemporary of both Saṇavāsi and Upagupta, or of Dasaka, Sonaka, Siggava, and Moggaliputta. Reading the tradition in this way, and also observing the names of places, which were the centres of activity of the various bhikkhus, we may say that after the Council of Vesāli, the Sarvāstivādins attained more and more popularity and spread towards the north, having two important centres, one at Mathura with Upagupta as the chief teacher, and the other in Kasmir

¹ Tāra., p. 9.

with Madhyāntika as the chief, the two centres having later on coalesced under the leadership of Dhitika, who, it seems, greatly extended the horizon of influence of the Sarvāstivāda school by pushing it eastward to Kāmarūpa, westward to Mālava, and north-westward to Tukhāra, the realm of Mināra and Imhasa. The Theravādins retained their seat in Magadha all along with a branch at Ujjeni, founded by Mahākaccāyana. Mahinda and Sanghamittā, 1 it seems, were closely connected with the Ujjeni branch of the Theravāda school and propagated the same in Ceylon.

ASOKA'S PART IN THE PROPAGATION OF BUDDHISM

We are yet in the dark about the part played by Asoka in the propagation of Buddhism. If he helped in the propagation of Buddhism at all, we are not aware whether he supported any particular school of Buddhism, or Buddhism in general. Throughout his exhortations, so far as they have been found in the Edicts, there is not the slightest hint of his actively helping the propagation of Buddhism. His edicts refer to the dhammavijaya as opposed to conquest by arms, but by dhamma he does not mean Buddhism. His dhamma consisted of maxims for leading an ideal life and performing meritorious acts which make a person happy in this world as well as the next. The edicts do not contain a single reference to Nirvana or Sūnyatā, Anātma or Duhkha, while on the other hand, they speak of heaven, and happiness in a heavenly life,2 which was never an ideal of early Buddhism, for it considered existence in any one of the three dhātus, Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa to be misery (duhkha). But it must be admitted that when an emperor like Asoka shows a bias for a particular religion and even proclaims himself to be a Buddhist upāsaka and pays visits

² Hultzsch, Corpus, p. liii. The remark of Dr. Hultzsch that Asoka's dhamma, preaching for heavenly life, represents an earlier stage of Nirvana is without any foundation.

¹ It is noteworthy that with the ordination of Mahinda are associated the names of Majjhantika (very probably of Kasmir fame) and Mahādeva, the propagator of Buddhism in Mahiṣamaṇḍala along with Moggaliputta. See also Early History etc., pp. 260 ff.

to the monasteries or sacred places of the Buddhists, the religion automatically receives an impulse, and its propagation by the Buddhist monks then becomes easy. So we may regard Asoka as a passive propagator of Buddhism, and, during his rule, the religion probably made its way throughout his kingdom, also reaching places beyond his dominion. viz., the kingdoms of the Yavanas, Kambojas, Gandharas, Pitinikas on the west, and Codas, Pandvas as far as the Tamraparni on the south. 1 As Asoka was an adherent of Buddhism only as a supporter, or as an upāsaka,2 we cannot expect him to be interfering in the sectarial disputes that were going on in his time. Hence it is difficult to attach importance to the tradition of the Mahavamsa that he supported the Vibhajjavadins (=Theravadins), or to that of the Avadanas that he was an ardent devotee of Upagupta. It is also remarkable that he does not refer to the Bodhisattva conception, nor to the paramitas, which could suitably have been incorporated into his code of moral maxims. His admonition to his subjects to choose the middle path. avoiding the two extremes, viz., of retirement from the world on the one hand and of indulgence in envy, anger, laziness and so forth on the other, 4 shows that he was not so much in favour of retirement from household life, upon which the early Hinavana Buddhists always laid emphasis. Asoka's preference for the life of an ideal upāsaka as against that of a monk may have stimulated the Buddhist monks to devise ways and means to popularise their religion, and as the result of the efforts of the monks in this direction. we have the large number of the Jatakas and Avadanas.

The tradition of the Mahāvamsa about the part played by Asoka in the Third Council with Moggaliputta Tissa as its

¹ For details, see Hultzsch, Corpus (1925), pp. xxxviii, xxxix.

² Ibid., pp. xliv-xlv.
3 Mahāvaṃsa, p. 54.

⁴ Hultzsch, op. cit., p. 114. The rendering of Prinsep, Bhandarkar and Smith is adopted here in preference to that of Hultzsch whose rendering does not appear to be in consonance with the general tenor of the inscription. See M. N. Basu's remarks in this connection in the I.H.Q., III, p. 349.

head, and about the despatch of missionaries to the various parts of India still awaits verification. It is not improbable that a sectarian council of the Theravadins was held under the leadership of Moggaliputta Tissa during Asoka's rule, and that an active propaganda was set on foot to spread Buddhism in the various territories in and outside India, 1 • which the Mahāvamsa recorded with a colouring of its own. In the same way, we can account for the two religious advisers of Asoka, namely Upagupta and Moggaliputta Tissa. Asoka as an impartial ruler offered equal treatment to the Buddhists and non-Buddhists. In the circumstances, it may be inferred that he would not support one school of Buddhism against another. The Theravadins as well as the Sarvāstivādins associated his name with the contemporaneous leading figures of their respective sects in order to add importance to themselves. So it would be fruitless to attempt an identification of Moggaliputta Tissa with Upagupta—as is done by Smith and other scholars.2 We may with some amount of confidence accept the tradition of the Mahavamsa that about the time of Asoka, Buddhism made its way to the countries of Kasmīra-Gandhāra, Mahisamandala, Vanavāsī, Yona, Mahārattha, Himavantapadesa, Suvannabhūmi and Lankādīpa.3

CAREER OF THE MAHĀSĀNGHIKAS

Further light might be thrown on the propagation of Buddhism during this period, if the tradition of the Mahāsāṅghikas had been to hand. It may be that the Chinese versions of the Mahāsāṅghika Vinaya may contain some

¹ The coincidence of the tradition of the Sarvāstivādins that Madhyāntika was the propagator of Buddhism in the north with that of the Mahāvamsa that Majjhantika was despatched to convert Kāsmīra-Gandhāra, and the corroboration of the tradition by the caskets containing the relics with the inscriptions (on the top of the lid) 'sapurisasa Kasapagotasa savahemavatācariyasa,' and (inside the lid) 'sapurisa(sa) Majhimasa' deserve consideration. See Cunningham, Bhilsa Topes, p. 287.

² Waddell in J.A.S.B., 1897, pt. i, p. 76; Proc. A.S.B., 1899, p. 70; Smith, Early History of India, 4th ed., p. 199 fn.

³ Mahāvamsa, p. 94; Sāsanavamsa, p. 10. For detailed treatment see Smith, Asoka (3rd ed.), p. 44; Bhandarkar, Asoka, pp. 159ff.

information, but as yet we are in the dark about it. In the absence of any Mahāsāṅghika tradition, we cannot have much definite information about the Mahāsāṅghikas, or the part of India to which they confined their activities. From the account of the Vesālian Council, we can say that they reteined their seat at Vesāli, and from the inscriptions on the Mathura Lion Capital (120 B.C.)¹ and on the Wardak vase in Afghanistan,² it may be inferred that they made attempts, to proceed towards the north, but the caves of Karle and the location of the centre of activities of their offshoots, the Pubbaseliyas and Aparaseliyas, at Dhanakataka³ indicate that they were later on successful in their propaganda more in the south than in the north.

According to Dr. Burgess the Amaravatī stūpas at Dharanikot (Dhānykataka) were originally constructed as early as the 2nd century B.C.4 and Nāgārjuna was closely associated with the Buddhist establishment of this place. At any rate there is no doubt about the fact that Dhanyakataka was the chief centre of the Caityakas, the Pürva- and Aparasaila branches of the Mahāsānghika school, and that the people living there and in its neighbourhood lavished gifts on this Buddhist establishment. It was one of the places mentioned in the Manjuśrimūlakalpa s suitable for carrying on Buddhistic practices. The Mañjuśrīmūlakalpa also mentions that it contained the relics of Buddha.6 This is corroborated by the recent find of an inscription, recording a gift of a pillar by the sister of Mahārāja Mādhariputra Śrīvīrapuruṣadatta to the caitya enshrining the dhātu of Sammāsambuddha. Among the inscriptions of this place, edited by Dr. Burgess, there is one (No. 121) which refers to the Caityakas, of which the Pūrva- and Aparasailas were branches. Among the recent finds in the neigh-

¹ Ep. Ind., IX, pp. 139, 141, 146.

² Ibid., XI, p. 211; for other places in India where the Mahāsārighikas made their way, see Early History etc., pp. 241 ff.

³ See infra; Pag Sam Jon Zang, p. 74: Dhana-srihi-glin. 4 Burgess, Amaravati and Jaggayapeta Stupas, p. 100.

⁵ Manjuérimulakalpa (Trivandrum Sanskrit Series), p. 88.

⁶ Ibid.: Śridhānyakaṭake caitye jinadhātudhare.

bourhood of the place, two among other inscriptions have been found, referring to the Puvaseliya (Pūrvaśaila) and Avaras (Aparaśaila).1 The inscriptions are supposed to be of the 2nd century A.D. Another important place near Dhanykataka was Śriparvata (Srisailam), where, according to the Tibetan tradition, Nagarjuna passed his last days.2 The Manjuśrimulakalpa also takes notice of this mountain as a suitable place for Buddhistic practices, and one of the inscriptions, recently found, records that some devotees constructed a number of caityas and vihāras, and dug wells for pilgrims visiting the sacred place from Gandhara, Cīna, Aparānta, Vanga, Vanavāsī, Tambapannidīpa, etc.3 From these facts, it may be concluded that about the beginning of the Christian era there was on the bank of the Krishna in the Guntur district a very important centre of the Mahāsānghikas. The name Andhakas given to the offshoots of this school 4 also point to the fact of its popularity in the Andhra country and of its being supported, as the Amarāvatī inscriptions show, by the kings, nobles and people of the Andhra country.

BUDDHISM AFTER ASOKA

The Mahāvaṃsa and the Sāsanavaṃsa present a connected history of Buddhism in India up to the period of Asoka, and then turn to the history of Buddhism in Ceylon, leaving us in the dark about the career of the Theravādins in India, till we come to the Milindapañha. From it we learn that king Milinda of Sāgala (Sialkot, Lahore) took great interest in Buddhism, and that Nāgasena, a native of Kajangala, the easternmost boundary of the Majjhima-janapada, came to him, passing through Vattaniya and Pāṭaliputta. He stopped at the Sankheyya parivena at Sāgala.

¹ Annual Report of S. I. Epigraphy, 1924, p. 97; 1926, pp. 70, 92-03; 1927, p. 42; see also I.H.Q., V, pp. 794-6.

² Burgess, op. cit., p. 6; Tāra., pp. 73, 81.

³ Annual Report of S.I. Epigraphy, 1927, pp. 43, 71. Dr. L. D. Barnett kindly drew my attention to the recent finds of the inscriptions.

⁴ Kathāvatthuppakaranatthakathā, p. 52.

This account of Nāgasena's route indicates that Buddhism had already made its way as far north as Sāgala.1

Tāranātha, however, continues the story and gives us an account of the spread of Buddhism after Asoka, but as his narrative is based mainly on the Sarvastivada tradition. we may regard this story as essentially that of the Sarvāstivadins." He tells us that Upagupta ordained Dhitika. 2 a native of Ujjayini, at Mathura, the usual place of residence of Upagupta. The teachership was transferred from Upagupta to Dhitika, who spread the religion widely, and converted Mināra, the king of Tukhāra. Many monks of his time went thither from Kasmir and established firmly the religion at that place. They were supported by both King Mināra and his son Imhasa.3 He then went to the east at Kāmarūpa where he converted the rich brahmin Siddha and established the religion there. After this, he visited Mālava and converted the rich brahmin, Adarpa, laying thereby the foundation of the religion in that region. He came at length to his native place at Ujjayinī and there spent his last days. He was succeeded by Kāla or Kṛṣṇa,4 who was followed by Sudarsana of Bharukaccha. The spheres of activity of both these monks were in the west (Sindhu) and the north (Kasmir) of India generally. In connection with Kṛṣṇa, it is stated that he spread the religion in the south of India, in many small islands including Ceylon, and subsequently in Mahācīna. 5 Poshadha who came after him spread Buddhism in Orissa during the rule of Vigatāśoka. 6 Tāranātha's history is full of legends, and as such all his statements cannot be taken as authentic. But considering

¹ Mil., pp. 8, 16.

 $^{^2}$ $T\bar{a}ra.$, p. 23: All Sarvāstivāda traditions both in Chinese and Tibetan mention Dhitika as the successor of Upagupta.

³ Schiefner suggests that Mināra=Menander, and Imhasa=Hermaios, see *Tāra.*, pp. 23, 24 fn.

⁴ There is a reference to the spread of Buddhism in Ceylon also. Kṛṣṇa is said to have visited the place. *Tāra.*, p. 44.

⁵ Kāla is called Kṛṣṇavarṇa in the Chinese tradition, see Saṃyuktavastu, II, p. 95b; Tāra., p. 47. Tāranātha's statement that Sudarsana and Asoka died at the same time cannot be accepted.

⁶ Tāra., p. 50.

the fact that he makes some statements which are not prima facie unreasonable, and are in many cases corroborated by the Chinese travellers, we can attach to them some importance, though, of course, great caution should be exercised.

Doctrinal Developments

We shall now proceed to take a panoramic view of the doctrinal developments that took place during this period and heralded the advent of Mahāyānism. The Mahāsānghikas were evidently the earliest school of the Hinavanists to show a tendency for conceiving Buddha docetically, which was later on brought to completion by a branch of theirs, the Lokottaravadins. 1 But whether the conception of the Bodhisattva and the practice of the six pāramitās were introduced for the first time by the Mahāsānghikas or by the Sarvāstivādins is uncertain. The mention of the satpāramitā, the fulfilment of which is compulsory for the Bodhisattvas, is frequently found in the works of both the Sarvāstivādins and the Mahāsānghikas, and both are responsible for the growth of the large mass of Avadana literature, 2 the central theme of which is the fulfilment of the pāramitās.

THE GOAL OF BUDDHAHOOD

Then there remains the other conception, viz., the attainment of Buddhahood as a goal to be aspired to, and the consequent lowering of the position of the Arhats.³ The Theravadins do not definitely deny that Buddhahood is unattainable, for there is the instance of Sumedha brahmana be-

¹ E.R.E., sv. Docetism, for details.

² Hüber has traced 18 Avadānas of the *Divyāvadāna* in the Chinese version of the Sarvāstivāda Vinaya (*B.E.F.E.O.*, V, pp. 1-37). See also Lévi, *T'oung Pao*, Ser. II (1907), no. I. So it is quite probable that the *Divyāvadāna* is a book of the Sarvāstivādins.

³ In Vasumitra's treatise as well as in the Kathāvatthu it is stated that the Sarvāstivādins believed that the Arhats were liable to fall from arhathood. On this point the Theravādins hold a different opinion. They believe that the Arhats are as pure as Buddhas, and cannot fall down from that position. The Mahāsānghikas also do not support the Sarvāstivādins in regard to this point. See Masuda, Origin etc., p. 27; Kvu., i, 2.

coming Śākyamuni and that of a certain being who will become Maitreya Buddha, but such instances are so few and far between that they do not think it reasonable to hold up the ideal for the generality of the human beings to follow. They assert that a Buddha is hardly expected to arise even in many kalpas, 1 and this is echoed in the Lalitavistara, Mahāvastu, and some of the Mahāyānic texts; but still one reads in the Divyāvadāna that after the delivery of a discourse, some aspired to Śrāvakabodhi, some to Pratyekabodhi, and some to Samyaksambodhi.2 The fact mentioned last that some aspire to Samyaksambodhi leads us to infer that by the time of the Divyāvadāna, the Sarvāstivādins admitted the practicability of holding up Buddhahood as an ideal. So, clearly, the Sarvastivadins encouraged the aspiration to Buddhahood and hence to the life of a Bodhisattva, and the goal of Buddhahood was not purely Mahāsānghika or Mahāyānic. The Sarvāstivādins like the Theravādins conceived Buddha as an actual human being, but they magnified his qualities and powers so much that one is led to regard their conception of Buddha as that of a supramundane being.

CONTRIBUTIONS OF SARVĀSTIVĀDA TO MAHĀYĀNA

The Sarvāstivādins had two Kāya conceptions, 3 viz., rūpakāya and dharmakāya, but these did not bear any Mahāyānic sense, though their conception of dharmakāya helped the Yogācārins in the formation of their conception of the same (=svasambhogakāya). The Sarvāstivādins are also responsible for the addition of a fourth term, \$\sigma unya, to the usual trio, viz., duḥkha, anitya, and anātma, though the

1 Kadāci karahaci Tathāgatā loke uppajjanti. Dīgha, II, p. 139;

Mtu., I, p. 55.

² Divyā., pp. 226, 271, etc. The treatise of Vasumitra also says that the Sarvastivadins were aware of the three Yanas. The date of the compilation of the Divyāvadāna may be later, but it contains many avadanas which are old. The mention of three Bodhis in the Divyāvadana and the reference of Vasumitra in connection with the Sarvāstivadins to the three Yanas show that, to the Sarvāstivadins the Samyaksambuddhahood was a goal as much as the other two Bodhis. 3 See infra: Chapter III (b): The Doctrine of Kāya.

word conveyed no Mahāyānic meaning as it connoted no other sense than anātma.¹

But the most important doctrine of the Sarvāstivādins, which, I believe, led to the development of Mahāyāna, is their extreme Astitvavāda (the theory of the actual existence of elements composing a being). We may say that Mahā-vāna is a continuation of the Buddhological speculations of the Mahāsānghikas and their offshoots, and a revolt against the Astitvavāda of the Sarvāstivādins—a dogma which appeared to the Mahāyānists as an utter distortion of Buddha's teachings. It was this revolt which resulted in the other extreme, the establishment of Dharmašūnyatā (non-existence of everything whatsoever) as the real teaching of Buddha.

The third contribution made by the Hinayānists, specially by the Sarvāstivādins, is the exposition or analysis of skandhas, dhātus, āyatanas, āryasatyas, angas of the pratityasamutpāda, and so forth. 3 The Mahāyānists incorporated them in their works in toto, although they relegated them to the domain of Samveti or Parikalpita-Paratantra, admitting, however, their utility as being indispensable to Bodhisattvas in arriving at the Paramārtha or Parinispanna truth. 4

Contact of the Sarvāstivādins with the Mahāyānists

The Mahāsānghikas may have been the forerunners of
Mahāyāna, but it is clear that the Sarvāstivādins contributed

1 Lal. Vis., p. 419; Divyā., pp. 266, 367: anitya, duḥkha, śūnya, anātma. See Kośa, VI, p. 163 and VII, pp. 31 f. where śūnya is explained as being devoid of ātman, puruṣa, and so forth.

2 It will be observed that the remarks of Nagarjuna and other early Mahāyāna writers are mostly directed against the realism of the Sarvāstivādins. The *Madhyamakāvatāra* cannot help admitting that the Hīnayānists also teach śūnyatā as much as the Mahāyānists do (see *Le Muséon*, Vol. VIII, p. 271) but in the general attack of the Mahāyānists against the Hīnayānists, they hold the latter as *Aśūnyavādins* evidently keeping the Sarvāstivādins in mind.

³ That the Mahāyānists incorporated mostly the Sarvāstivāda expositions and analyses may be asserted in view of the fact that the *Prajāāpāramitās* mention many terms, which are not very common in Pāli suttas, e.g., Paryavasthāna, Samgrahavastu, Dvādašānga (instead

of Navānga). 4 See infra: Chapter III (d).

much to the growth of Mahāyāna in some way or other. As a sign of close contact, it may further be pointed out that Subhūti,1 a prominent figure in the Sarvāstivāda tradition, plays an important rôle in the Prajñāpāramitā. It is anomalous to find a Hīnayāna monk explaining the sūnyatā · doctrine, which goes directly against his own; so the Prajñāpāramitā offers us an explanation of the anomaly by saying that whatever was preached by Subhūti was preached not according to his own lights but through the influence of Buddhas. The adoption of the Lalita Vistara by the Mahāyānists as the recognised Life of Buddha also shows a point of contact between them and the Sarvāstivādins, for, as we know from the Chinese translators, the Lalita Vistara was a biography of Buddha of the Sarvāstivāda school. Mahāyānism in all probability germinated in the south, where the offshoots of the Mahāsānghikas had their centres of activities but the place where it appeared more developed was somewhere in the eastern part of India where the Sarvāstivādins were predominant. Tāranātha tells us that the Prajñāpāramitā was first preached by Mañjuśrī at Odivisa (Orissa), 2 which, if not the actual centre of the Sarvāstivādins, was in the neighbourhood of the Sarvāstivāda spheres of influence, for we have already seen that Dhitika Kāmrūpa, propagated Sarvāstivāda in Buddhism Pundravardhana was the extended eastern limit of the Sarvāstivāda Madhyadeśa. But the most fruitful contact between the Sarvāstivādins and the Mahāyānists took place at Nalanda, which became the principal centre of Mahāyāna and the seat of Nagarjuna.

THE MAHĀSĀNGHIKAS WERE ESSENTIALLY HĪNAYĀNISTS

Thus we see that the Sarvāstivādins were as much responsible for the growth of Mahāyāna as the Mahāsānghikas.

¹ See, e.g., the Ava. S., pp. 127-132 and p. xl. (Kalpadrumāvadāna); R. L. Mitra, Nep. B. Lit., pp. 295-6. In the Apadāna, and in the Anguttara, and its commentary, Subhūti is mentioned as the chief of the Aranavihārins, but he is not given much prominence in Pāli works.

² Tara., p. 58.

Apart from the Buddhological speculations, the Mahāsāṅghikas cannot claim much as their contribution to the growth of Mahāyāna. It may be that the $Praj\~nāpāramit\~a$ which, as the Tibetan tradition tells us, was possessed by the Pūrvaśailas, contributed much to the philosophy of Mahāyāna but as yet we are completely in the dark about this $Praj\~nāpāramit\~a$. From Vasumitra's account of the tenets of the Mahāsāṅghikas¹ or from the discussions found in the Kathāvatthu about the doctrines of the Mahāsāṅghikas, one hardly notices anything particularly Mahāyānic in them. For instance, the Mahāsāṅghikas speak

(i) of the pañca- (or ṣaḍ-) vijñānakāya, differing from the Theravādins and the Sarvāstivādins as to the function of the physical organs of sense;²

(ii) of the four or eight Hīnayānic stages of sanctification with the attainments appertaining thereto,³ the Kathāvatthu adding that the Mahāsānghikas assert that the Arhats have avijjā-vicikicehā as they cannot comprehend the things that come within the purview of Buddha (Buddhaviṣaya);⁴

(iii) of the indispensability of the application (prayoga) of prajñā for destroying duḥkha and obtaining sukha (i.e., final beatitude, Nirvāṇa), one of the most important tenets of the Hīnayānic schools;⁵

¹ Masuda, op. cit.

² Masuda, op. cit., I, 22-4, Kvu., xviii, 9; x, 3-4.: Pañcaviññāṇasa-maṅgissa atthi maggabhāvanā (one may practise the path while he has fivefold consciousness). The conception of Vijñāna of the Mahāsāṅghikas is a little different from that of the Theravādins and the Sarvāstivādins, specially, in view of two other tenets held by them, viz., "At one and the same moment, two minds (citta) can arise side by side" and "the nature of mind is pure in its origin, etc". Masuda, op. cit., A. 43, B. 3.

³ Masuda, op. cit., I, 26-30, 33-5, 39, 48; Mtu., I, p. 139.

⁴ Kvu., xxi, 3; i, 2. The Theravādins hold that sabbaññutañāṇa (omniscience) is a special acquisition of Buddhas and beyond the scope of Arhats; so it is wrong to hold that Arhats have avijjā-vicikicchā. Cf. Vasumitra (Masuda, op. cit., I, 35): "That according to the Mahāsāṅ-ghikas, Arhats are liable to sink while the Kathāvatthu (i, 2, Cy., p. 35) says that some of the Mahāsāṅ-ghikas hold that Arhats are not thus liable".

⁵ Masuda, op. cit., I, 31: For Prajñā and Prayoga, see also Mtu.,

(iv) of samyagdṛṣṭi, śraddhendriya as not laukika (worldly), the Kathāvatthu 1 adding that the Mahāsānghikas hold that old age and death could neither be lokiya (worldly) nor lokuttara (transcendental), because they are aparinipphanna, (unmade),2 and because the "decay and death of supramundane thing is supramundane and cannot be mundane";3

(v) of samyaktva-niyāma 4 (destined for right knowledge)

and the consequent destruction of samyojanas (fetters);

(vi) of Buddha's preaching the dharma in the nitartha sense;5

(vii) of asamskṛta dharmas as being nine in contrast to three of the Sarvāstivādins;6

(viii) of upakleśas (impurities), anuśayas (dormant passions) and paryavasthanas (pervading passions);7

(ix) of the non-existence of phenomena of the past and future, as against the opinion of the Sarvastivadins, and

(x) of the non-existence of antarabhava (existence intermediate between death and re-birth) as against the opinion of the Sarvāstivādins 9 and the Sāmmitīyas.

In these and on a few other points of difference noticed in the work of Vasumitra and the Kathavatthu, there is very little to distinguish them as distinctly Mahayanic. In the Mahāvastu 10 also, the discourses on the Truths 11 or the Causal

I, p. 270. Throughout Mtu. one notices that Nirvana was conceived as sukha (kṣeme sthale same sive nirvāṇe, Mtu., I, p. 34). The Mahāyānists will have nothing to do with duhkha or sukha.

1 Kvu., xv, 6.

2 Mrs. Rhys Davids translates it by "not pre-determined".

3 Points of the Controversy, xv, 6.

4 i.e., one who has entered into the Darsanamarga, see Masuda, op. cit., p. 27 fn.; Cf. Pañca., leaf 262b.

5 Masuda, op. cit., I, 5, 40. This goes directly against the Mahayanic view that Buddha's discourses have two senses, nïtartha and neyyartha, and also against the Sarvāstivāda view. See Masuda, op. cit., p. 52.

6 Masuda, op. cit., I, 41.

7 Ibid., I, 44.

9 Tbid., I, 47. 8 Ibid., I, 45.

10 It does not really belong to the Mahāsānghikas; so its date must be later, and it may be relegated to the third period of our division. Only those passages which corroborate the tenets of the Mahāsānghikas mentioned in the treatise of Vasumitra are referred to here.

11 Mtu., III, pp. 334, 446.

Law, or on anitya, duhkha, and anātma do not go beyond the limits of the Hīnayāna conceptions. The only Mahāyanic traces in the tenets of the Mahāsāṅghikas are:—

- (i) the Buddhological speculations, viz., that Buddhas are lokottara (supramundane), without any sāsrava dharma (defiled elements), possessed of limitless rūpakāya,¹ prabhāva (power), and āyu² (length of life), can remain without any sleep or dream, are always in Samādhi, and do not preach by name or designation, possess kṣaṇikacitta (i.e., understand all dharmas with a moment's thought), and so forth; and
- (ii) the Bodhisattva conception, viz., that the Bodhisattvas are not born and do not grow in the womb in the same way as an ordinary being, are not defiled by the impurities of the womb,³ enter the womb in full consciousness,⁴ never harbour any feeling of kāma (lust),⁵ hatred or injury, and take birth in hīna-gatis (lower forms of existences) for the benefit of the various classes of sentient beings, and so forth.⁶

These Buddhological speculations are more or less corollaries to the Mahāsānghika conception of the life of Śākyamuni. The Mahāsānghikas do not show thereby any recognition that all beings can become Bodhisattvas and ultimately Buddhas. The conception of the four caryās and the ten

¹ Cf. Mtu., I, p. 263: Buddha appears everywhere. In the Nikāyas one also reads "eko pi hutvā bahudhā hoti, etc." Dīgha, I, p. 78. In the Lalita Vistara (p. 100) we read of the Bodhisattva appearing in all the houses presented to him by the Sakiyans.

² Masuda, op. cit., I, pp. 18, 19; Kvu., xi, 5: The Mahāsānghikas cite the passage of the Mahāparinibbāna Sutta, in which Buddha said to Ananda that he could live many kalpas if he had wished so. The Theravadins without refuting this statement cite another passage which goes against this view.

³ Mtu., I, p. 143; II, pp. 14-15: Garbhāvakrānti and sthiti are all miraculous; Bodhisattvas are not touched by any impurities, Mtu., II, pp. 16, 20.

4 Mtu., II, p. 10.

5 Mtu., I, p. 153: Kāmā na sevanti. Rāhula was an aupapāduka. He descended from Tuşita heaven and remained in mother's womb for six years (Mtu., III, p. 159).

6 Masuda, op. cit., p. 21.

bhumis of the Lokottaravadins indicates a slight leaning to Mahāyānism. Thus there appears to be little of Mahāyāna in the tenets of the Mahāsānghikas.1 The Mahāsānghikas, therefore, were essentially Hinayanists, only with the conception of Buddha slightly different.

Now we can state briefly the history of Buddhism in the

second period thus:

1. Buddhism is no longer one. It divides itself into three principal sections, viz., the Theravada, the Sarvastivāda, and the Mahāsānghika. The Theravādins remained in the central belt of India, making their position stronger in Avantī where Mahākaccāyana had laid the foundation of Buddhism and from which place Mahinda was sent out to Ceylon to propagate the Theravada Buddhism. The Sarvāstivādins were also in the central belt of India with their centres of activity in Mathura and Kasmir, the former being founded by Upagupta and the latter by Madhyantika. Dhitika, the successor of both Upagupta and Madhyantika, spread it widely all over Northern India including Tukhāra on the north-west, Mālava, and Odivisa (Orissa), and Kāmarūpa on the east. The Mahāsānghikas established themselves at Vesāli and had followers sprinkled all over Northern India, but they became popular in the south. In short, Buddhism during this period spread all over Northern India and portions of Southern India.

2. Emperor Asoka took a great interest in Buddhism but did not help any particular sect. The dhamma preached in his edicts is mainly ethical and lacks the specific colourings of any school of Buddhism or of later Buddhism. He encouraged more the leading of a righteous household life than that of a monk or an ascetic. He, however, respected and supported the monks and recluses. The interest taken by rulers, like Mināra and Imhasa, helped greatly the propa-

gation of Buddhism outside India.

¹ The tenet of the Mahāsānghikas that "the nature of mind is pure in its origin; it becomes impure when it is stained by passions (upaklesas), the adventitious dust (agantukarajas)" has, according to Masuda, been developed by Asvaghosa in his Awakening of Faith. See Masuda, op. cit., p. 30.

- 3. The relation of the laity to the Buddhist Sangha was not materially altered as compared with previous conditions but a greater interest was created for the laity by popularising Buddhism through the Jātakas and Avadānas, and by holding up the Pāramitā practices before their view.
- 4. Much stress was laid on the composition of the Jāta-kas and Avadānas, and great religious merit was attached to reading, writing, painting, and carving them. This caught the fancy of the laity as a means of earning religious merit, and resulted in many sculptures, only some of which are preserved to us at Sanchi and Bharaut. The credit of popularising the religion through the Jātakas and Avadānas is due, in the first instance, to the Sarvāstivādins, and later, to the Theravādins.
- 5. The old division of Navānga is increased to Dvādasānga by the addition of Nidāna, Avadāna, and Upadeśa. Though the Jātakas formed one of the divisions of the Navānga, they did not exist as a separate literature, but were embodied in the discourses purporting to have been delivered by Buddha and his disciples.
- 6. The Life of Buddha commenced not from the time of Siddhārtha's retirement but from the first resolution (praṇidhāna) formed by Sumedha brāhmaṇa, and the prophecy (veyyākarana) made by Dīpankara Buddha.
- 7. The essential doctrines are still the same as in the first period with slight changes, e.g., the addition of śūnya to the usual anitya, duḥkha, and anātma, and of the six pāramitās to the thirty-seven Bodhipakṣika dharmas.
- 8. Some radical changes were effected in the tenets of the schools which developed during this period, e.g., the Sarvāstivādins started their doctrine of realism, of the existence of past, present, and future, and so forth, while the Mahāsānghikas conceived Buddha docetically and introduced the Bodhisattva conception.
- 9. The goal of life remained Arhathood and Pratyekabuddhahood with the Theravādins, while the Sarvāstivādins added to them the Samyaksambuddhahood.
- 10. The conception of Nirvāṇa as sukha, śānta, etc., did not change much, the Sarvāstivādins and the Mahāsāṅghikas

agreeing mainly with the Theravādins.¹ But the doctrine of realism of the Sarvāstivādins has led Prof. Stcherbatsky to interpret their Nirvāṇa as an ultimate lifeless state.²

- 11. The growth of the Abhidhamma literature took place during this period. As the principal schools located their centres of activity in different places of India, the development of this literature of each school was independent of that of the rest. This accounts for the wide divergence between the Abhidhamma literature of the Theravadins and that of the Sarvastivadins.
- 12. The conception of the Bodhisattva, the Pāramitā practices, and the goal of Buddhahood are the only Maḥāyānic traces that appear in the doctrines of the Mahāsāṅghìkas and the Sarvāstivādins, and their offshoots.

THIRD PERIOD

(circa 100 B.C. to 300 A.C.)

C. THE BEGINNINGS OF MAHĀYĀNA

Before we proceed to ascertain the approximate time of the emergence of Mahāyāna, we must determine the special characteristics which distinguish Mahāyāna from Hīnayāna. Generally speaking, Mahāyānism is associated with

- (i) the conception of the Bodhisattva,
- (ii) the practice of the Pāramitās,
- (iii) the development of Bodhicitta,
- (iv) the ten stages $(bh\bar{u}mi)$ of spiritual development,
- (v) the goal of Buddhahood,
- (vi) the conception of Trikāya, and
- (vii) the conception of Dharmasunyatā or Dharmasamatā or Tathatā.

¹ The Sarvāstivādins held that the vimukti of the Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, and Buddhas is the same. Masuda, op. cit., p. 49. The Mahiśāsakas held the same view (Masuda, op. cit., p. 62), but not the Dharmaguptas. The Sūtrālankāra, however, holds that with regard to vimukti, the Buddhas and the Śrāvakas stand on the same footing. This is also the opinion of the other Yogācāra texts. See infra. Cf. also Mtu., II, pp. 285, 345.

² Stcherbatsky, Con. of N., pp. 25 ff., but see ch. III. (c).

The Mahayanists distinguish themselves by saving that they seek the removal of both klesavarana and jneyavarana and this is possible by the realisation of both pudgalasūnyatā and dharmaśūnyatā. The Hīnayānists realise only the former, and thereby remove kleśāvarana. They, therefore, attain vimukti (emancipation) from kleśas, and as far as this is concerned, they are on the same footing with the Mahayanists, but they lack true knowledge as conceived by the Mahāyānists, viz., dharmasūnyatā, because they do not remove jneyavarana. The Hinayanists, however, do not admit their inferiority with regard to jnana, for they consider that the destruction of avidya (ignorance of the truth) or, in other words, acquisition of true knowledge is the only means to emancipation and this is effected by Arhats in the same way as by Buddhas. The Arhats are very often mentioned in the Pāli works as attaining sambodhi. They, however, admit that Buddhas, on account of their superior merits (technically, gotra), due to their long practice of meritorious actions, attain some powers and privileges, and also omniscience, which are beyond the reach of the Arhats. This is, in short, the relative position of the Hinayanists and the Mahāyānists.

If the development of Hīnayāna in its various phases be examined, one cannot help observing that some of the distinguishing characteristics of Mahāyāna mentioned above are also found in the later phases of Hīnayāna, e.g.,

- (i) the conception of the Bodhisattwa,
- (ii) the practice of the six paramitas,
- (iii) the development of Bodhicitta,
- (iv) the goal of Buddhahood, and
- (v) two of the Kāya conceptions, viz., Rūpa- (or Nirmāṇa-) kāya and Dharmakāya, the conception of the latter being essentially different from that of the Mahāyānists.¹ So, to be exact about the time of emergence of Mahāyana, we should consider when the conceptions of Dharmaśūnyatā and Dharmakāya (=Tathatā) came to be introduced.

¹ In the Mtu., the expression Sambhogakāya does not occur; yet the description of Buddha's body sometimes shows it to be tantamount to that conception.

SEMI-MAHĀYĀNA

From what we have seen above in regard to the lines of development in the preceding period, it is evident that the Hinayanists either to popularise Buddhism or to interest the laity more in it, incorporated in their doctrines the conception of the Bodhisattva and the practice of the paramitas. 1 This was effected by the production of the new literature, the Jātakas and Avadānas. As the Jātakas confine themselves to the previous lives of Buddha, we must look to the Avadanas specially for the introduction of the Bodhisattva conception, and for its presentation as an ideal for the laity. The object of the Avadanas is to show how the devotees sacrifice every thing, even their lives, for the performance of the paramitas, not for any earthly or heavenly pleasures, but for the attainment of bodhi and thus for the rescue of all beings from misery.2

The Divyāvadāna, as we have seen, refers to the aspiration for the attainment of Buddhahood. So also, one reads in the Mahāvastu³ about devotees developing Bodhicitta and aspiring to Buddhahood by the simple act of worshipping a stūpa or making some presents to it. In connection with the Sarvāstivādins, the treatise of Vasumitra speaks (i) of the sameness of vimukti of Buddhas, Śrāvakas, and Pratyekabuddhas; (ii) of the three Yānas; and (iii) of Bodhisattvas continuing to be pṛthagjana till they step into the samyaktva-niyāma (the path leading to the right knowledge).

¹ For an interesting discussion on this point see Speyer, Ava. S., pp. v ff.

3 Mtu., pp. 364, 365, 367: bodhāya cittam nametvā; pp. 375, 377 bodhim atulyam spréati.

² Divyā., p. 473: Rūpavatī makes sacrifice for "na rājyārtham na bhogārtham na svargārtham na sakrārtham na rājūām cakravartinām viṣayārtham nānyatrāham anuttarām samyaksambodhim abhisambudhyādāntān damayeyam amuktān mocayeyam anāsvastān āsvāsayeyam aparinirvītān parinirvāpayeyam".

⁴ Masuda, op. cit., p. 49: "The Buddha and the two vehicles have no differences as to emancipation (vimukti): the Aryan paths (mārga) of the three vehicles (however) differ from one another. This is wanting in the Tibetan version." Masuda contradicts Wassiljew's opinion (p. 275, n.4) that it is an interpolation of the later Mahāyānists.

The Mahāvastu also speaks of the existence of the three Yānas¹ and of the paths and practices to be followed by a Bodhisattva. It mentions the four caryās of a Bodhisattva and the ten bhūmis but the conception of the bhūmis, as will be shown hereafter,² has very little in common with that of the ten bhūmis of the Daśabhūmikasūtra except the first two. Of course, it may be assumed that the Lokottaravāda conception of the bhūmis served as the seed for the later development of the Mahāyānic conception.

Thus the Avadanas, which are primarily the production of the Sarvāstivādins, clearly show a new phase of development within Hīnayānic Bodhisattva-yāna. The Lokottaravādins of the Mahāsānghikas show a little more development than the Sarvāstivādins by defining the four caryās, viz., prakṛticaryā, pranidhānacaryā, anulomacaryā, and anivartanacaryā, 3 the first referring to the preliminary practices of a Bodhisattva while he is a prthagjana, the second to the development of Bodhicitta, the third to the gradual progress made by a Bodhisattva up to the sixth bhūmi, and the fourth to the practice of the last four bhumis from which a Bodhisattva can never retrocede but must ultimately attain Bodhi. The attainment of Bodhi, therefore, came to be regarded as one of the goals of Hinavana. It is for this reason that we see the Kośa discussing the thirty-four moments required for the attainment of Bodhi,5 and other matters relating to

For the vimuktisāmānya of the Srāvakas, Pratyekabudhas, and Buddhas, see infra.

Masuda, op. cit., p. 50: The Haimavata school supports the Sarvāstivādins on this point, adding, however, that the Bodhisattvas are not subject to rāga and kāma. See Masuda, op. cit., p. 52. The Mtu. calls a Bodhisattva in the first bhūmi a pṛthagjana who becomes an Ārya from the second bhūmi; see infra ch. IV.

¹ Mtu., II, p. 362.

² See infra, ch. IV; also Rahder's Intro. to Daśa., pp. iii f.

³ Mtu., I, p. 46; Lal. Vis., p. 35.

⁴ The writer of the *Mtu*. had very vague ideas about the last four bhūmis; so he dismissed them with mere enumerations of some names of Buddhas and recounting some stories.

⁵ Kośa, II, 44; VI, 21a-b; cf. Kvu., i. 5; xviii. 5; Pațis. M., 1, pp. 121 ff. discusses the ñāṇa of Buddhas.

Buddhahood, and the Hīnayānic works 1 mentioning some of the Bodhisattva practices and philosophical expressions like śūnyatā, dharmadhātu, dharmakāya, tathātva, though they are devoid of their new Mahāyānic sense.

In view of these facts, we may hold that before Mahavana came into existence with its new interpretation of Buddha's words, evolving a new sense of sunyata, there had already been a Hīnayānic Bodhisattvayāna, which can be called semi-Mahāyāna, or Mahāyāna in the making. semi-Mahāyāna concerned itself only with the six Pāramitā practices and the extraordinary powers and knowledge attained by Buddhas. It was as yet unaware of 'Advaya Advaidhīkāra'. Dharmasūnyatā or Tathatā. That the six pāramitas belong to the domain of Hinavana is also hinted at in the Daśabhūmikasūtra. In this sūtra as well as in other treatises dealing with the bhūmis, the ten bhūmis are divided into two sections, the first six carrying a Bodhisattva to the realisation of the Pudgalaśūnyatā, or in other words, the Truth as conceived by the Hīnayānists, and the last four leading to the realisation of Dharmasunyata, the Truth as conceived by the Mahāyānists. So the actual Mahāyānic stages of progress commence from the seventh, but we learn from the Dasabhūmikasūtra that the six pāramitās are completed by a Bodhisattva in the first six bhūmis. Thus, it follows that the practice of Pāramitās alone does not make a person a follower of the Mahāyāna, though we must admit that the Mahayana takes its stand upon the paramitas as far as the practices are concerned, for it is said in the Prajñāpāramitās that Buddhas deliver discourses connected with the six paramitas,3 and in the Madhyamakāvatāra that the Mahāvāna teaches not only śūnyata but also the pāramitās, bhūmis, and so forth.4

¹ Mtu., II, p. 357: Śūnyatām śāntam bhāventi, see also Samyutta II, p. 267; III, p. 167.

² See infra, ch. IV.

³ Pañca., p. 7: saṭpāramitāpratisaṃyuktāṃ dharmadeśanāṃ karoti.

⁴ M. Ava., (Le Muséon, VIII, p. 271): En effet, la doctrine du Grand Véhicule n'enseigne pas seulement le néant des éléments, mais encore les terres des Bodhisattvas, les vertus transcendantes (pāramitās),

Lastly, the fact, that the conceptions of nirnimitta and nihsvabhāva indicating the chief features of the attainments of a Bodhisattva in the last four bhūmis were yet unknown to the compiler of the Mahāvastu, is evident from his inability to mention the qualities attained in the last four bhūmis. Hence it may be concluded that Buddhism entered into its semi-Mahāyānic stage very early, if not at the time of Asoka, at any rate, soon after him.

THE TIME OF COMPOSITION OF THE Prajñāpāramitā

The new Mahavanic conception of Sunvata was for the first time propounded in the Prajñāpāramitās and therefore we should try to ascertain when the Prajnaparamita first came into existence. There is the Tibetan tradition that the Pūrvašailas and Aparašailas had a Prajnaparamita in the Prākrt dialect; 2 unfortunately no other information about it is forthcoming. Tāranātha tells us that shortly after the time of King Mahapadma Nanda, a king called Candragupta lived in Odivisa (Orissa).3 Mañjuśrī came to his house in the form of a bhiksu and delivered the Mahāyāna teaching. The Sautrantikas maintain that this teaching was the Astasāhasrikā Prajnāpāramitā, while the Tantra school asserts that it was the Tattvasangraha.4 We may safely dismiss the Tantric tradition in view of the materials that are contained in the Tattvasangraha,5 and attach importance to the Sautrantika tradition that the Astasahasrika was the earliest text to contain the Mahavana teaching. If the contents of the Astasāhasrikā, the Pañcavimšatisāhasrikā, and the Satasāhas $rik\bar{a}$ be compared, it will be seen that the Astasāhasrikā is

les resolutions (pranidhāna), la grande compassion, etc., mais encore l'application du merite à illumination, les deux equipments de mérite et de savoir et la nature incomprehensible du dharma (acintya-dharmatā).

- 1 See ante p. 37, fn. 4.
- ² Wassiljew, Buddhismus, p. 291 quoting the Tibetan Siddhanta.
- 3 Tāra., p. 58; Pag Sam Jon Zang., p. 82 also says that Mahā-yāna Buddhism had its beginning in Odivisa shortly after the reign of Mahāpadma Nanda.
 - 4 Recently published in the Gaekwad Oriental Series.
 - 5 For a survey of its contents see my review in I.H.Q., Dec., 1929.

the earliest of the three and that it can be dated as early as the first century B.C.1

THE GEOGRAPHICAL DATA ABOUT THE ORIGIN OF MAHĀYĀNA

Without attaching much importance to the chronology of kings and such other materials presented to us by Taranātha, we may with sufficient caution utilise some of his statements with regard to the developments in the history of the religion, the geographical distribution of the schools. and the succession of teachers in the various centres. He tells us that according to one tradition, 500 bodhisattvas² took part in the Jalandhara Council of Kaniska, that about this time the Mahāyāna texts appeared and were usually preached by monks, who had attained the Anutpattikadharmaksānti ("Geduld in der Lehre des Nichtgeborenwerdens"),3 a dogma characteristic of the Mahāyānists. It may be a development of the Hinayanic Anutpadajñana (further non-origin of āśravas and hence re-birth) and Ksayajñāna,* but it bore a completely different sense in the Mahāyāna scriptures. The reference to the existence of a class of monks called Bodhisattvas at the time of Kaniska's Council is also significant, for we read in the Divyāvadāna of the existence of a class of monks called Bodhisattvajātika along with a hint that they were not looked upon with favour by the Hinayanists. Taranatha expresses his difficulty in accounting for the existence of monks called Bodhisattvas in the Kaniskan Council. He tells us further that about the time

¹ For details see Intro. to the Pañca. (published in C.O.S.).

² Aśvaghosa is called a bodhisattva in the Chinese Samyuktaratna-pitaka-sūtra (No. 1329, Vol. VI). See Takakusu, I-tsing, p. lix. Cf. De Groot, Le Code du Mahayana en Chine, p. 8: Two or three days after the first ordination according to the Prātimokṣa rules, the monks pass through a special ordination according to the Brahmajāla sūtra and become bodhisattva. See infra, Ch. V.

³ Tāra., p. 61. See M. Vr., p. 363 n.; Lankā., p. 81; Aṣṭa., p. 331: anutpādajñānakṣāntiko bodhisattva. See infra, Ch. III.

⁴ For Anutpādajñāna and Kṣayajñāna, see Kośa, VI, 17, 71. The Kṣayajñāna with the Anutpādajñāna makes the Bodhi; see also Κοśa, vi, 50; vii, 1, 46, 7.

⁵ Divyā., p. 261,

of Kaniska, the brahmin Kulika of Saurāstra invited the Sthavira and Arahanta Nanda, a native of Anga, who had comprehended the Mahāyāna teaching in order to hear from him the new teaching.1 The only point that deserves notice is the use of the appellations, Arahanta and Sthavira, indicating that Nanda was a Hinavanist monk who had comprehended the Mahāyāna teaching. The remark of Tāranātha. that monks who had attained Anutpattikadharmaksanti preached also Mahāyāna shows that there was a class of Hīnayāna monks who had been propagating the Mahāyāna teaching.2 Then the association of Odivisa with the beginning of Mahāyāna teaching, and of the monk Nanda with Anga suggest that we should look for the origin of Mahāyana somewhere in the east. A passage occurring in all the Prajñāpāramitās partially lends support to the statement of Tāranātha. The passage says that Mahāyāna teaching will originate in the south (Daksināpatha), pass to the eastern countries (Vartanyām),3 and prosper in the north. Evidently, this statement of the Prajñāpāramitās was written while the work was compiled in the north after the Mahāyāna teaching had been effectively propagated there. We may substantiate this statement by pointing to the Tibetan tradition about the existence of a Prajñāpāramitā in the Prākrt dialect belonging to the Saila schools, the centre of which was in the south (Guntur District). Very probably, this Prajñāpāramitā contained the germs of Mahāyāna teaching. Then the shifting of the centre of Mahāyāna to the east is hinted at by Tāranātha, as referred to above. In this connection it may also be pointed out that Nalanda was one of the earliest centres and storehouses of Mahāyāna teaching, becoming, later on, the seat of Nagarjuna. So, it seems quite probable that Mahayanism originated in the south some time before Kaniska and became a recognised form of Buddhism by the time of Kaniska, i.e., about the beginning

¹ Tāra., p. 62.

² Can it be that Aśvaghoṣa, author of the *Buddhacarita*, belonged to this class of Hīnayāna monks?

³ Asta., p. 225. For Vartanyam, see Trikandasesa, 2. 1. 12.

of the Christian era when it established its chief centre in the east, gradually pushing its way towards the north to blossom forth in its full glory under the care of the great Nagariuna. In the south too, it continued to thrive, for in the Gandavyūha we read that Mañiuśri started from Jetavana to travel in Daksināpatha 1 and came to Māladhvaelavvuha caitva in the great city of Dhanyakara,2 where many devotees lived. Here he delivered a discourse and aroused aspiration for bodhi in the mind of Sudhanu, son of a rich hanker of the place and directed him to go to Sugrivaparvata in the country of Ramavartta (also in Daksināpatha) in order to learn the Samantabhadra-bodhisattva-carva. Sudhanu travelled over many places 3 of the Daksināpatha in search of knowledge, arriving at last at Dvāravatī. After learning all that he could in southern India, he went to Kapilavastu and travelled over some countries 4 of the north. In the Mañjuśrimūlakalpa 5 also Dhānyakataka, Śrīparvata, and a few other places of the Daksinapatha are mentioned, showing the prevalence of Buddhism there. Nāgārjuna, whose birthplace was in Vidarbha (Berar).6 also dwelt in the south, passing his last days at Śrīparvata (mod. Śrīśailam).7 Āryadeva likewise came from Southern India, as did also Nāga.8 the other disciple

² Ibid., 21b: Daksināpathe Dhanyākaran nāma mahānagaram. Very likely it is the same as the famous Dhānyakataka (Dharanikota).

⁵ Mañjuśrīmūlakalpa (Trivandrum Sanskrit Series), p. 88.

¹ Gandavyūha (A. S. B. ms.) leaf 19b.

³ The names of places in some cases seem to be fictitious; some of the names are:—Sāgaramukha, Sāgaranāma, Lankāpatham, Vajrapuranāma Dravida-pattala, Vanavāsī, Milasphuranam nāma Jamudvipašīrṣam, Potalaka (the dwelling-place of Avalokiteśvara), and Dvāravatī.

 $^{^4}$ The northern countries visited by him are:—Bodhimaṇḍa and Kapilavastu.

⁶ Walleser, Die Lebenszeit des Nagarjuna in Z. für Buddhismus (Munich), I, pp. 95ff.

⁷ Nāgārjuna's name is closely associated with Dhānyakataka, near which are Sriparvata and Nāgārjunikunda (west of Palnad Taluk); for details see Burgess, Stūpas of Amarāvatī, pp. 5, 6, 112; Annual Report of South Indian Epigraphy, 1926-7, p. 71.

⁸ Nāgāhvaya in Lankā., p. 286; see Vaidya's Catuhśatikā, Intro.,

of Nāgārjuna. So, it appears that the south may claim credit for being not only the birthplace of Mahāyāna itself, but also of the noted figures, who were instrumental in making Mahāyāna what it was in the 2nd and 3rd century A. C. The dates of Aryadeva and Naga are placed in the early part of the 3rd century (200-225) and Nāgārjuna precedes them by a few decades.1 The glory of Nagarjuna and his school of philosophy threw into the shade the great figure of Maitreya, the traditional founder of the Yogācāra school, until the time of Asanga, who brought his works into prominence and placed this school of philosophy on a high pedestal.

NATURE OF THE CONTENTS OF EARLY MAHAYANA WORKS

The first two centuries of the Christian era witnessed the conflict between Hinayana and Mahayana as well as the systematisation of the Mahāyāna doctrines. The works which depict (in one-sided fashion, it must be admitted) this struggle, viz., the Prajñāpāramitās, Saddharmapundarīka, Lankāvatara, Dasabhūmikasūtra, and Gandayvūha, were very probably the products of this period, but evidences are still lacking as to the exact dates of composition of these works. The only clue is supplied by the dates of their Chinese translations, but these are to be regarded as the latest limits of the time of their composition.2 In the absence of any definite data about the earliest limit, we can take into consideration

pp. 22, 61; Wassiljew, op. cit., p. 130; Vidyābhūṣaṇa's Logic (1st ed.),

p. 71. 1 Prof. Walleser thinks it should be the beginning of the 2nd century. See Z. für Buddhismus (6 Jahrgang, Schluss Heft), p. 242; I-tsing, p. lvii: Nāgārjuna, Aśvaghoṣa, and Āryadeva are regarded as contemporaries of Kaniska.

2 Dates of the Chinese translations:

(i) Of the Prajnāpāramitās, the earliest translated is the Daśasāha $srik\bar{a}$, which, however, has no Sanskrit original. It was translated between 25 and 220 A.C.; the Pañcaviméatisāhasrikā between 265 and 316 \$ and the Satasāhasrikā about 659.

(ii) The Saddharmapundarika was translated between 265 and 316 by Dharmarakşa, and between 384 and 417 by Kumārajīva. For its various versions, see Hoernle, Manuscript Remains, etc., pp. 139ff.; the nature of their contents, indicating a time when the Mahāvānists were trying to belittle the Hīnayānists. Prainaparamitas are full of Hinavanic technical expressions and phraseology, meant to show how the position of the Hīnavānists is untenable, how they are deluded by the superficialities of the religion, and how insignificant their knowledge is in comparison with that of a bodhisattva practising the prajñāpāramitā. The Saddharma-Pundarīka sets itself to the task of proving that the Hinayanists are of poor intellect, but yet they can make progress in religious matters, ultimately turning to Mahāyāna and comprehending the truth. The Gandavyūha essays to depict the great struggles of a bodhisattva-struggles which are beyond the capacity of the Hīnavānists-in order to learn the Samantabhadra-bodhisattvacaryā; Sudhanu visits many bodhisattvas, bhiksus, bhiksunīs, upāsakas, and upāsikās versed in certain portions of the Carya and acquires the same from them. The Daśabhūmikasūtra, as the title indicates, relates the practices connected with the bhumis, the gradual stages of a bodhisattva's sanctification. It also never misses an opportunity to attack the Hinayanists and to show how the last four bhumis of the bodhisattvas are wholly beyond the capacity of the śrāvakas. The Lankāvatāra, though one of the latest books of this group to be translated, contains an exposition of the early Yogācāra system and it harps throughout on the theme, viz., how the Hinayanists are concerned only with svasamānyalakṣaṇa (particular and generic characteristics of things) and are ignorant of the non-existence of all things.

The Mahāyāna works that immediately follow are those of Nāgārjuna, Asanga, Āryadeva, Vasubandhu, etc. Though

J.R.A.S., 1927, pp. 252ff.; Feer, Annales du Musée Guimet, II, p. 242; As. Res., XX, p. 436; Wassiljew, Buddhismus, p. 151.

⁽iii) The Lankāvatāra was translated by Guṇabhadra (443 A.C.) and Bodhiruci (553). See Eastern Buddhist, IV, p. 99.

⁽iv) The Dasabhūmikasūtra was translated by Dharmarakṣa (297 A.C.) and by Kumārajīva (384-417). See Rahder's Intro. to the Dasa.

⁽v) The Gandavyūha was translated between 317 and 420 A.C.

the main object of Nāgārjuna's Kārikā is to establish the idea that things are relatively existent, and that the truth is one and realisable only within one's own self, he takes up the chief dogma of the Hinayanic schools and tries to prove its hollowness from the new standpoint set up by him. Asanga, though of a much later date, does not allow the Hinayanic doctrines to pass unnoticed. He shows in his Sūtrālankāra the inferiority of the Hinayanists in mental calibre and their unfitness to comprehend the truth. Vasubandhu likewise in his Vijnaptimatratasiddhi pointedly indicates how the Hinayanists labour under misconceptions, the complete eradication of which is the aim of the Maha-Thus we see that though most of the works mentioned above belong to a time posterior to that with which we are here primarily concerned, they present us with materials illustrative of the conflict for ascendancy that was going on between the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists.

One remarkable feature, however, of the criticisms contained in these works against the Hīnayānists is that they do not attempt to distort the position of the Hīnayānists in order to win the laurel for the Mahāyānists. The statements made in them with regard to the Hīnayānists are mostly borne out by the earlier and later Hīnayāna works. Hence, instead of distorting their real position, they throw a flood of light on the Hīnayānic doctrines. The Mahāyānists found fault with the Hīnayānists, not because they misinterpreted the teachings of Buddha but because they looked upon as truth that which appeared to the Mahāyānists as only partial. In the next chapter, we shall examine the estimate made of the Hīnayānists by the Mahāyānists, and the reasons underlying such an estimate.

CHAPTER II

General Observations on the Relation between Hinayana and Mahayana

Throughout the long history of Buddhism, unity amidst diversity is strikingly evident. Every student or adherent of Buddhism, at all times and places, admits that Buddha taught a middle path (madhyamā pratipad), comprising a doctrine which kept clear of the two extremes, existence and non-existence,1 eternity and non-eternity of the world and its contents, and a discipline which advocated neither selfmortification nor a life of ease. Without questioning the validity of the doctrines of the Teacher about the two extremes, the Buddhist philosophers found ample latitude for speculations about the middle path, but they failed to come to any agreement about the sort of life that Buddha actually wanted men to lead. Some understood it to consist in the leading of the life of a monk and realising the transitoriness of the things of this world including the self; while others understood it to be living in and through this world and realising that there is absolutely no difference between one's self and any other thing of the world, or, in the words of the Mahāyānic texts, between Samsāra (world) and Nirvāṇa (its cessation). Even the formulæ, Sarvaṃ duḥkham, Sarvam anityam, and Sarvam anātmam,2 which came to be recognised as the characteristic marks of

¹ See Vinaya, Mv., i. 5. 17; Mtu., III, pp. 331, 345; Samyutta, II, pp. 17, 20, 76, 23, 61, III, p. 235. Also

M. Vr., p. 445:

Na śūnyam nāpi cāśūnyam tasmāt sarvam vidhīyate, * * sattvād asattvāc ca madhyamā pratipac ca sā.

M. Vr., p. 504: Bhāvābhāvāntadvaya-rahitatvāt-sarvasvabhāvānutpattilakṣaṇā śūnyatā madhyamā pratipan madhyamo mārga ity ucyate.

Sūtrā., p. 53: antadvayānuyogapratipakṣena vinayaḥ sāvadyaparibhoga-pratiṣedhataḥ kāmasukhallikānuyogāntasyānāvadyaparibhogānujñānata ātmaklamathānuyogāntasya.

² All is full of misery, All is transitory, and All is egoless.

50

Nirodha, Mārga (misery, cause of misery, cessation of misery, and the path leading to the cessation of miserv) and the Pratītvasamutpāda form the watchword of the Hīnavānists and hardly need any explanation for the prominence received by them in the Hinavana literature. But those who conceive this world as only an apparition, or as a mere delusion of the mind, must show reasons why the Truths and the Causal Law should find a place in their doctrines. Nāgārjuna devotes two chapters 1 to these two topics, and, at the very commencement of his chapter on Aryasatyas, he anticipates this objection and says that there would have been no Buddha, Dharma and Sangha, had there not been the Truths and the Causal Law, for it is through them that the ultimate truth is attained and hence they could not but have a place in their doctrines. According to him Sunvata is not nihilism but the absolute principle immanent in all, and hence, with it, no relation of the worldly things and usages can be established; the four Truths and the Causal Law relate to the world and are worldly. The Yogācārins hold an identical view. They have three forms of truth called Parikalpita (imaginary), Paratantra (dependent), and Parinispanna (perfect or ultimate).2 Their view of Śūnyatā that the world is a delusion of the mind is a parinispanna truth, while the Āryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda relate to the Paratantra and Parikalpita. In short, the Mahāyānists hold that the four Truths and the Causal Law are the preparatory steps indispensable to the realisation of the absolute truth. Their doctrines exist to lead the ignorant beings from ignorance to knowledge, from darkness to light, and this is effected by and through the Aryasatyas and the Pratītvasamutpāda.

Though the Causal Law is relegated by the Mahāyānists to the domain of convention, it will be observed that it received their earnest attention. Nāgārjuna opens his work with a long dissertation on the Causal Law in order to prove that the things and events, of which we are cognizant,

¹ M. Vr., Ch. I & XXIV; see infra. Ch. III (d).

² For detailed treatment, see Ch. III (d).

as body or different from it; neither has it been explained by me whether Tathagata exists or does not exist after death, or whether Tathagata not-exists or not not-exists after death).

These expressions, which receive no more than bare mention in the Pali literature under the belief that their true sense can only be comprehended by one who has risen to the highest state of sanctification, served, however, as a basis for many of the speculations of the later Buddhists. The Yogācārins recognise that the truth is beyond the four limitations, viz., the same or different or both or non-both, i.e., it does not admit of the questions of existence or non-existence.1 But this recognition did not deter them from conceiving a Tathagata-garbha, the "Womb of the Universe," or "the transcendental soul of man just coming under the bondage of karmaic causation".2 The Mādhyamikas, who are too severe in their logical conclusions, consider that the four limitations are so many impossibilities and that any discussion about them is like the discussion about the 'colour of the son of a barren woman'; and it is for this reason that they add that Buddha had no other alternative than to say that they are indeterminable (avyākrta).3 The limitations, however, helped the Madhyamikas in building their theory of Śūnvatā as an impersonal absolute principle, regarding which the above mentioned fourfold inquiry is inadmissible.

AGREEMENT RE. THE FOUR TRUTHS AND THE CAUSAL LAW

Though the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists did not agree regarding the conception of Śūnyatā, there was no disagreement among them in regard to the fact that Buddha preached the four Truths (Āryasatyas) and the Causal Law (Pratītyasamutpāda). The four truths, Duḥkha, Samudaya,

¹ Lankā., p. 96: Catuṣṭaya-vinirmuktā tathāgatānām dharmadeśanā yadutaikatvānyatvobhayānubhaya-pakṣa-vivarjitā nāstyasti-samāropā-pavāda-vinirumktā.

² Sogen, op. cit., p. 25.

³ M. Vr., pp. 446-47: 14 indeterminable problems are enumerated. Cf. Con. of N., pp. 44-45.

⁴ See Lankā., p. 96.

Buddhism, lost their value in the eyes of the later Buddhists, the Mahayanists. But Nirvanam śantam, however, never lost its charm for any of the Buddhist thinkers. Almost all of them agree in holding that Nirvana is santa (peaceful i.e., unruffled by origination and destruction) and that it is something inexpressible, and without decay and origin. It has found expression in the well-known lines of the

Mādhyamika Vṛtti: 2 aniruddham anutpannam etan nirvāṇam ucyate (Nirvāṇa is....undecaying and unoriginating) and

Itivuttaka:3 Atthi, bhikkhave, abhūtam akatarı asankhatam (there is, o bhikkhus, the unborn, uncreated, and unconstituted).

THE EXTENT OF AGREEMENT RE, THE CONCEPTION OF SUNYATA

That all is transitory and all is egoless sometimes expressed by the words sarvam sūnyam (all is essenceless) formed the subject of keen controversies among the various sects. The differences of opinion centred round the extent to which the transitory nature of the world should be carried. The Hinayanists remained satisfied with a simple definition of Śūnya, declaring that as the world is void of individuality or anything belonging to an individuality, it is called sūnya (yasmā ca suññam attena va attaniyena va tasmā suñño loko ti vuccati ti). In other words, they say that as there is nothing permanent or personal in this world, the world is devoid of any substantiality. The Mahāyānists, especially the Madhyamikas, however, would not stop there. They would carry the conception of Sunya to its farthest limits, arriving at the Śūnyatā of not only the apparent existences but also of the so-called Tathagata,4 Nirvana, or Akasa.

¹ Sogen in his Systems of Buddhistic Thought (pp. 7 ff) takes Sarvam anityam and Sarvam anātmam and Nirvānam sāntam as the threefold cornerstone upon which rest both Hinayanism and Mahayanism. Strictly speaking, Anitya and Anatma do not find place in the Mahayanic conception of Śūnyatā or Tathatā, the ultimate truth. In fact, Sarvam tathatvam (all is such as it is) replaces the former two in Mahāyāna.

² M. Vr., p. 521; Burnouf, Intro., p. 519.

³ Itiv., p. 37; Ud., p. 80.

⁴ Sata., p. 120 : Nāmamātram idam yaduta Buddha iti.

They add that the Tathagatas never trouble themselves about these terms, which to them are as meaningless as the self-contradictory expression like 'the son of a barren woman'. The usual way in which they speak of the non-existence of anything is

Na sūnyatayā rūpam sūnyam, nānyatra rūpāt sūnyatā, rūpam eva sūnyatā, sūnyataiva rūpam (form is not devoid of sūnyatā, sūnyatā is not outside form, form is sūnyatā, and sūnyatā is form).²

It is remarkable that this form of generalisation of the sūnyatā has been resorted to not only by the early Mahāyānists in the Prajūāpāramitās but also by the Mādhyamikas and the Yogācāras. An attempt has been made to show with the help of this passage that though sūnyatā seems to be the ultimate abstraction of all dharmas (things), it is actually the name which is given to the real svabhāva (nature) of things (dharmas or dravyas). It is dharmatā in the sense that it is neither apart from the dharma nor identical with it. If we say that it is apart from dharma, then the dharmas would be void, and if we say it is identical with dharma then the dharmas would be nitya (permanent). This conception of Sūnyatā is only foreshadowed, but does not appear in a developed form in Pāli literature in passages like—

Avyākatam mayā tam jīvam tam sarīram or aññam jīvam aññam sarīram. Hoti tathāgato param maranā; na hoti tathāgato param maranā; hoti ca na hoti ca tathāgato param maranā; n' eva hoti na na hoti tathāgato param maranā". (It has not been explained by me whether soul is the same

¹ Lankā., p. 19: Alabdhātmaka dharmāḥ katame yaduta śaśakharoştra-vājivisāna-bandhyāputra-prabhrtavo dharmāh.

² Sata., p. 118: rūpam (lit. form=material constituents of a body) has been taken here as X, i.e., any term may be put for it. In the Pañcaviṃśati (leaf 72b), 'Māyā' has been used for 'Śūnyatā' in a formula exactly like this.

³ M. Vr., p. 248.

⁴ Sûtrā., p. 76. In the Vijňaptimātratā, śūnyatā is the same as bhūta-tathatā.

⁵ See, e.g., Digha, I, p. 188; Anesaki takes the word 'Tathāgato' in stead of 'Buddha' as significant. See E.R.E., vol. iv, p. 836,

are all relative, appearing and disappearing through some causes and conditions, and asserts that the moment a person realises this fact he is emancipated and knows the Truth. Śūnyatā.¹ The Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists differ as regards the Truth but they agree that the Truth, as conceived by them, is attainable through the comprehension of the causal law, and so the Buddhist texts, whether Hinayanic or Mahāyānic,2 are unanimous in holding—

Yah pratītyasamutpādam pasyati sa dharmam pasyati, yo dharmam pasyati so buddham pasyati. (He who realises the causal origination of things sees the Truth; one who sees the Truth sees the Buddha.)

The formula of the Causal Law appealed so much to the Buddhists of all times and places that not only the scriptures of the Hinavanists and the Mahavanists but also the inscriptions of different periods record

Ye dharmā hetuprabhavā hetum tesām tathāgatah hyavadat, Tesām ca yo nirodha evamvādī mahāśramanah.

(The Tathagata explained the origin of those things, which proceed from a cause. He explained their cessation as well: this is the doctrine of the great Sramana).

These show that there was complete unanimity amongst all the sects with regard to the fact that Buddha preached the Causal Law and the Aryasatyas. But it has to be admitted that though the Āryasatyas, the Pratītyasamutpāda and the uncaused and uncreated Nirvana find a place in the doctrines of all the schools, the standpoint from which each of them is being viewed is as apart as the poles. In fact, around these three principles have developed various conflicting opinions, giving rise to a number of schools, each trying to show that its own view of the principles is right, while the views of the others are wrong.

¹ Nāgārjuna even identified Pratītyasamutpāda with Śūnyatā, see M. Vr., pp. 503, 542: yah pratītyasamutpādah śūnyatām tām pracaksmahe.

² Majjhima, I, p. 191; Samyutta, III, p. 120; Itiv., p. 92; Sad. San. (J.P.T.S.), 1890, p. 69 Mil., p. 71; Digha, II, p. 154; Bodhic., p. 386; M. Vr., pp. 6, 160; Salistambasūtra, p. 70.

EKAYĀNATĀ

As the Hinavanists were confident of having preserved the original teachings of the Master, and of existing anterior to the Mahāyānists, they did not think it worth while to show the agreements and disagreements between their own doctrines and those of the Mahavanists. But the Mahavanists, aware of their later origin and remoteness from the Founder of their religion in point of time, could not help devoting some thought to establishing their claim as the true representatives of the Founder. They attempted to prove that the real point of view of the Founder had been missed by the Hinavanists to whom they usually referred as Śravakas and Pratvekabuddhas. They did not deny the authenticity of the literature of the Hinayanists and the doctrines propounded by them, but what they desired to prove was that Buddha knew the mediocre character of the intellect of most of his disciples and delivered some discourses in a modified form to suit their understanding while to the select few he gave out his real teachings, which became known as the Mahāyāna sūtras. They did not say that Buddha had different truths for people of different mental calibres. According to them, Buddha preached one and only one Truth and Path; but the Śrāvakas and Pratvekabuddhas see and practise only a portion of same. They are not debarred from seeing the whole truth and the real path, for many of them do so by becoming Mahāyānists after the attainment of Arhathood or Pratyekabuddhahood. They do not state that there could be two kinds of knowledge (prajñā), one for the Hinayānists and another for the Mahāyanists for the realisation of the Truth: so the Prainanaramītās say in their opening verses addressed to Prajñā:

Buddhaiḥ pratyekabuddhaiś ca śrāvakaiś ca niṣevitā, Mārgas tvam ekā mokṣasya nāsty anya iti niścayaḥ.

(You are the only path leading to emancipation, there is no other. It is the path followed by Buddhas, Pratyeka-buddhas and Śrāvakas alike). The Prajūāpāramitā texts lay too much stress on the practice of prajūāpāramitā, identify-

¹ Asta., p. 3; Pañca., p. 1; Bodhic., p. 430.

ing it sometimes also with the absolute truth. The texts remark in many places that the three Yanas are embodied in the Prajñāpāramitā, and that the achievements of the Bodhisattvas, Śrāvakas, or Pratyekabuddhas depend of the Prajñāpāramitā. So, according to these texts, the Prajñāpāramitā is the only Yāna for arriving at the Truth,1 and it includes all other Yanas.

The Saddharma-Pundarīka,2 concerned as it is to prove that Hīnayāna is a stepping stone to Mahāyāna, supports this idea in these verses :-

Ekam hi yānam dvitiyam na vidyate, trtiyam hi naivāsti kadāci loke. Anyatrupāvā purusottamānām, yad yana-nanatyupadarsayanti. Bauddhasya jñānasya prakāśanārtham. loke samutpadyati lokanāthah. Ekam hi kārvam dvitivam na vidyate, na hīnayānena nayanti Buddhāh.

(There is only one path, no second, never does a third exist in the world. The exhibition of the variety of Yanas is only a means adopted by the great sages. The Teacher appears in the world to give out the Buddha knowledge. He has only one object in view, and nothing else. Buddhas never lead men by an inferior path.) It states again elsewhere 3:

Sa paśvati mahāprajño dharmakāyam aśesatah, Nāsti yānatrayam kiñcid ekayānam ihāsti tu.

(For him, the highly wise, who has seen the Dharmakaya in its fullness, there is only one Yana and not three). But as the avowed object of the Saddharma-Pundarika is to show that the Śrāvakayāna was only a means (upāya) of uplift of the devotee as devised by the Teacher, it harps on the theme:

Ekam eva yānam ārabhya sattvānām dharmam deśitavanto

¹ See, e.g., Pañca., leaf 167a; Bodhic., p. 431. It should be noted that the perfection in prajñāpāramitā means the realisation of the Absolute through the comprehension of the non-existence of things altogether.

² Sad. P., p. 46.

³ Ibid., p. 143.

yad idam Buddhayanam sarvajnataparyavasanam, etc.1 (it is concerning only one Yana that the dharma has been preathed, it is the Buddhayana leading to the attainment of

all-knowledge, etc.).

The bject of these verses is to show that the real Truth and the real Path are one, and that which is followed by the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas is ultimately followed by Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas; hence there are not, in fact, three yānas called Śrāvakayāna, Pratyekabuddhayāna, and Buddhayāna but only one Yāna and that is Buddhayāna or Mahāyāna.

POINTS OF AGREEMENT BETWEEN THE TWO YANAS MENTIONED IN THE MAHĀYĀNIC TEXTS

Some of the Mahāyānic texts have also attempted to prove the simultaneous origin and the essential unity of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna by bringing out the points of agreement existing between the two Yanas. The (Tibetan) Madhyamakāvatāra remarks on the basis of Nāgārjuna's statement in his Mādhyamika-sūtras about the conception of Śūnyatā of the Hinayanists and the Mahayanists that "it is the same śūnyatā (vacuity) whether it be in the sense of destruction or of non-origin" and takes this fact as a proof of the simultaneous origin of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna.² The Sūtrālankāra 3 also attempts to prove that there is only one yāna, not two or three, and that Hinayāna is not altogether different from Mahāyāna. Its object is to show that the only Yana (Ekayana) is really Mahayana, the other two Yanas being subservient to it. It points out that there

1 Sad. P., p. 41, see also Sikṣā., pp. 95-6: "I have never preached the law in separate forms, one for Śrāvakas, one for Pratyekabuddhas and one for Bodhisattvas."

² La Vallée Poussin's Fr. transl. in the Le Muséon, VIII, (N.S.), p. 271: "Ce point est enseigné par (Nāgārjuna) notre maître, quand il dit: Le Grand Véhicule enseigne la non-naissance, l'autre Véhicule la destruction; c'est la même vacutié dans la sens de destruction et de non-naissance". Cf. Madhyamaka Sāstra, XV, 7; M. Vr., p. 269, Kātyāyanāvavāde cāstīti nāstīti cobhayam, pratisiddham bhagavatā bhāvābhāvavibhāvinā. Cf. also Samyutta, II, p. 17.

⁸ Sūtrā., pp. 68-70.

are many things common to the Hinayānists and the Mahā-yānists, some of which are:

- (i) Sameness of the dharmadhātu (totality of existence or things), i.e., the Śrāvakas and Bodhisattvas emanate from the identical dharmadhātu.¹
- (ii) Sameness of nairātmya (absence of any subcance). The Śrāvakas assert the absence of substance (ātmābhāva), the difference between the Śrāvakas and Bodhisattvas being that the former apply it to Pudgala (person) only, while the latter apply it to both Pudgala and Dharma (world).
- (iii) Sameness of *vimukti* (liberation). It refers to the kleśa-vimukti (abandonment of passions) which is sought for by both the Śrāvakas and Bodhisattvas, the latter seeking something more, viz., the Jñeyāvaraṇa-vimukti (abandonment of the screen obstructing knowledge).
- (iv) In spite of the gotrabheda (difference in gotras), there are many who are of the Aniyata-gotras and become Mahā-yānists. The Aniyata-gotras include two classes of individuals, one class prone to become Śrāvakas and the other Bodhisattvas. Many of the former class are attracted to Mahāyāna, while those of the latter are not allowed to slip (samdhāranāya) from Mahāyāna.²
- (v) Though Buddhas and Śrāvakas have two different $\bar{a}sayas$, still there is a point of contact between the two. On the one hand, Buddhas identify themselves with all beings, while on the other, those of the Śrāvaka-gotras, before they turn definitely to Śrāvaka-yāna, perform meritorious deeds which enable them to attain Bodhi, and also cherish a desire (āśaya) to become Buddha. There is no difference between Buddhas and Śrāvakas in the matter of getting release from the series of births. Hence, after obtaining release, the Śrāvakas develop a desire (āśaya),

¹ Cf. Kāś. P. p. 116, §80; Kārikā (A.S.B. ms.), leaf 2a; Dharmadhātor asambhedāt gotrabhedo na yujyate; Ādheyadharmabhedāt tu tad bhedaḥ parigiyate. 39.

² See Sūtrā., p. 69, v. 54.

³ Prof. Lévi corrects the reading of the text from 'anātmani baddhā-saya' to 'ātmani buddhāsaya'. See his Transl., p. 125, fn.

through the grace and influence of Buddhas, to become Buddhas, and ultimately the two āśayas become identical and so there is only one Yāna.

Buddha's exhibition of attainment of parinirvāna through Śrāvakayāna. It refers to the fact of Buddha's attaining Mahāpa inirvāna as conceived by the Hīnayānists. The Mahāyānists usually explain it away by saying that it was the parinirvāna of the Nirmānakāya of the real Buddha, but the text here takes it as a point of contact between Hīnayāna' and Mahāyāna.

(vii) Ultimateness (paryantāt) of the Mahāyāna, i.e., as there is nothing beyond Mahāyāna, so it is the only Yāna, Śrāvakayāna making only some progress towards it.

The above arguments of Asanga adduced by him to demonstrate the agreements between Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna are more or less laboured. His idea clearly is that there is only one Yāna properly so called, viz., the Mahāyāna and that the Śrāvakas pass through a course of Śrāvakahood only to take to Mahāyāna in order to become Buddhas in course of time. The commentator explains it by a reference to the Śrāmālāsūtra, in which it has been stated that a Śrāvaka becomes a Pratyekabuddha, and ultimately a Buddha. 1

The Lankāvatāra² is more emphatic in its assertion that all Yānas are one and the same. Its point of view, however, is quite different, for all its remarks are made mainly from the pure Yogācāra standpoint that everything is mental delusion. It establishes the fact that all Yānas are essentially one and that they have been looked upon as different only because of their suitability to people according to the degree of progress made by them in mental and spiritual development. It says—

Triyānam ekayānam ca ayānam ca vadāmyaham, Bālānām mandabuddhīnām āryānām ca viviktatām.

¹ Sūtrā., p. 70: tam avasthātrayastham samdhāyoktam Bhagavatā Śrimālāsūtre, śrāvako bhūtvā pratyekabuddho bhavati punaś ca Buddha iti.

² Lankā., pp. 65, 243.

Dvāram hi paramārthasya vijnaptidvayavarjitam, Yānatrayavyavasthānam nirābhāse sthite kutah.

[On account of the distinction existing among the ignorant, the dullards and the sages, I speak of Triyāna, Ektyāna, or Ayāna, (i.e., absence of any yāna) as the entrance leading to Paramārtha, (i.e., the absolute truth), which is devoid of the two kinds of designations (vijñapti); in the absence of appearances (nirābhāse) how can this discrimination of three yānas stand.] Still more philosophical is its definition of Ekayāna, when it says that the realisation of Ekayāna means the cessation of all thought-creations (vikalpa) by thoroughly comprehending that the subject and the object are mere delusions. This, according to the text, was discovered for the first time by Buddha; it was not known to the non-buddhists, Śrāvakas, or Pratyekabuddhas; hence it should be called Ekayāna.

MAHĀYĀNA IS NOT THE ORIGINAL BUDDHISM BUT A LATER AND MORE DEVELOPED STAGE OF SAME

From the standpoint of Mahāyānic philosophy, the three yanas may be essentially one, but the philosophic expositors of Ekayanata never saw eye to eye with the Hinayanists, and expressed their feelings for the latter in disparaging terms. The Hinavanists, however, literally obeyed the dictum of the Teacher, attānam na ukkamseti param na vambheti (neither praise yourself nor disparage others) and did not choose to embody in their literature condemnations of their opponents. It cannot, however, be denied that Mahayana had in it some features and principles for which it can rightly claim superiority over Hīnayāna in some directions. Its wider outlook with the great emphasis laid on Maitri and Karuna and its attempt to put together in as perfect a manner as possible the philosophical truths can claim for it a superior position in regard to Hinayana, but it should be remembered that Mahāyāna is an advanced stage of Buddhism; in fact, it is

¹ Lankā., pp. 133: Ekayānamārgādhigamāvabodhaḥ katamo yaduta grāhyagrāhakavikalpa-yathābhūtāvāsthānād apravṛtter vikalpasyaikayānāvabodhaḥ. See also p. 155.

a later phase of Buddhistic thought and religion, an outcome of the Buddhistic culture of two or three centuries. The relation of Hinayana to Mahayana has been happily expressed by Dr. Maeda thus:-"The teachings of Sakyamuni are the seeds, those of Hinayana are the branches and leaves, those of Mahāyāna are the blossoms and fruits. Long after the seeds were hidden away and when the time was ripe, the fruit appeared ". According to Dr. Murakami1 "Buddha did not necessarily teach Hīnayāna or Mahāyāna, as these are designations invented later. What was really preached by Buddha himself was primitive Buddhism in which there was yet no differentiation". Even the Agamas of Hinayana Buddhism, in his opinion, do not preserve all the features of early Buddhism, as they were compiled some centuries after Buddha, but yet they contain more primitive Buddhism than other scriptural texts. Drs. Anesaki and Chuki Tominaga

Attempts to prove that Mahāyāna was derived directly from Śakyamuni:

also agree that Mahāyāna cannot have historically a direct

relation to Śākyamuni².

There are however scholars, both ancient and modern, who are not willing to accept the unpleasant truth that Mahāyāna is not derived from Śākyamuni directly. The ancient scholars take shelter in scholastic arguments to oppose the inference, while the modern rely with the same object on a few traditions preserved in the literatures of Japan and India.

I. Asanga

Asanga in the first chapter of his Sūtrālankāra 3 puts forward these arguments: "If it be a fact that Mahāyāna

¹ Vide his article on Mahāyāna in the Eastern Buddhist, I, ii, pp. 1, 2.

² The opinions of the Japanese scholars have been taken from the paper of Mr. R. C. Armstrong on "The discussion of the origin of Mahāyāna Buddhism" in the Eastern Buddhist, IV, i.

³ Sūtrā., pp. 3, 4. This passage of the Sūtrālankāra is cited also in the Chinese commentary of the Vijnaptimātratāsiddhi for proving the authenticity of Mahāyāna. See Prof. Poussin's French translation of the Chinese commentary, pp. 176-78.

was not preached by Buddha and that it was invented (utpāditam) by some body at a later time, then it would be a danger (antaraya) to the excellent religion (saddharna). and it should have been foretold by Buddha as one of the many dangers that might befall his religion in future (anāgata-bhavas). but it was not. It appears that Mahāvāna originated at the same time with Hinayana and not afterwards; then why should it not be regarded as based on Buddhavacana. Mahāvāna is a sublime and profound religion and so it cannot be understood by tārkikas (sceptical dialecticians). It is also not correct to say that it was uttered by some body other than Buddha, for it does not appear in the Śāstras of the non-Buddhists (tīrthikas), and even if the tīrthikas are told of it, they do not believe it. If we admit that it was said by some body other than Śākvamuni, then it must have been uttered by some one who had attained Bodhi. In that case also it is Buddhavacana. for he who after realising Bodhi has uttered this is a Buddha. If the existence of the Mahāyāna be denied, then there cannot exist a Śrāvakavāna, because Śrāvakayāna is Buddhavacana and it is not proper to say that there is no Mahāyāna (or Buddhayāna), for there cannot arise a Buddha without a Buddhayana. It is also Buddhayacana in view of the fact that the unconditioned knowledge (sarvanirvikalpajñāna) attainable through Mahāyāna operates as an antidote to all klesas. This scholastic reasoning of Asanga may have a value of its own but it does not establish the simultaneous origin of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna.

II. ŚĀNTIDEVA

Śāntideva, in his Bodhicaryāvatāra, adduces reasons different from those of Asanga to establish the authenticity of the Mahāyāna scriptures. His attempt is more to challenge the authenticity of the Hīnayāna Āgamas than to establish the aforesaid point. He says that the statement found in the Prajñāpāramitās that all the three yānas have been

¹ For a note on the Anagatabhayas, see Lévi's French Translation of Sūtrā., pp. 6, 7 fn.

preached in them (atra prajnāpāramitāyām sarvāni trīņi yānāni vistarenopadistāni) is not accepted by the Hīnayānists, for the latter deny the authenticity of the Mahayana scriptures. To establish the authenticity of their own Agamas, the first argument advanced by the Hinayanists is this, that with regard to the authenticity of the Hinayana scriptures, the Mahāyānists have nothing to say by way of objection, while the Hīnayānists do not accept the scriptures which the Mahāyānists accept as the authentic utterances of Buddha himself. But the argument for establishing the authenticity of the scriptures on the acceptance of the same by persons (in this case the Hinayanists or the Mahayanists) is considered worthless by the Mahāyānists. The second argument put forward by the Hinayanists is that their Agamas have been handed from teacher to pupil and that it satisfies the conditions laid down by Buddha as proofs of authenticity, viz., that it agrees with the $S\bar{u}tra$, it can be traced (samdrsyate) in the Vinaya, and that it is not in conflict with the causal origin of things (dharmata 1, i.e., pratityasamutpāda). But this argument also falls through on account of the fact that the Mahayanists also can quote a similar passage from the $Adhyar{a}$ śaya-samco $danar{a}$ -s $ar{u}tra$ of theirs. The third argument of the Hinayanists is that the authenticity of their scriptures is acknowledged not only by the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists but also by the non-Buddhists. This again is met by the Mahāyānists, who argue that the Vedas and such other literature would also then be accepted as authentic. The fourth and the last argument of the Hīnayānists is that as regards their scriptures, there are no differences of opinion, while there are many in regard to the Mahayana scriptures. This is answered by the Mahāyānists by pointing out that, leaving out of account the non-Buddhists such as the Mimāmsakas, the Hinayanists themselves are not unanimous in their opinion about their scriptures, as they are divided into

¹ Bodhic., p. 431: Yac ca sūtre' vatarati, vinaye ca samdršyate, dharmatām ca na vilomayati, tad Buddhavacanam nānyad; see also Sūtrā., p. 5; cf. Dīgha, II; p. 124: Tāni padavyanjanāni sutte c'eva otaranti vinaye ca sandissanti, etc.

eighteen sects (bheda); the division does not stop there, the commentator adds, because in each sect (bheda) again, there are differences of opinion according as one is a Sautrāntika (one who studies the Sūtras only), an Abhidharmika (one who studies the Abhidharma only), or a Vainayika (ofe who studies the Vinaya only)1. The Hīnayānists, therefore, should give up their Sūtras, Vinaya, and Abhidharma. This fact shows the unsoundness of the Hinayanic argument that their scriptures have been handed down faithfully from teacher to pupil. Moreover, there should not be any disagreement regarding Buddha- or Sarvajña-vacana if they have been faithfully preserved. Śantideva's arguments may show the anomaly of the position of the Hīnayānists, but they do not establish his proposition that the Mahayana scriptures originated with Buddha.

THE JAPANESE SCHOLARS ON THE AUTHENTICITY OF MAHĀYĀNA

Let us now see what the modern scholars have to say about the authenticity of Mahayanism and Mahayana scrip-Mr. Suzuki takes to a line of reasoning different from those of the ancient scholars. He tries to draw an analogy between Buddhism and Christianity and says that if Protestantism be the genuine teaching of Jesus of Nazareth then Mahāyāna Buddhism is also the genuine teaching of Buddha Śākyamuni. This sort of argument may well serve Mr. Suzuki in a controversy with an orthodox advocate of Protestantism speaking on Mahāyāna, but in historical criticism, it has no weight. However, he reveals the real state of things when he points out in another place that Mahāyānism is not a fossilised but a living religion like Christianity and though some "changes it has made during its historical evolution, its spirit and central ideas are all those of its founder". He states further that if we take the term "genuine" to mean a lifeless preservation of the

¹ For detailed discussion on the division of monks belonging to the same sect, see my Early History etc., p. 207; Lanka., (B.T.S. ed.) pp. 135, 137.

eriginal, then Mahāyānism is not the genuine teaching of Buddha, but "the Mahāyānists would be proud of the fact, because being a living religious force, it would never condescend to be the corpse of a bygone faith". Ultimately he says "What does it matter, then, whether or not Mahāyānism is the genuine teaching of Buddha".

Mr. Suzuki admits, therefore, that Mahāyāna may not be the teaching of Buddha, but Mr. Kimura, without denving the fact that the "Mahayana sutras and the statements emhodied therein undoubtedly came into being after Buddha's death", puts forward his theory about the possession of two kinds of "perception" by Buddha, Mahāyāna representing the "introspectional or espteric" side of the "perception" and Hīnayāna the "phenomenological or exoteric" side 2. He believes that Buddha imparted his introspectional teachings to the select few among his disciples, preaching his 'phenomenological' teachings to all the rest. This theory is based partly on the traditions to the same effect preserved in Japan and partly on an uncritical acceptance of some of the statements relating to Samvrta and Paramartha truths found in the early Mahāyāna treatises, specially the Saddharma-Pundarika. There could be no objection to accept Mr. Kimura's view if he could point out the "advanced and brilliant disciples" who "rightly grasped Buddha's introspectional ideas" and of which they made an exposition resulting in the development of "Mahāvānic ideas". If Śāriputra, Subhūti, Mahāmaudgalyāyana were not able to grasp Buddha's ontological teachings as the Saddharma-Pundarika actually states, then who were the others able to do so? They certainly cannot be the Bodhisattvas. who have the appearance of fictitious figures even in the Mahāyāna literature. In fact, the interlocutors in the early Mahāyāna treatises, such as the Prajñāpāramitās, are the Hinayana savants, Śariputra, Subhūti, etc., and the names

¹ Suzuki, Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism, p. 16.

² Evidently Mr. Kimura has in his mind the Paramārtha- and Saṃvṛti-satyas. For Mr. Kimura's statements, see *Journal of Letters* (Calcutta University), vol. xii, pp. 47, 59, 65, For the two Satyas see Chapter III (d).

that we most frequently come across in the Mahāyāna works are those of the prominent figures of the Hīnayāna literature. No student of history will probably believe the statement of the *Prajñāpāramitās* that these disciples delivered the Mahāyāna teachings only by being inspired by Buddha¹ and without properly grasping them. Japanese traditions, which are relied upon in this connection to establish the authenticity of the Mahāyāna, reveal, I think, the actual state of things. They accord priority of origin to Hīnayāna, as will be seen from the following:—

- (a) The Hsien Shou school thus arranges chronologically the Japanese traditions on the various forms of the Buddhist teachings:—
 - (i) Siao Chiao or primitive teaching;
 - (ii) Shih Chiao or the beginning of the true religion (transitional state);
 - (iii) Chung Chiao or the final development of the true religion;
 - (iv) Tun Chiao or the school of meditation; 2 and
 - (v) Yuan Chiao or the complete religion of all the schools.
 - (b) The Tien Tai school puts the order thus:-
 - (i) Tsang Chiao or primitive teaching;
 - (ii) Tung Chiao or the teaching in a transitional state;
 - (iii) Pieh Chiao or the new teaching; and
 - (iv) Yuan Chiao or the complete religion of all the schools.³

The tradition of the Tien Tai school, however, adds that the Avatamsaka sūtras were preached first, but as they were not understood by the disciples, the Agamas were preached.

¹ Asta., p. 33: Sthavirah Subhūtir āha. Tena hi Kausika upadekṣyāmi te buddhānubhāvena buddhatejasā buddhādhiṣthānena.

² "This second school founded by the last Buddhist patriarch Ta file is not mentioned separately in the Tien Tai classification" T. Richard, New Testament of Higher Buddhism, p. 41.

³ See T. Richard, op. cit., p. 4; here the word "teaching" has been preferred to "Buddhism"; see also Journal of Letters, xii, p. 64, Eastern Buddhist, iv, i.

Then, after some time when Buddha had some disciples with more developed mental powers, the ontological doctrines found in the Prainavaramitas and such other works were preached. Both the traditions support the view that both the forms of teaching were delivered by Buddha within the space of forty years. The Tibetan traditions go further and state that Sakvamuni delivered his instructions on the Prainanaramita sixteen vears after the attainment of bodhi. i.e., in the fifty-first year of his age while he was dwelling on the Grdhrakuta mountain, and add that they were compiled by Kāśyapa.1 Any one who examines the style of writing and the nature of the doctrinal and other matters discussed in the Gandavyūha, an old treatise of the Avatamsaka class, can have little doubt about the posteriority of this class of literature not only to the Hīnavāna Agamas or the Nikāyas, but also to the Praiñāvāramitās. Considering, for instance, the conception of the lokadhatus or the account of the existence of Buddhism in the south of India as found in the Gandavyūha, its composition cannot but be relegated to a time much later than the Prajñāpāramitās.2

The Prajñāpāramitās like the Astasāhasrikā and the Śatasāhasrikā occupy a position between the Mahāvastu and the Saddharmapunḍarīka or the Ganḍavyūha. This fits in with the chronological arrangement of the Japanese traditions, if we leave out of account the statement mentioned in them that Buddha could not have any disciples able to understand the teachings embodied in the Avatamsaka sūtras. Thus, we find, that the traditions do not deny the priority of origin of Hīnayāna referred to as Tsang Chiao (primitive teaching). Their mention of Tung Chiao (teaching in a transitional state) is also very interesting in view of the fact that it probably refers to the various schools like the Sarvāstivādins, the Mahāsānghikas, the Lokottaravādins, etc., which were half-way between Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna. But Yamakami Sogen 3 thinks that "Harivarman's doctrine

¹ As. Res., xx, pp. 399, 400.

² For a discussion about the time of the earliest *Prajñāpāramitā*, see my Intro. to the *Pañca*.

³ Sogen, *Systems of Buddhistic Thought*, p. 173.

(Satyasiddhi school) is to be regarded as the higher point of philosophical perception attained by Hīnayānism, and in a sense it constitutes the stage of transition between Hīnayānism and Mahāyānism". But the difficulty in the way of taking the Satyasiddhi school as indicative of the transitional state of Buddhism lies in the fact that the school came into existence as late as the 3rd century A.C., when Mahāyāna had already developed. It may be taken as an attempt made by Harivarman to reconcile Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna. The third name Pieh or Chung Chiao evidently refers to the early form of Mahāyānism as found in the Prajūāpāramitās and the contemporaneous literature.

THE POLICY OF RECONCILIATION IN THE Pundarika

The view shared by Dr. Enryo Inouye and a few other scholars 1 on the strength of the Japanese traditions that Sākyamuni imparted two forms of teaching, esoteric and exoteric, is very probably derived from statements in Mahavāna works, in which it is said that Buddha's teachings were based on two kinds of truth, conventional and transcendental, and from the Pundarika which seeks to maintain that Hinayāna was only an upāya-kauśalya adopted by Śākyamuni to attract people of average intellect to his teachings and then ultimately to Mahāyāna. It is well known how popular the Pundarīka is among the Mahāyānists, and what a great influence it still exercises over their opinion. The statements are valuable from our standpoint, because their chief aim is the reconciliation of Hinavana with Mahayāna. It is stated that the Hīnayānists like Śāriputra acquired merits in previous births like the Bodhisattvas, but these they cannot remember now 2. It is to remind them of these merits, and also the resolutions formed by them in the previous births, that the Pundarika is preached to the

¹ See Eastern Buddhist, IV.

² Contrast Hardy, Manual of Buddhism, p. 312: Sāriputta enquired of Buddha if the Śrāvakas like him could become Buddhas. Buddha answered in the negative, saying that the Śrāvakas must complete the Pāramis.

Though the treatise maintains throughout the Śrāvaki s 1. superiority of the doctrines and practices of the Mahayanists to those of the Hinayanists, yet it does not disparage the latter as quite worthless. It tries to show that Hinayana is an expedient (upāya-kauśalya) that was adopted by Buddha to suit his disciples in a lower stage of intellectual and spiritual progress, and to serve as a step to Mahāyāna. Those who had reached the highest stage to which the practice of Hinayana doctrines can lead can become Mahavanists and ultimately Buddhas. In fact, it devotes quite a large space to show how the bhiksus, Śāriputra, Kāśvapa. Subhūti, Mahākātyāyana, Mahāmaudgalyāyana, Pūrna Maitrāyanīputra, Ānanda, Rāhula, and others, and the bhiksunīs, Mahāprajāpatī Gautamī, Rāhulamātā, etc., who were held in high esteem by the Hīnayānists on account of their deep spiritual insight and high attainments, repented when they were old that they had to follow a lower course, as they did not possess the capacity to understand the covert teachings (samdhābhāṣā) of Buddha, and could not have the full benefit from his teachings. The statement is put into Sariputra's mouth that he had been selected by the Teacher as the chief of Śrāvakas of his time. He is the eldest son born of the mouth of the Teacher (jyesthaputra mukhajāta), but yet he mourns for his lot that he attains Nirvana (arahathood) only, and cannot become a Bodhisattva or Buddha. Then he curses himself that he has been found suitable by Buddha to be led through only a lower course of training (hinena yanena nirvatitah). The Teacher is represented as consoling him by saying that he can never have the intention of preaching different Yanas. He has preached only one Yana. Though he first taught Hinayana to some, it was to take them ultimately to Mahayana and make them realise Buddhahood in due course². The Punda-

² Sad. P., pp. 36, 38, 60, 61; Sata., p. 502; Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaf 231b.

¹ Sad. P., pp. 64-5: So'ham tvām Śāriputra pūrvacaryāpranidhānajñānānubodham anusmārayitukāma imam Saddharma-Puṇḍarīkam dharmaparyāyam sūtrāntam mahāvaipulyam bodhisattāvavādam sarvabuddhaparigraham śrāvakāṇām samprakāśayāmi.

rīka does not disappoint the Hīnayānists, for it holds out to them the hope that they will become Buddha povided they perform the duties enjoined upon a Bodhisattva. As they have already attained the qualities pertaining to arhathood, it would not be difficult for them to serform the pāramitās, develop Bodhicitta, worship and serve the innumerable Tathagatas, build stupas, etc., and thus ultimately reach Buddhahood. The treatise, proceeding further, predicts regarding each of the noted bhiksus the time when he will become a Buddha, what name he will bear, and over which lokadhatu he will preside 1. It also states that the bhiksus, who had become old and decrepit and had therefore no aspiration (sprhā) for Buddhahood or for powers pertaining to it, will not be left aside. They are like a poor man who had long been separated from his father and was not aware of his vast wealth. He would not believe that he would inherit Similarly these Śrāvakas, though devoid of this wealth. desire or energy for attaining the glory of Buddhahood, will still obtain it as their birthright.2 There is also a reference to another class of bhiksus who will, in future, be Śrāvakas, with their parinirvana and not aspire to be satisfied

¹ Sad. P., pp. 65, 144, 148, 150, 152, 201. Śāriputra after following the Saddharma of countless Tathāgatas, worshipping them in various ways, and fulfilling the Bodhisattvacaryās, will become Padmaprabhā Tathāgata, and preside over the Buddhaksetra called Viraja. Similarly will Kāsyapa and others as stated below:

Kāśyapa—Raśmiprabhā Tathāgata—Avabhāsaprāpta Buddhakṣetra. Subhūti—Śaśiketu Tathāgata—Ratnasambhava Buddhaksetra.

 ${\bf Mah\bar{a}k\bar{a}ty\bar{a}yana}. {\bf J\bar{a}mbunadaprabh\bar{a}sa\ Tath\bar{a}gata}. {\bf Buddhaksetra\ not mentioned.}$

Mahāmaudgalyāyana—Tamālapatracandanagandha Tathāgata—Mano bhirāma Buddhakṣetra

Pūrņa Maitrāyanīputra—Dharmaprasāda Tathāgata—Buddhakṣetra not mentioned.

In pages 309-310, Buddha foretells regarding 300 bhikşus that they have the āśaya for Buddhahood but they are not at present aware of same. They will, however, develop Bodhicitta after ages and attain Buddhahood.

Compare Lankā., p. 240: Arhantah punar Bhagavatā vyākrtā anuttarāyām samyaksambodhau; Panca. (A.S.B. ms). leaf 231b.

² Sad. P., pp. 100, 101.

Bodhisattvahood. They will be reborn in the lokadhātus where Sakyamuni Buddha will appear under other names, and where they will develop under his influence a desire for Tathagatajūāna and ultimately win it1. The following beautiful limile used in the treatise shows in a concrete form the object which it has in view, viz., that every Hinayanist is to become a Buddha, though he may not strive for it or may think it beyond his power to attain it. A guide was leading a large number of men through an extensive forest to Maharatnadvipa. After travelling some distance, they became tired and alarmed, and wanted to return. accomplished guide, quick in devising means (upāya-kuśala), brought into being a country by dint of his supernatural powers and asked them to take rest there. When the people were refreshed after rest, the guide caused the country to disappear, told them that it was only a magical creation of his, and that they should now proceed to Mahāratnadvīpa. The magical country is the Hīnayānic Nirvāṇa, while the Mahāratnadvīpa is the ultimate goal (i e., Buddhahood)2. Such similes make the object of the treatise apparent. It does not deny the priority of Hīnayāna, but it wants to relegate it to a position subservient to Mahāyāna, implying that the real teaching of Buddha was not Hīnayāna but Mahāyāna.

Two Hînayāna statements utilised to prove that Mahāyāna is the genuine teaching of Buddha

The Saddharma-Pundarīka utilises two statements found in the Hīnayāna literature for proving that Mahāyāna is genuine, and contains the most important teachings of Buddha:

(i) The first is that Buddha, just after attaining bodhi, was hesitating as to whether he should preach the truth, or proceed to attain Nirvāṇa. In the Ariyapariyesaṇasutta³ it is stated that the Truth (dharma) is deep and abstruse; it is excellent and beyond the range of dialectics; it

Sad. P., pp. 186 ff.
 Ibid., p. 188.
 Majjhima, I, pp. 160-175; Digha, II. p. 36; Atthasālini, p. 35;
 Mtt., III, pp. 314 f., Lal. Vis., pp. 395-396; Divyā., p. 492; M.V_f., p. 498.

can be understood by the wise only. People are addicted to desires and will hardly be able to understand the Paticasamuppāda or Nirodha; so the preaching of the truth would be of no avail, as nobody would understand him, and his labours would be thrown away. Cognizant of these thoughts passing through Buddha's mind, Brahmā appears and requests him to preach the truth, saying that though Magadha is full of impure religions, still there are beings with higher faculties and powers of vision, and the preaching of the Truth would save them from the miseries of the world, leading them to the haven of quietude. Buddha realised the value of Brahmā's words and decided to preach the Truth.

(ii) The second statement is that Buddha does not preach the Truth in a uniform manner. After observing the mental proclivities and capabilities of the persons to whom he desired to impart religious lessons he selected discourses appealing to their minds, and thus initiated them into the Truth. To a householder, he would first preach the danakathā, sīlakathā, saggakathā, kāmānam ādīnavam okāram samkilesam, nekkhamme ānisamsam (discourses on almsgiving, moral precepts, heavens, perils, corruptions, impurities of desires and the blessings of retirement). He would prepare the mind of a brahmin student by holding conversation with him on topics relating to sacrifice, caste-system and the like, and would deliver the Truth in a form suited to the mentality of the brahmin. To a husbandman he would preach the Truth through similes or topics relating to the tilling of lands, and so forth.2 It was only when he perceived that the minds of his hearers were sufficiently prepared that he would deliver the higher teachings, viz., dukkha, samudaya,

¹ See Ch. III (d), for the conventional and real teachings.

² Majjhima, Āsayānusayam viditvā dhammam deseti; Ďivyā., p. 97: Atha Bhagavā teṣām āśayānusayam viditvā dhātum prakṛtim ca jñātvā tādṛsī dharmadesanā karoti; p. 463: Bhagavatā teṣām karṣakānām āśayānusayam dhātum prakṛtim ca jñātvā dharmadesanā kṛtā. See also pp. 124, 550-1, 554.

Sutta Nipāta, Dhaniya Sutta; Dīgha, Ambattha Sutta; Vinaya, I. pp. 15f.—Yasapabbajjā; Miu., III, pp. 408, 413; Ava. S., II, p. 26.

nirodha, magga (misery of beings; how it originates, i.e., the theory of causation; how it can be destroyed; and the various practices to which one must resort for achieving the goal), which, according to the Hīnayānists, were the highest and the most profound (sāmukkaṃsikā dhammadesanā) teachings of Buddha.¹

The first statement cited above that Buddha was wavering just after attaining Bodhi as to whether he should live in peace in a solitary place, or go out to preach the abstruse doctrines found out by him, has been taken by the Pundarika as an admission on the part of the Hinayanists that their intellect is of a lower order. The story woven around it is that Śākyamuni came into existence when one of the five kaṣāyas2 (evils) or the sixty-two wrong views like 'nityam astīti nāstīti tathāsti nāsti'⁸ prevailed, when men were overwhelmed by trṣṇā (desire), moha (delusion) and kāma (passion) and did not possess the merits usually acquired by Bodhisattvas in their previous lives (cîrnacaryā purimajātisu). When the evils were raging over the land, Buddha at Brahmā's request came out to preach the religion, but found the vision of his audience too dim to get an insight into his abstruse doctrines. There was even the likelihood of their incurring sin by scoffing at these doctrines. Hence he thought it wiser to follow the previous Buddhas by devising some means to impart the Truth robed in different forms. The people inspired as they were by lower aims (hīnādhimukta) would not strive heartily if they were asked to aspire to Buddhahood. He therefore proceeded to Benares and preached to the five monks the dharma of quietude (dharmam prasantabhumim)4 and of which, the Nir-

¹ Digha, I, p. 148; Vinaya, I, pp. 15 ff; VI, p. 248; Majjhima, I,

<sup>p. 380.
² Kalpakaṣāya, Sattvakaṣāya, Kleśakaṣāya, Dṛṣṭikaṣāya, Āyukaṣāya
—Sad. P., pp. 31, 43, 58, 162, 167, 192; Lal. Vis., p. 248; Kośa, III, 94, p.
193; Samādhirājasūtra (B.T.S.), p. 9; Mtu., III, p. 317.</sup>

³ Sad. P., p. 48; Dīgha, Brahmajāla Sutta.

⁴ According to the Hīnayānists, dukkham, samudayam, nirodham, maggam were the sāmukkamsikā dhammadesanā (see *Majjhima*, I, p. 380), while according to the *Sad. P.* (p. 60), Buddhajñāna was the sāmutkarsikī dharmadešanā.

vāṇa, as conceived by the Hīnayānists, was the highest goal. Later on (paścime ca kāle), when he found some excellent men (putrān dvipadottamān), who had already been working through many rebirths to attain the highest Bodhi, he thought it fit to preach his excellent religion (sāmutkarṣikī dharmadeśanā) relating to the attainment of Buddhajñāṇa.¹ This was, however, preached in such a language that it could not be understood by the untrained.² The Punḍarīka goes to the length of saying that it was beyond the comprehension of Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas.² The Prajñā-pāramitā proceeds so far as to state that the collective prajñā of countless Maudgalyāyanas and Śāriputras would not be an infinite part of the prajñā of a Bodhisattva who has practised the prajñāpāramitā.⁴

The second statement of the Hīnayānists, that Buddha preaches his dharma in a way suited to the tendencies and capabilities of the hearers, has given opportunity to the Pundarīka to parade the intellectual superiority of the Mahāyānists over the Hīnayānists. It says that Buddha preached to people his dharma by adopting hundreds of expedients (upāyakauśalyaśatair anekaiḥ) after observing their mental tendencies (āśaya), their spiritual aspirations, their religious merits, and the variety of their actions (citrāṇi karmāṇi). To make his dharma universally attractive, he had recourse to various kinds of expressions, reasonings, and illustrations, and in fact, it was with this object that his teachings were imparted in nine

¹ Sad. P., pp. 55-57, 60.

² Ibid., p. 59: Bahūni samdhāvacanehi coktam durbodhyam etam hi asikṣitehi.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 19, 31, 70: Gambhīram durdaršam duranubodham Buddhajñānam...... sarvašrāvakapratyekabuddhaih. Cf. Hīnayāna passages: Ayam dhammo gambhīro duddaso duranubodho santo panīto atakkāvacaro nipuno panditavedaniyo (*Dīgha*, II, p. 36; *Majjhima*, I, p. 160; *Mtu.*, III, p. 314; *Divyā.*, p. 492; *Lal. Vis.*, p. 395-6.)

It will be observed that the Sad. P. retains the Hīnayāna passage almost verbatim replacing 'duranubodham paṇḍitavedaniyam' by 'duranubodham Buddhajñānam sarvaśrāvakapratyekabuddhaih'.

⁴ S'ata., pp. 121-2.

 $^{^{5}}$ Sad. $\stackrel{\frown}{P}$, pp. 71; cf. the corresponding Hinayana expressions, ante.

forms, viz., sūtra, gāthā, itivrttaka, jātaka, adbhuta, nidāna, aupamya, citra, and geyya.1 It was for those who had lower aspirations, who had not performed the necessary duties under the previous Buddhas, and who were still attached to the world with its pleasures and sorrows that he had to preach how to attain Nirvana only for their own selves. This was an expedient adopted by him to make them all ultimately realise the Buddhajñāna, but he never told them that they would become Buddhas, as the time was not ripe for it. Now that the fime had arrived, the truth that the navangas were only upāyakauśalyas for leading all men to the highest perfection was given out. As they were sons of Buddha, pure in conduct, wise and learned, and had performed duties under previous countless Buddhas, the Vaipulya Sūtras were preached to them.2 Aware of the noble aspirations of these disciples, Buddha tells them that they will, in future, become Buddhas and benefactors of the world. If the Śrāvakas can retain in their memory one verse of this great śāsana, (i.e., the Pundarīka),3 they will attain Bodhi. To show that the Teacher had only one form of teaching, understood differently by different persons according to their capabilities, the treatise uses some interesting analogies, one of which is that the clouds water the trees, plants, and shrubs of the countless lokadhātus but the trees, plants, and shrubs absorb the water in different ways according to their capabilities and grow according to their sizes and species; similarly Buddha showers the dharma possessing the same qualities (rasa), viz., vimuktirasa (emancipation), virāgarasa (absence of attachment) and nirodharasa (suppression of senses), etc.,4 and leading to omniscience (sarvajña-jñāna) but producing different results according to the capabilities of the disciples. The

¹ Sad. P., p. 45. The enumeration is a little different from the usual. The Pañcaviméati (A.S.B. ms.) leaf 165 remarks that only five Buddhas preached in the Navānga form. See ante, pp. 7 ff.

² Note here the contradictions appearing in the text. The treatise, in fact, now attributes to the Śrāvakas all the qualities, lacking which they were in other places shown as inferior to the Bodhisattvas and unfit for hearing the Mahāyāna doctrines.

⁸ Sad. P., p. 46.

⁴ Ibid., p. 124.

simile of the sun shedding the same kind of light over all beings has also been used to show Buddha imparying the same teachings. This could not convince some of the Śrāvakas who enquired as to why there existed distinctions as Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, and Bodhisattvas. The two analogies cannot be applied with all their implications to Buddha, • for the sun or the clouds remain unconcerned about the subjects of their benefactions, while Buddha always discriminates between them according to their lower, medium, or higher aspirations,1 and degrees of religious merit and capabilities. Not only this. He, in fact, did not think it desirable to teach everybody the dharma which leads to sarvajña-jñāna (omniscience possessed by a Buddha), for it may not conduce to the welfare of disciples not yet fit to utilize same. The treatise, therefore, uses a parable to emphasize this point, viz., that of a potter. A potter turns out of the same clay earthen pots of various descriptions, such as, curd-jar, milk-jar, and so forth, just as the dharma of Buddha passing under three names has really the same substance. This refers to one yana explained in three ways, the Buddhabodhi delivered in three forms (Buddhabodhim tridhā vibhāsye' ha prakāśayeyam).2 The parable concludes by saying that Buddha cannot be regarded as having said that he would lead some of his disciples by Hīnayāna, for that would attribute to the Teacher niggardliness (mātsarya), envy (īrsyā), whim (chandarāga) and ill-will (pāpacitta),which is absurd. From all this it is apparent that according to the Saddharma-Pundarika, Hinayanism was really a lower form of teaching, but it was only an upāyakauśalya adopted by the Teacher on account of the poverty of intellect of his early disciples.

The treatise then proceeds to remove a suspicion that might be entertained by the opponents regarding the straightforwardness of the Teacher in the adoption of the upaya-

¹ Sad. P., p. 140:

Anuttarām Buddhabodhim deśayatyagrayānike. Prakāśayati madhyām tu madhyaprajñāya nāyakah, samsārabhīrave bodhim anyām samvarņayatyapi.

² Ibid., p. 55.

kauśalvas. It uses a parable to explain away the suspicion. A rich old man owns a very big house which can accommodate five hundred persons, but the house has only one door, and a roof of straw (trna). Suddenly, the house catches fire, the old man comes out, but his twenty sons remain within it unmindful of the fire. He thinks that he is strong enough to bring them out safely. The father apprises them of the fire and asks them to come out but they will not believe him. As the father knows the playthings coveted by his sons, he thinks of using the expedient (upavakauśalya) of tempting his sons out of the house by offering them the toys called Goratha, Ajaratha, and Mrgaratha. He places them outside the house, and the boys run to reach them. When the father sees them all out of danger, he feels happy, and gives them not the ordinary toys placed by him outside the gate but toys of immeasurable value, as he is immensely rich. Buddha is compared here to the rich father, and the three rathas to the three yanas. The means of exit from the fire is only one and the Teacher attracts his disciples out of the fire through the exit and gives them the invaluable ratha, the Buddhayana.2 This illustration is open to criticism, for the Hīnayānists might say that Buddha promised one thing and gave another, and therefore, he was open to the charge of having spoken a false-The treatise meets it by saying that though Buddha was speaking of three yanas, he had all along in his mind the excellent one. By all these it is sought to establish that Buddha had only one religion and it was Mahayana, but his first disciples were not intelligent enough to grasp

1 This parable is also cited in the Lankā., p. 88: Rājā śreṣṭhī yathā putrān vicitrair mṛṇmayair mṛgaiḥ, pralobhya krīdayitvā ca bhūtān dadyāt tato mṛgān. tathāham lakṣaṇais citrair dharmānām pratibimbakaiḥ, pratyātmavedyām putrebhyo bhūtakotim vadāmy aham.

(Just as kings or rich bankers first tempt their boys by various kinds of earthen deer and then give them the real deer, so also Buddha tempts his disciples first by various appearances of dharmas and their characteristics, ultimately enabling them to know the true existence, which is realisable within one's own self.).

² Sad. P., pp. 71-76.

it and what they gave out as Buddhism was really a superficial view of the religion.

Reasons for regarding Śrāvakayāna as Hīnayāna

In spite of the conciliatory attitude of the Saddharma-Pundarīka trying to show that the Nirvānagāmins do ultimately . become sarvajñas and that Hīnayāna was only an upāyakauśalya, it is evident that this, as also other Mahāyāna treatises, assume an air of superiority and seek to establish that Mahāyānism is far superior to Hīnayānism. There are seven features, the Sūtrālankāra says, for which Mahāyāna should be considered great. First, its bases (alambana) are great, for its sutras are varied and innumerable. Secondly, its achievements (pratipatti) are great as it achieves two objects, viz., good for self and good for others. Thirdly, the knowledge imparted by it is deep for it penetrates into the non-substantiality (nairātmyabhāva) of both the individuality and the things of the world (pudgala and dharma). Fourthly, it involves great austerities because it requires strenuous application of energy for incalculable kalpas. Fifthly, it is great in its provision of expedients, for, its followers need not leave the worldly life provided they remain unattached to the world. Sixthly, its fruitions (samudāgama) are great, for it secures bala (power), vaišāradya (self-confidence born of the highest knowledge) and eighteen avenikadharmas.1 Seventhly, and lastly, its greatness lies in the performance of the duties of Buddha, namely the showing of the attainment of sambodhi and mahāparinirvāna.2

The use of the appellation Hīnayāna itself shows at a glance the low place to which the Hīnayānism was relegated by the Mahāyānists. The names, of course, that are mostly in use in the Mahāyāna scriptures are Śrāvaka and Pratyekabuddha. These are colourless names, and the Hīnayānists themselves used the term sāvaka or śrāvaka, e.g., in the expressions, pakatisāvaka, aggasāvaka, sāvakasaṅgha,

¹ For enumeration see Muyut. 7-9.

² Sūtrā., p. 171; cf. Gandavyūha, lesf 9b; Keith., B. Phil., p. 259.

sāvikā, and so forth. The Pratyeka-(Pacceka)-buddha is equally in frequent use among the Hīnayānists. The term, Hīnayāna, came into being to indicate that the Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas were hīnādhimukta (of lower aims)¹. They were also called Prādeśikas because their mind (citta) takes only a partial (prādeśika) and not comprehensive view of the evhole truth².

i. Āśaya.

The Sūtrālankāra shows analytically that the Śrāvakas were hinādhimukta and in consequence thereof their exertion, instructions, merits, and fruitions were of a lower order in comparison with those of the Mahayanists 3. It is according to one's aspiration that the teaching is imparted, and it is according to the teaching that one exerts himself. He earns merit in proportion to his exertion, and bodhi in proportion to his merits, i.e., either Śrāvakabodhi, Pratvekabuddhabodhi, or Mahābodhi4. From this, it is evident that the classification hinges on the asaya of an individual. The Srāvaka or Pratyekabuddhayānists are looked down upon by the Mahayanists because they desire self-emancipation only (ātmaparinirvāṇāśaya) and do not aspire to lead others to Nirvana, ignoring his own self. As they seek to become only Arhats and not Buddhas for the salvation of all beings, and as they wish to possess only Dharma-caksu, they are of hinādhimukti, (i.e., of low aspiration). This ideal of selfemancipation of the Hinayanists has been condemned in no

¹ In the Pug. P. (p. 26) the term hīnādhimutta means a person who is immoral, does evil deeds and serves similar other persons. The opposite expression is Panītādhimutta, i.e., one who is moral (sīlavā), performs meritorious deeds, and serves similar other persons.

² See Mvyut. 52; Daśa., p. 25; Lal. Vis., p. 433. Csoma Körösi on the basis of the Tibetan rendering translates Prādeśika as "a principle lasting but one day or a very short time". He adds in the footnote that it is "a vehicle or principle observed in a particular country or province". See Mvyut. (A. S.B. ed.), p. 20. For Triyāna see Sūtrā., p. 168; Pañca., leaf 6; Lal. Vis., p. 5; Sad. P., pp. 45, 147.

⁴ Cf. Lal. Vis., p. 34: āśayo dharmālokamukham Hīnayāna-spṛhaṇatāyai samvartate. Adhyāśayo dharmālokamukham udārabuddhadharmādyālambanatāyai samvartate.

uncertain terms as spiritual selfishness (ādhyātmika svārthaparatva) by all the schools of Mahāyāna. The Mahāyānists, however unpractical they may be, cannot but be admired for their *Parārthatva*, *i.e.*, sacrificing one's own gains for the sake of others, or ranking the acquisition of one's own spiritual gains as subsidiary to the spiritual gains of others. The Sūtrālankāra² uses the well-known simile in support of the greatness of the object of the Mahāyānists:

Yathā puṇyam prasavate pareṣām bhojanam dadat, Na tu svayam sa bhuñjānas tathā puṇyamahodayaḥ.

(As religious merit is produced by giving food to others and not by eating it, so the Mahāyānists earn more merit by helping others to attain nirvāṇa, and not by seeking it themselves like the Hīnayānists.) This ideal of the Mahāyānists is echoed in the *Bhāgavata*, 3 where Prahlāda says:—

Prāyeṇa devamunayaḥ svavimuktikāmā Maunaṃ caranti vijane na parārthaniṣṭhāḥ, Naitān vihāya kṛpaṇān vimumukṣa eko Nānyaṃ tvadasya śaraṇaṃ bhramato 'nupaśye.

(Very often, O Lord, the sages desirous of attaining their own salvation practise silence in the forests without devoting themselves to others' interests. I do not wish to have salvation for myself forsaking the others. I do not find for my bewildered self any refuge other than in you.)

The ideal of the Mahāyānists is certainly very noble, and appeals strongly to the minds of men, but their process of attaining salvation through a period covering innumerable rebirths cannot appeal to all minds. The Hīnayānists do not deny that the aspiration to become Buddha is very noble, but they think it useless and unpractical to advise persons, most of whom possess merits and capabilities far inferior to those of a bodhisattva, to strive for Buddhahood. The charge laid against the Śrāvakas that they do not work for others' benefit is not true. The maxim of the *Dhamma*-

¹ Sikeā., p. 17: Tatra Bodhisttvenaivam cittam utpādayitavyam sarvasattvānām ātyayikam parigrhyaitadapi me varjayan niṣīdāmīti.

² Sūtrā., p. 52.

⁸ Bhāgavata, VII, ix. 44.

78

pada 1 "dhammadānm sabbadānam jināti" and the admonition of the Dīgha Nikāya and the Vinaya 2

"caratha, bhikkhave, cārikam bahujanahitāya bahujanasukhāya lokānukampāya atthāya hitāya sukhāya devamanussānam" (go, O ye preachers, to preach the religion for the benefit and happiness of men and gods)

clearly shows that they were not as selfish as they have been painted by the Mahāyāna writers. What the Mahāyānists consider selfishness on the part of the Hīnayānists is that the latter before they think themselves capable of guiding others to salvation confine themselves in their own cells and strive for their own salvation. It is after they attain true knowledge that they look upon themselves as fit to help others in the attainment of the same. But when they are undergoing the course of training i.e., before reaching the arhathood they visit the householders and preach to them the elementary principles of Buddhism; and the more advanced among them often take antevasins (disciples) to train them up in the higher principles of the religion. The lives of Sāriputta, Moggallana, Kaccayana, Mahakassapa, and others amply show their pararthatva, (i.e., service for others) after their attainment of the arhathood. In the Lohicca sutta it is stated that the truth must be preached; otherwise it would be like a king enjoying the whole revenue of the State himself. 3 The Sūtrālankāra does not miss this point even in its effort to prove the selfishness of the Hinavanists. It says that the Sravakas do not teach their followers to serve others (parartha); they teach only how to attain for oneself nirvid (disgust for worldly matters), virāga (non-attachment) and vimukti (emancipation). It concludes by saying that the doctrine which teaches selfishness cannot become parartha by reason of being preached to others because it engages others to svārtha, their own parinirvāna. Hence it is a yāna of selfishness.4

¹ Dh. P., 354. ² Digha, II, p. 45; Vinaya, 1, pp. 20, 21.

⁸ Digha, I, p. 229.

⁴ Sūtrā., p. 4: na ca svārtha eva paresūpadišyamānatah parārtho bhavitum arhati.

ii. Upadeśa and iii. Prayoga

It follows as a matter of course that the *Upadeśa* (instruction) and *Prayoga* (exertion) should be in accordance with the Āśaya.¹ A Hīnayānist need not develop bodhicitta and try to perform the pārāmitās. He need not like a bodhisattva take the vow that he would welcome the sufferings of numberless births in hell or in the Yamaloka as an animal, or as an insect, in order to lead every individual to nirupadhiśeṣanirvāṇadhātu (nirvāṇa without any corporal residue).² The regulation of life according to the rules of the *Prātimokṣa*, the performance of the duties of the eightfold path, and the realisation of the four truths and the law of causation are sufficient for them. The comprehension of the world as void of individuality or anything belonging to an individual serves their purpose, and they need not go on to ascertain the nature of śūnyatā, the ultimate reality.

iv. UPASTAMBHA

It is essential that in order to be a bodhisattva one must earn sufficient merits in previous lives. Unless and until these merits reach the high standard fixed by the Mahāyānists there is no possibility for a being to become a bodhisattva, or derive the real benefits from the Mahāyāna teachings. The Hīnayānists hold quite a different view. According to the Puggala Paññatti, the perpetrators of the five deadly sins (ānantarikas) are excluded from the possibility of attaining emancipation, while all the rest can attain it, some requiring a little longer time than the others. Hence no upastambha is demanded in the code of Hīnayāna salvation: every one, other than the above men-

¹ Sikṣā., p. 4: those who have pure adhyāsayas practise the pāramitās: those who practise the pāramitās are established in Mahāyāna.

² Pañca., leaf 81b.

³ There are, however, stray instances of even the perpetrators of one of the five deadly sins attaining emancipation. Contrast Divyā., p. 261: a Hīnayānist refused ordination to a patricide, who was, however, ordained by a bodhisattvajātika bhikṣu. Sīkṣā., pp. 17-8: none of the five sinners can develop a citta for śrāvakabodhi or pratyekabodhi.

tioned five kinds of sinners, is eligible for the same. The Hīnayānists achieve their end by detachment from worldly activities, while the Mahāyānists do the same through such activities, of course, keeping their minds completely unattached to things of the world.

v. Kāla

As the Upastambha does not count much with the Hīnayānists, and as their āśaya is simply the attainment of emancipation without the extraordinary powers of a Buddha, the time $(k\bar{a}la)$, required by a Hīnayānist to reach his goal is infinitely shorter than that of a bodhisattva. The $S\bar{u}tr\bar{a}la\dot{n}k\bar{a}ra$ hints that a Hīnayānist can even attain the goal in three lives. It refers to the Hīnayāna belief that through seven births one can reach the goal, five of them taking place in the Srotāpanna stage. The $S\bar{u}tr\bar{a}la\dot{n}k\bar{a}ra$ in calculating the rebirths leaves out of consideration the first four births preparatory to the final srotāpanna stage. This mode of calculation is also sometimes followed by the Hīnayānists themselves.

PRATYEKABUDDHAS DISTINGUISHED FROM ŚRĀVAKAS AND SAMYAKSAMBUDDHAS

Though the Pratyekabuddhas have always been classed with the Śrāvakas as of lower aims (hīnādhimukta) they were distinguished from the latter as Madhyas.⁴ The Mahāyānists were the Uttamas or Śresihas. The Punḍarīka shows their relative position thus: The Śrāvakas are those who follow what is taught by others (paraghoṣāśravānugama), exert themselves to comprehend the four truths and attain parinirvāṇa for themselves. The Pratyekabuddhas are those who desire to have self-control, quietude, and

¹ See Kośa, III, 93d-94a: Buddhattva is attained in 3 Asankheyya, kalpas; see also p. 191.

² See ch. IV for details.

³ Sūtro., p. 4; Comp. of Phil., Intro., p. 68.

⁴ Sūtrā., pp. 4, 168; Sad. P., p 140, see supra, p. 76 fn. For notes on Prādešika, see Kośa, IV, p. 81 and IV, 36 a-b, p. 93; III, p. 155 fn.; Sīkṣā., p. 183.

knowledge without the help of a teacher (anācāryakam) and seek their own parinirvana after comprehending the hetu and pratyaya, i.e., the theory of causation. The Mahayanists are those who strive to acquire the omniscience possessed by a Buddha without the help of a teacher and seek the powers of a Tathagata in order to help all the beings of the world to attain salvation. The Daśabhūmikasūtra goes a little more into detail and distinguishes them as follows: The Śrāvakas are those who by their prajña have acquired mastery (paribhāvyamāna) over the ten kuśalakarmapathas (ten good actions), possess a citta (mental capacity) to comprehend only an aspect of the Truth, are terrified by existence in the three dhatus (worlds) and depend on others for instructions, but in them mahākaruṇā (compassion) does not function. buddhas are those who are still more purified, obtain insight into the Truth without others' help, and can comprehend thoroughly the theory of causation, but in them also mahākarunā (compassion) does not function. The Mahāyanists or Bodhisattvas are those who are further purified, have mastered the upāyakauśalyas (expedients), made the mahāpranidhāna (the sublime resolution), given up all their inborn passions, taken the Buddhajñāna as their ālambana (support), perfected themselves in the bhumis and paramitas and attained all the ten balas and other powers appertaining to Buddhahood, and in them mahākaruṇā (compassion) functions in the fullest degree.2 The Madhyamakavatara and other Mahāyāna treatises draw the lines of distinction between the Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, and Bodhisattvas almost in the same way as above.3 The difference between the Śrāvakas and the Pratyekabuddhas on account of the latter's comprehension of the theory of causation, as pointed out by Prof. L. de la Vallée Poussin, is more scholastic than real, for it is nothing but a part of the second truth, viz., duhkhasamudaya. The Abhidharmakośavyākhyā brings out the distinctions in a somewhat different way. Prof. Poussin has

² Daśa., pp. 25-6.

³ M. Ava. (Fr. transl.) in Le Muséon, (N.S.) VIII, pp. 252 ff. For an exhaustive bibliography, see E.R.E., X, p. 154.

summarised it thus: "The Arhat, having expelled self-love from the series of samskaras that constitute their pseudoindividuality, develops an interest in the affairs of others, an interest born of compassion, and that destroys all pain. The ordinary man (madhya), i.e., the Pratyekabuddha, desires mere deliverance, that is to say, an end of suffering, and not happiness during the existences of the samsāra, because this temporal happiness is an abode of suffering. The superior man (śrestha), i.e., the Bodhisattva, wishes to bring temporal happiness (abhyudayika) to others and also the end of suffering, which is supreme happiness (nihśreyasa-svabhāva); or he desires for others' supreme and temporal happiness (sukham ābhyudayika-naihśreyasikam), and for himself the end of suffering, i.e., Buddhahood as a means of realizing this service to others".1 The Abhidharmakośa says in connection with the power of knowing the thoughts of others (paracittajñāna) that a Śrāvaka obtains ordinarily the power of knowing others' thoughts when they are in the first two moments of the darśanamārga only (i.e., duhkhe dharmajñānaksānti and duhkhe dharmajñāna), while the Pratyekabuddha knows in addition the eighth moment, viz., samudaye anvayajñāna.2 The Pratyekahuddha may possess one or two powers of a like nature ore than a Śrāvaka, but the summum bonum of both is the same, and that is the reason why both are placed by the Mahāyānists in the same category, viz., Hīnayāna, the former being only distinguished as a Hīnayāna Madhya. Prof. Poussin in his article on the Pratyekabuddha³ has accounted for the reason why the Pratyekabuddhas have come to figure in the Buddhist literature. He says that

¹ E.R.E., II, p. 740 sv. Bodhisattva (summarised from Kośa-vyākhyā (ASB ms.), fol. 263.

² Kośa, vii, 6 and fn. It also says something in connection with garbhāvakrānti about the comparative merits of a Paccekabuddha and Buddha; see Kośa, III, 17.

³ E.R.E., X, pp. 152-4. See Divyā., p. 399. Pindola Bharadvāja had seen Buddha. He became a Pratyekabuddha and had been living at Gandhamādana; Divyā., p. 416: Jinas and Pratyekabuddhas camot get rid of karma effects; Divyā., pp. 500, 503: Pratyekabuddhas lived in a forest.

Buddha himself did not like very much the solitary life of hermit-saints, of whom there were many during his time, but he recognised the fact that those hermit-saints possessed all the qualities of an arhat, if not more. To assimilate these saints into the Buddhist community, to accord them a place in the Buddhist spiritual world, the conception of Pratvekabuddhas was introduced into the Buddhist literature. They were believed to be converted Buddhists who could not attain arhatship when the religion was living; so they continued to progress in their holiness and wisdom and as a result they discovered the Truth by their own exertion as Śākyamuni did.1 On account of their lonely life, never having any teacher or spiritual guide (kalyāṇamitra), and disliking contact with the people of the world. they were unable to develop the power of preaching possessed to some extent even by the arhats.

The conception of the Paccekabuddha has come to figure more in the later Pāli literature than in the Nikāyas. The Milindapañha² compares the powers of a Paccekabuddha with those of a Buddha and an Arhat, and shows as above how a Paccekabuddha occupies a position midway between the two. The Majjhima Nikāya and the Lalitavistara refer to them more as hermits outside the Buddhist order than as occupying a stage of perfection midway between an Arhat and a Buddha.³ The Puggala-Paññatti⁴ points out that both the Paccekabuddhas and Sammāsambuddhas realise the truth without receiving instruction from any body but the former do not attain omniscience and mastery over phalas.⁵ The

¹ E.R.E., X, p. 152.

Cf. M. Sāstra., xviii, 12; M. Vr., p. 378;

Sambuddhānām anutpāde śrāvakāṇām punaḥ kṣaye, Jñānam pratyekabuddhānām asaṃsargāt pravartate. see also Madhyamakāvatāra in Le Muséon, (N.S.) VIII, p. 253.

² Mil., p. 106.

³ Majjhima, III, p. 86; Lal. Vis. (R. L. Mitra), p. 20; see also Samyutta, I, p. 92; Udāna, 50.

⁴ Pug. P., pp. 14, 73.

⁵ Contrast Pug. P., p. 70 where Sāriputta, Moggallāna and other Arhats are also said to have realised the truth not heard of before and put an end to their sufferings by realising the dhamma.

Hīnayānists do not dispute the fact that Buddha possessed powers much greater than those of an Arhat or a Pratyekabuddha,¹ but as according to them it is only in many kalpas² that a being attains to Buddhahood, the consideration of Buddha's powers or the possibility of attainment of same does not interest them much. The Milindapañha, however, has described in terms identical with those of the Mahāyāna scriptures the extraordinary powers possessed by a Buddha, but it has in view Buddha Śākyamuni and the few other Buddhas conceived by the Hīnayānists, and not the countless Buddhas of the Mahāyānists.

GOTRABHEDA, THE MAIN REASON FOR PERSONS HAVING DIFFERENT ASPIRATIONS

The Sūtrālankāra 3 answers the query why among the disciples of Buddha there are persons with high, medium, or low aspirations. This question reduces itself into a discussion of the subject of gotrabheda, difference in classes, and the examination of the statement found in the Akṣarāśisūtra 4 that on account of the various ingredients (dhātu) constituting beings they have endless distinctions of dhatus (qualities). It divides them into three classes, viz., Niyatagotras, Aniyata-gotras, and Agotras. Under the first heading fall all those who by virtue of their previous merits or innate dispositions are destined to become either Śrāvakayānābhisamayagotra, Pratyekabuddhayānābhisamayagotra or Tathagatayanabhisamayagotra. Under the second heading come all those who are still on the border-line and may become either Hīnayānists or Mahāyānists. Under the third heading fall all other beings, who are again grouped into two sub-classes namely, (i) those who will not be able to

¹ See, e.g., Saṃyutta, III, pp. 65-6; Niddesa, I, pp. 177-180; Paṭi.

S., II, p. 31.
2 Dīgha, II, p. 139; but see also Dīgha, II, p. 2: 91 kalpas ago Vipassi was Buddha, 31 kalpas ago Sikhi was Buddha, in the same kalpa Vessabhu was Buddha. In this bhadrakalpa there have been four Buddhas, Kakusandha, Konāgamana, Kassapa, and Sākyamuni.

³ Sutra., ch. III; cf. Bodhic., p. 14; Mvyut., 81,

⁴ Ibid., p. 10 fn.; see also ante.

attain parinirvana at all (atyantam), and (ii) those who for the time being (tatkāla) will not attain parinirvāņa. Among the Niyatagotrasthas, it is the dhatus (qualities) which settle one's adhimukti (aspiration), while adhimukti determines the pratipatti (attainments) and it is according to one's bija (seed) that the fruitions become hina (low), madhya (medium), or visista (excellent). The Śrāvakas are inferior to the Bodhisattvas because the former possess neither powerful merits nor merits of all kinds (or degrees) as they lack the five balas (powers), and the six vaisaradyas (selfconfidence born of the highest knowledge, etc.). Moreover, their merits are not everlasting, because they seek only anupādišesa-nirvāņa (i.e., Nirvāņa without any corporal residue); neither are the merits productive of great results, as the Srāvakas do not dedicate themselves wholly to the service of others (apararthatvat).

The Lankavatara 2 also incidentally deals with the gotras, saying that there are five abhisamaya-gotras (i.e., classification of persons with reference to the attainment of enlightenment), viz., Śrāvakayānābhisamayagotra, Pratyekabuddhāyā°; Tathāgatayā°, 3 Aniyatagotra, and Agotra. The Śrāvakayānābhisamayagotras are those who are enraptured by the teaching of the generic properties of the various constituents of the body (skandhadhātvāyatanasvasāmānyalakṣaṇa) and who acquire an insight into the properties of things associated with the causal law (pratītyasamutpādavinirbhāgalakṣaṇaparicaye). Being in the fifth or sixth bhumi (stage of progress), they are free from all forthcoming afflictions, but not vāsanā-kleśa (sufferings due to impressions4). They reach a stage from which there is no fall, and by virtue of same they proclaim that they have led the holy life of a saint, realised the egolessness of individuals, attained Nirvana, and

¹ See Prof. Lévi's notes on these words in his translation of the Sūtrā., pp. 26, 27 fn.

² Lankā., pp. 63-65.

³ These three are called Niyata-gotras. See above.

⁴ Vāsanā = "the impression unconsciously left on the mind by past good or bad actions, which therefore produce pleasure or pain." Apte's Dict.

are no longer subject to rebirths. The author of the $Lankar{a}$ vatāra makes a digression here and says that some of these Śrāvakas think that they have attained Nirvana by realising the egolessness of individuals, and some think that they have attained it by comprehending the causal relation of things, but in fact, there is no real Nirvana without the realisation of the essencelessness of all things (dharmanairātmya). They consider to be an exit (niryāṇa) that which is not really so and hence they hold only one of the many wrong views. The Pratyekabuddhayānābhisamayagotras are those who are enraptured by the hearing of discourses relating to the enlightenment of particular individuals, do not like others' company, and are impressed much by miracles. The Tathagatayanabhisamayagotras, according to the Lankavatāra, are of three kinds, (i) those who realise the essencelessness of all the so-called existent things, (ii) those who hold that the realisation of the truth can happen only within one's own self, and (iii) those who realise the greatness of all Buddha-ksetras.

The Aniyatagotras are those who take to one of the three gotras mentioned above when they are explained to them. They are really in a preparatory stage. When the Alayavijnāna of theirs is purged of all klesas and vāsanās, they become either Śrāvakas or Bodhisattvas after enjoying the bliss of meditation as the result of the realisation of the essencelessness of things. The Hinayanists recognize these classifications but in quite a different sense. The Puggala Paññatti as well as the Kośa mentions Niyata- and Aniyatapuggalas, but according to them the Niyatas are either those who on account of the commission of five deadly sins are destined to have wrong views or are those who are ariyapuggalas, i.e., are in one of the eight stages of sanctification and are destined to attain Nirvāna while all the rest are The term Aniyatas, i.e., their careers are yet unsettled.1 Gotrabhū occupies an important place in the Hīnayāna scheme of salvation. It signifies a person who for the first time steps into the path of Nirvana after separating himself

¹ Pug. Pañ., p. 13; Kośa, III, 44c, pp. 137-8.

from the average mass (puthujjana).1 It is after a course of spiritual training that a person becomes a gotrabhū who after a "single moment of path-consciousness" discerns the first of the four truths, removes his doubts and errors, obtains an intuition into Nirvana, and commences the performance of the duties of the eightfold path. He becomes an ariya and is fit for passing to the highest state of ariyapuggalas. It is in this sense that the Satasāhasrikā 2 also uses the term gotrabhūrastamaka while mentioning the various stages, in which the beings, destined to attain perfection, remain.

HĪNAYĀNISM CRITICIZED BY THE MAHĀYĀNISTS

It is now evident that the Mahāyānists hold the same view of the Hinavana as the Hinavanists did of the religious and philosophical beliefs of the preceding Brahmavadins or Sāśvatavādins. In the Brahmajāla sutta it is stated that some people became Brahmavādins or Śāśvatavādins not on account of any particular views but on account of their incapacity to think of anything higher than the Brahmaloka or seeing beyond a few thousands of births. It was Buddha who crossed this limit, and found out their shortcomings.3 It is apparent that there has been a continuous development of thought, and the neo-thinkers, the Mahāyānists, read all the statements attributed to Buddha in a new light. Once a higher plane of thought is reached, every statement naturally comes to be interpreted from that higher plane. The Mahāyānists pity the Hīnayānists for their misconceptions in the same way as the latter have pitied the Brahmavādins or Šāśvatavādins. According to the Hīnavānists. Nirvāna marked a state superior to that of Brahma while according to the Mahāyānists, Nirvāna is only a temporary test, and the real Nirvana is much higher than the state conceived by the Hinayanists. So the Hinayanists

¹ Comp. of Phil., pp. 68, 129 fn.; Majjhima, III, p. 256; Anguttara, IV, p. 373, V, p. 23; Vis. M., p. 138.

² S'ata., p. 1263.

⁸ Dīgha, I, pp. 12 ff.; II, p. 251.

⁴ See Digha, I, p. 223.

have come now to be looked upon with commiseration by the Mahāyānists for their poor conceptions and ideals. From the latter's standpoint they are like so many young boys playing with toys, not possessing the capacity to understand the reality. The Kāśyapa Parivarta 1 says that just as the sons of the chief queen by a poor man are not recognised as princes, while the sons of the king whether by the chief queen or a maid are recognised as such, so the Hinayanists may be an outcome of the same dharmadhatu2 as the Mahāyānists, but cannot therefore be recognised as the sons of Buddha, just as the chief queen's sons by a poor man are not recognised as princes. The Prajñāpāramitās harp on the theme that the prajna (knowledge) of one who has perfected himself in the prajnaparamita cannot bear comparison with the prajñā of the best Śrāvakas. The Lalitavistara,3 the Kāśyapa Parivarta,4 and other works are emphatic in their declaration that the bodhisattva must develop aspṛhā (non-desire) for Hīnayāna. The Bodhicaryāvatāra 5 thinks that all the merits of Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas cannot equal the merits of a bodhisattva who has developed bodhicitta, while the Śikṣāsamuccaya 6 considers it a mülapatti (serious offence) for a bodhisattva either to associate with a Śrāvaka, for this would make him dull of intellect, or to preach Mahayana to one whose kuśalamūlas are not enough to make him take to Mahāyāna teaching,7 and it would be a deadly sin for the bodhisattva to develop a citta for Śrāvaka- or Pratyekabuddha-bhūmi.8 The Gandavyūha9 gives a long list of their imperfections as compared with a bodhisattva, and shows the former's

1 Kāś. P., p. 116 (80).

² Cf. Sūtrū., p. 68: dharmadhāturabhinnatvāt, see supra.

⁴ Kāś. P., pp. 50, 115. 8 Lal. Vis., p. 34. 6 Siksā., pp. 54, 59. 5 Bodhic., pp. 18, 48.

It cites the Ratnakūtasūtras, Sarvadharma-7 Bodhic., pp. 146, 147. vaipulyasangrahasūtra, and Akāśagarbhasūtra in support of the contention that the higher teaching (Mahāyāna) should not be imparted to a man of lower capabilities, and the lower teaching (Hīnayāna) to a man of higher capabilities.

⁸ Siksā., p. 17, 50.

⁹ Gandavyūha (A.S.B. ms.), leaf. 9b

inability to visualize actions (vikurvita) of Buddha at Jetavana. The reasons adduced are that the knowledge of Buddha is beyond the reach of Śrāvakas, their jñānacakṣu (eye of knowledge) is not so powerful as to see the actions of Buddha, and so forth. The $Prajñāpāramitās^1$ and the Śikṣāsamuccaya² regard the Śrāvakas as pāpamitras (evil friends) as opposed to kalyāṇamitras (true friends) of the bodhisattvas, for the former persuade the latter to leave the Mahāyāna path of salvation as very arduous, impracticable, requiring too long a time, and to take to their path of salvation as practical, better, and requiring a much shorter period. The Punḍarīka³ calls the Hīnayānists abhimāṇikas (conceited) because they do not believe its statements.

Though there is an attempt to decry Hinayanism in almost all the Mahāvāna works, they cannot afford to deny the Hinayanists credit for some advance in the path of sanctification, specially for moral progress. According to the Pundarīka 4 there are in each Buddha-ksetra innumerable Srāvakas, who are all endowed with energy (vīrya) and are like jewels without any flaw in the observance of the silas. The disparagement of the dharma of the Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas is considered one of the mulapattis for a bodhisattva 5. The Śikṣāsamuccaya 6 and the Bodhicaryāvatāra 7 enjoin upon bodhisattvas that they should show equal respect to both Śrāvakayāna and Mahāyāna. The Bodhisattvabhūmi 8 considers it an offence if a bodhisattva thinks that he should not listen to, learn, or practise the dharmas which are connected with Śrāvakayāna. It is not an unusual occurrence for bodhisattvas to approach Śrāvakas 9 to hear religious

¹ Sata., pp. 1185f.; Kaś. P., p. 50.

² S'ikṣā., p. 54.

³ Sad. P., p. 43.

⁴ Ibid., p. 24; see also pp. 282, 285, 302.

⁵ Sīksā., pp. 54, 59; Bodhic., pp. 146, 147.

⁶ S'ikṣā., p. 92; Bodhic., p. 146. See also Prof. La Vallée Poussin's Notes sur le grand véhicule in the Revue de l'histoire des religions, 1909.

⁷ Bodhic., p. 146.

⁸ See Revue de l'histoire des religions, 1909, p. 3.

⁹ In the *Gandavyūha* it is stated that Sudhanu approached many Śrāvakas for learning the duties of a bodhisattva.

discourses, and it is striking that Subhūti undertakes the rôle of giving an exposition of the Śūnyatā philosophy in the Prajñāparamitās. Thus it is evident that in the early stages of Mahayana, Śravakas were treated with reverence; this is also apparent from the formula of salutation which appears at the commencement of the early Mahāyāna works, in which among Buddhas and Bodhisattvas, Śrāvakas are also mentioned. In some of the later Mahāyāna treatises, the formula has been shortened, e.g., the formula of the $\dot{S}atas\bar{a}hasrik\bar{a}$, the Saddharmapundarika, and the Lalitavistara, which runs as "Namaḥ sarvatathāgatapratyekabuddhāryaśrāvakebhyo, etc.", is shortened in the Śikṣāsamuccaya, Sūtrālankāra, and the Mahāvyutpatti into "Namah sarvabuddhabodhisattvebhyah". It is clearly seen in the Mahāyāna works that the progress of Sravakas in the path of perfection is recognised by them: their moral life is also admired. It was their ideal and their less metaphysical conception of things that failed to win the approval of the Mahāyānists, and consequently their codes of ethics and philosophical views were regarded by the latter as inadequate and superficial.

CHAPTER III

The Doctrines of Hinayana and Mahayana Compared:

(a). Preliminary

Hīnayāna doctrines evaluated in the early Mahāyāna scriptures

In the course of our examination of the attitude of the Mahāvānists towards the Hīnavānists we have found that the former have utilized the doctrines of the latter but have shown that these in their opinion are only an imperfect exposition of the Truth which Buddha had in his mind. The Prajñāpāramitās mention the doctrines, which loom large in the eyes of the Hīnayānists, e.g., the Caturāryasatyas, the Pratītya-samutpāda, the Bodhipaksika-dharmas, the four phalas, the minute divisions and sub-divisions of dhātus, citta and caittas, in order to show from the standpoint of sunyata, that the doctrines, which engaged the attention of the Hinayanists so seriously and for the analysis of which they had taken so much pains, were of little consequence, as the view taken by them of the Truth was only a partial one (sāmvrta) and would not carry them to the goal, or help them in realising the ultimate (paramartha) truth. The Saddharma-Pundarika, which regarded Hinayana as a stepping stone to Mahāyāna, did not reject the Hīnavana doctrines as altogether useless. It showed that the Hīnayāna doctrines had a value of their own. Though they might not have helped the realisation of the ultimate truth, yet they could carry their followers to a stage from which it would not be difficult for them to reach the state of perfection the Mahāyānists had in view. It also claimed that the Hinayana doctrines were preached by Buddha as much as the Mahāyāna doctrines but that the former were only an upaya (expedient) adopted by him to meet the weak intelligence of his early disciples. The Pundarika1

¹ Sad. P., pp. 89-92.

cites in this connection a remark attributed to Buddha: am the great ascetic (rsi) and father of all beings who are born in the three dhātus (i.e., Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa) and cling to desires (kāma). The three dhātus are dreadful, full of hundreds of sufferings; there are burning in them incessantly the fires of birth, old age, and disease. I have come out of these three dhatus and am living alone peacefully in open air, but as these fires are burning my ignorant sons, they are affecting me as well. I know the dangers (ādīnava) and I know the way out, but these ignorant persons will not hear my excellent admonitions. So I have to take recourse to the expedient of showing them only the path of escaping from the miseries of the three dhatus. To those of them, who have taken refuge in me and have acquired the six abhijnas (higher knowledge) and the three vidyās, or to those, who have become Pratyekabuddhas or never-to-turn-back (avaivartika) Bodhisattvas, I now say that they should take to the Buddhayana and become Jinas. I tell them of the excellent knowledge of the Buddhas, their powers (bala), trances (dhyāna), higher trances (vimokṣa) and contemplations (samādhi). To the Śrāvakas who have attained what they call Nirvana, I say that they are all my sons and I am their father. I have brought them out of their sufferings (duhkha) which were consuming them for innumerable kalpas. I call this state of theirs also Nirvrti but they have not yet attained the Nirvrti in its fullness. They have freed themselves from the sufferings of transmigration; now they should seek for the yana leading to Buddhahood."

The Bodhisattvas are asked by the Teacher to observe the rules of conduct leading to Buddhahood while those who have low desires are asked by him to realise the four aryasatyas. Those who are not conscious of the sufferings (duḥkha) or their causes are apprised of the fact that tṛṣṇā

¹ The three Vidyās, in the enumeration, refer to three of the six Abhijūās, viz., Pubbenivāsānussati-ñāṇam, Sattānam cutūpapāte ñāṇam, and Āsavānam khaye ñāṇam. See Dīgha, III, p. 220. The remaining three Abhijūās are Dibbasota, Dibbacakkhu and Paracittavijānanam.

(desire) is the cause of all sufferings (duḥkha-samudaya). To get rid of tṛṣṇā, the third and fourth truths, nirodha-satya and mārga are explained to them. But in fact those who have reached the end of the mārga are not completely liberated (anirvṛta), and so they cannot be considered to have attained emancipation (mokṣa), which one cannot reach unless and until he possesses agrabodhi.

To show more clearly the relation between the Mahāyāna and the Hinayana doctrines, the Pundarika introduces one of the frequently used similes of the Buddhist literature,1 viz., that of the man born blind. A man born blind does not believe in the existence of the sun and the moon, or of such other objects, even if he is told of their existence. A physician, who can cure all kinds of diseases, finds out that the man's blindness is due to his past evil deeds. He knows that all diseases are due to the abnormal state of any of the three humours, viz., wind (vāta), bile (pitta), phlegm (ślesman) or their complicated derangements (sāmnipātika). He thinks of the remedy and finds that the special medicines required for the malady are available only in the Himalayas. Out of compassion for the blind man he procures the medicines and by their application cures him of his blindness. The man now realises his foolishness for not having believed in the existence of the sun, moon, and stars, and is possessed by the idea that he can see all that is to be seen and all that others can see. He is told by some rsis who are possessed of the five kinds of superior knowledge (abhijñā), that his pride is baseless, because he has no prajñā and is therefore not a wise man (pandita), for he is not able to see what is behind the wall, or know the minds of others, or hear what is being said at a distance of five yojanas, and so forth. On enquiring how he is to attain them, he is advised to live in a forest or a cave, meditate on the dharma and get rid of passions (kleśas). He accordingly retires from the world, lives in a forest and attains those five abhijnas. In the light of his new acquirements, he realises how small in comparison were his previous powers.

¹ Cf. Mil., pp. 134, 135.

The simile is then explained as follows: the blind men represent the beings who are in one of the six forms of existence (sadgatyupapanna) and ignorant of the true doctrines. They have been blinded by avidya (ignorance of the Truth), from which have followed the samskaras (impressions), then namarupa (name and form) and ultimately the duḥkhaskandha (sufferings). The Tathāgata who has escaped from the three dhatus reappears there out of fatherly love (maitrī) and compassion (karuṇā). He sees the beings passing through the cycles of existence unaware of the means of escape. Through his extraordinary power of perception he ascertains that there are beings, of whom some have little hatred but strong attachment (mandadvesa tīvrarāga), some little attachment but strong hatred (mandarāga tīvradvesa), while others are wise (pandita) or unwise (alpaprajña), pure (paripākaśuddha), or have wrong views (mithyadrsti). He accordingly imparts his teaching in various ways suited to the mentality of each. The rsis possessed of the five abhijñās are the Bodhisattvas who have developed Bodhicitta and who after attaining anutpattikadharmakṣānti (belief in the non-origination of things) 1 will become Buddhas. The physician is the Tathagata. The humours wind (vāta), bile (pitta), and phlegm (slesman) are attachment (raga), hatred (dvesa), and delusion (moha), and the four medicines are the meditations of Śūnyatā (essencelessness), Animittata (non-contamination by objects of perception), Apranihitatā (freedom from desire for perceived objects), and the attainment of nirvanadvara. As by the application of medicines the diseases disappear, so by the meditations of Śūnyatā, Animitta, and Apranihita, the Avidva and the sufferings gradually disappear and the mind no longer clings to any idea of good or evil actions.

The Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas are compared to the blind men after the recovery of their eyesight. They have cut asunder the ties of saṃsāra (world), freed themselves from kleśas (passions, errors, etc.) and passed out of the three dhātus. They think that by reaching Nirvāṇa they

¹ See, for explanation, Sikṣā., p. 212; Kośa, I, 6, 39; II, 53, 250 266; Dh. S., p. 63.

have attained all there is to be attained. The Tathāgata then teaches them that it is by the realisation of the sameness (samatā) of all dharmas that they can truly attain Nirvāṇa. They are made to develop Bodhicitta and realise that they are neither in Saṃsāra nor in Nirvāṇa. They now comprehend that all the three dhātus of each of the ten directions are essenceless (śūnya) like images in dreams. They see all dharmas as having neither origin (anutpannā) nor destruction (aniruddhā), they are neither unfettered (abaddhā) nor fettered (amuktā), neither dark (anandhakārā) nor luminous (atamā). They, who thus realise the dharma which pervades all the three dhātus, can see what is not ordinarily visible.¹

FUNDAMENTAL POINTS OF DIFFERENCE

The Saddharma-Pundarīka, in this manner, clearly brings out the fundamental points of difference between the doctrines of Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna. It shows:—

- (1) That Buddha resides aloof from the three dhātus, though he appears in them out of compassion for the innumerable beings who suffer on account of their ignorance of the Truth;
- (2) That the Nirvāṇa of Śrāvakas is only a place of rest where there is no misery, but it is not the real and final rest, and that Śrāvakas after attaining their Nirvāṇa have still to undergo a course of training to enable them to reach the only real and final state, Buddhahood; and
- (3) That the mental capacities of beings vary; so for a certain class of beings (i.e., Śrāvakas), the four Truths and the Law of Causation were preached in order to lead them out of the three dhātus, Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa.

These three points require separate treatment, for the first refers to the Trikāya conception of the Mahāyānists, the second to the conception of Nirvāṇa as held by Śrāvakas and Bodhisattvas, and the third to the conventional and transcendental truths in Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna.

¹ Sad. P., pp. 133-7.

(b). The Doctrine of Kāya

The first point of difference between the Hinayāna and Mahāyāna schools noticed by the Saddharma-Pundarīka, viz., that Buddha makes a show of his existence in the three dhātus leads us to an examination of the question of the Kāyas of Buddha as conceived by the Hīnayānists and the Kāyas of Buddha as conceived by the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists. Of the Hīnayāna schools, the Sthaviravādins had very little to do with the kāya conceptions, as Buddha was to them an actual man living in this world like any other human being and subject to all the frailties of a mortal body. Metaphorically they sometimes spoke of Buddha as identical with Dhamma without any metaphysical implication but these remarks gave opportunity to the Sarvāstivādins and the Mahāyānists to put forth their theories of Dharmakāya.

The Sarvāstivādins commenced speculating on the kāya of Buddha, but it was the school of the Mahāsānghikas that took up the question of kāya in right earnest and paved the way for the speculations of the Mahāyānists.

The early Mahāyānists, whose doctrines are mostly to be found in the Astasāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, along with the school of Nāgārjuna conceived of two kāyas: (i) Rūpa- (or Nirmāṇa-) kāya, which included bodies, gross and subtle, meant for beings in general, and (ii) Dharmakāya, which was used in two senses, one being the body of Dharma, (i.e., collection of practices) which makes a being a Buddha, and the other the metaphysical principle underlying the universe—the Reality (Tathatā).

The Yogācāra school distinguished the gross rūpakāya from the subtle rūpakāya, calling the former Rūpa- or Nirmāṇa-kāya and the latter Sambhogakāya. The Lankāvatāra, representing the earliest stage of the Yogācāra conception, calls the Sambhoga-kāya Nisyanda-buddha or Dharmatānisyanda-buddha (the Buddha produced by the Dharmas). The Sūtrālankāra¹ uses the term Sambhogakāya for Nisyanda-

¹ Sūtrā., pp. 45, 188.

buddha and Svābhāvikakāya for Dharmakāya. In the Abhisamayālankārakārikā and the recast version of the Pañcaviṃśati-sāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, Sambhogakāya denotes the subtle body which the Buddhas adopted for preaching their doctrines to Bodhisattvas, and Dharmakāya, the body purified by the practice of the bodhipakṣika and other dharmas which constitute a Buddha. For the metaphysical Dharmakāya they use the term Svabhāva- or Svābhāvika-kāya. The Vijňaptimātratāsiddhi retains the conception of the Kārikā but adopts a new term, Svasambhoga-kāya, to denote the Dharmakāya of the Kārikā and distinguishes the Sambhogakāya by calling it Parasambhoga-kāya.

REALISTIC CONCEPTION OF BUDDHA IN THE NIKAYAS

In a land where the tendency to deify saints is so strong, it is greatly to the credit of the early Hīnayānists that they were able to retain the human conception of Buddha even a century or two after his actual existence, when the scriptures may be regarded as having been put into a definite shape. They gave expression to their conception of Buddha in the following words:

Bhagavā araham sammāsambuddho vijjācaranasampanno sugato lokavidū anuttaro purisadammasārathi satthā devamanussānam buddho bhagavā. So imam lokam sadevakam samārakam sabrahmakam sassamanabrāhmanim pajam sadevamanussam sayam abhiññā sacchikatvā pavedeti. So dhammam deseti ādikalyānam, etc.

(The Blessed One is an arhat, a fully awakened one, endowed with knowledge and good conduct, happy, a knower of the world, unsurpassed, a leader able to control men, a teacher of men and gods, the awakened, the blessed. He knows thoroughly the worlds of gods, māras, recluses, brahmins and men, and having known them he makes his knowledge known to others. He preaches the dhamma (doctrines), which is excellent in the beginning, middle and end, etc.).¹

¹ This passage occurs in many places of the Nikāyas, see, e.g., Digha, I, pp. 87-88; cf. Lal. Vis., p. 3; Sad. P., pp. 144, 376.

A description like this does not suggest that Buddha was originally more than a man, a mortal. In the cosmology of the Buddhists, the gods of the various heavens, the highest of which is Brahmaloka,1 are only beings of superior merit and power, but they are inferior, in the matter of spiritual attainments, to the saints or arhats. So in this description, the Hinayanists do not attribute any transcendental or theistic element to Buddha. All they say is that Śakyamuni, by pure and simple spiritual culture in this life and as a result of the accumulated merits of his previous lives, reached the highest stage of perfection and attained not only knowledge and power superior to any man or god but also the highest knowledge and power attainable. Majjhima Nikāya, Ānanda explains why Buddha should be considered superior to the Arhats as well, although both arrived at the same goal. He says that there is not a single bhikkhu who can be regarded as endowed with all the qualities in all their forms as possessed by Buddha. Moreover, a Buddha is the originator of the path not existing before, a knower and promulgator of the marga, which is only followed by the savakas.2

NIKAYA PASSAGES ADMITTING A NON-REALISTIC CONCEPTION

In the face of such descriptions of Buddha, it would have been difficult for the later Hinayana schools to sublimate the human elements in him, had it not been for certain expressions in some of the earlier works of the Pitaka, which lent themselves to other interpretations. Some of these expressions are:-

(1) Yo vo Ānanda mayā dhammo ca vinayo ca desito

paññatto so vo mam' accayena satthā.

(Buddha said to Ananda just before his parinibbana 'the dhamma and vinaya that have been preached by me will be your teacher after my death.')3

2 Majjhima, III, p. 8.

¹ In the Mahayanic works also, as for instance in the Daśa., it is stated that a Bodhisattva can become a Mahabrahman in the ninth bhūmi if he so wishes.

³ Dīgha, II, p. 154; Mil., p. 99.

The dhamma and vinaya clearly refer to the collection of doctrines and disciplinary rules delivered by Buddha. This is also evident from the conversation of Ananda with Gopaka-Moggallāna, where the former explains why the monks after Buddha's death should not be regarded as without refuge (appatisaraṇa). He says that they have now a refuge in Dhamma (dhammapatisaraṇa), which, he points out, are the doctrines and disciplinary rules.

(2) Bhagavato' mhi putto oraso mukhato jūto dhammajo dhammanimmito dhammadāyādo iti.² Tam kissa hetu? Tathāgatassa h' etam adhivacanam. Dhammakāyo iti pi Brahmakāyo iti pi. Dhammabhūto³ iti pī ti.

Just as a brāhmaṇa would say that he is born of Brahmā, through his mouth—Brahmuno putto oraso mukhato jāto brahmajo brahmanimmito brahmadāyādo—so a Sākyaputtiya-samaṇa may say that he is born of Bhagavā, through his mouth, born of his doctrine, made of his doctrine, etc. Though in this passage Dhamma is equated with Brahmā, the context shows that there is no metaphysical sense in it; it is only to draw a parallel between a brāhmaṇa and a Sākyaputtiya-samaṇa that Dhammakāya is equated with Brahmakāya.

(3) Vakkali on his death-bed became very eager to see Buddha in person; so Bhagavā came to him and said,

"Alam Vakkali kim te pütikāyena ditthena. Yo kho Vakkali dhammam passati so mam passati. Yo mam passati so dhammam passati."

Just after saying this, Buddha referred to his dhamma of impermanence (anicca). There are in the Nikāyas many

¹ Majjhima, Gopaka-Moggallāna Sutta (No. 108). Cf. Saddhamma Sangaha (JPTS., 1890), ch. x, p. 65: Buddha says "84,000 dhamma-kkhandhas have been preached by me in 45 years. I alone only pass away while there are 84,000 dhammakkhandhas which like 84,000 Buddhas (buddha-sadisa) will admonish you."

² Samyutta, II, p. 221; Majjhima, III, p. 29 has the identical passage with the addition "no āmisadāyādo" after "dhammadāyādo." For the interpretation of "dhammadāyādo" see Majjhima, I, pp. 12f.

passages of this import, which may well be taken as precursors of the later Mahāyānic conceptions and probably formed the basis of their speculations. But the passages when read as they stand do not appear to bear any metaphysical sense. In this passage Buddha refers to his body as pūtikāya (body of impure matter), and to lay stress on his doctrines he says that his dhamma should be looked upon with the same awe and reverence by his disciples as they regard his person.¹

(4) The passage in the Anguttara Nikāya,2 where Buddha savs that he is neither a god, nor a gandhabba, nor a man, has been taken by Prof. Masson-Oursel 3 as showing trace of the Mahāyānic kāya conceptions. It is not impossible to read some metaphysical ideas into the passage, though probably the compiler of the Suttas did not mean to convey them. Dona brahmana, noticing the sign of the wheel in the feet of Buddha, enquired of him whether he was a deva, a gandhabba, a yakkha or a mortal. Buddha replied that he was none of these beings as he had got rid of the asavas (impurities) by the continuance of which one remains a deva, gandhabba, yakkha or mortal. Just as a lotus is born in water, grows in it but remains above and is apart from it, so also Buddha was born in the world, grew up in it but overcame it (abhibhuyya) and lived unaffected by the same. Therefore, he asked the brahmana not to regard him as anything but Buddha.

1 Samyutta, III, p. 120; Majjhima, I, pp. 190, 191: Yo paticca-samuppādam passati so dhammam passati yo dhammam passati so paticcasamuppādam passati. For other references, see Prof. Vallée Poussin's article "Notes sur les Corps du Buddha" in Le Muséon, 1913, pp. 259-290. Compare the remarks in the later Pāli works,—

Saddhamma Sangaha (JPTS., 1890), p. 61:

Yo me passati saddhammam so mam passati Vakkali, Apassamāno saddhammam mam passe pi na passati.

Milinda, p. 71: yo dhammam passati so bhagavantam passati, dhammo hi maharāja bhagavatā desito ti.

Ibid., p. 73: Dhammakāyena pana kho mahārāja sakkā bhagavā nidassetum, dhammo hi mahārāja bhagavatā desito ti.

2 Anguttara, II, p. 38.

* Prof. Masson-Oursel in his article "Les trois Corps du Bouddha", J.A., 1913, pp. 581ff. There are other passages referring to the miraculous powers of Buddha, viz., his ability to live a kalpa or to assume different forms and perform such other miracles, but it should be noted that these powers were attributed not to Buddha alone but also to his disciples in general, who had been able to attain the higher stages of sanctification.

KAYA-CONCEPTION OF THE THERAVADINS REMAINED UNCHANGED

Even if it be assumed that the Mahāyānic ideas are latent in the above-mentioned expressions though not adequately expressed, the discussion in the Kathāvatthu² to establish the historical existence of Buddha as against those who denied it, and the manner in which references were made to the events of Buddha's life as depicted in the Nikāyas leaves no vestige of doubt about the opinion of the Theravādins regarding the kāya of Buddha.

Though the terms rupakāya and dharmakāya found their way into the later Pāli works³ from Mahāyāna or semi-Mahāyāna works, they did not bring with them any non-realistic sense. Buddhaghosa even as late as the fifth century A.C. refers thus to the kāyas:

Yo pi so Bhagavā asīti anuvyañjanapaṭimaṇḍita-dvattiṃ-samahāpurisalakkhaṇa-vicitra-rūpakāyo sabbākāraparisuddha-sīlakkhandhādi-guṇaratanasamiddha-dhammakāyo yasamahat-ta-puññamahatta.....appaṭipuggalo arahaṃ sammāsam-buddho.

(That Bhagavā, who is possessed of a beautiful rūpakāya, adorned with eighty minor signs and thirty-two major signs of a great man, and possessed of a dhammakāya purified in

¹ See Kośa, II, 10 (also for references in the Nikāyas).

² Kvu., xvii, 1: The Vetulyakas held on the basis of the passage cited above (fn. 4) that "it is not right to say that the exalted Buddha lived in the world of mankind." The Theravādins did not agree with them. Buddhaghosa also pointed out how the passage should be interpreted.

See, e.g., Sad. San. (JPTS., 1890), p. 69: Sambuddhānam dve kāyā rūpakāyo sirīdharo, Yo tehi desito dhammo dhammakāyo ti vuccati.

every way and glorified by sīla, samādhi, etc., full of splendour and virtue, incomparable and fully awakened).2

Though Buddhaghosa's conception was realistic, he was not immune from the religious bias of attributing superhuman powers to Buddha. In the Atthasālini³ he says that during the three months of his absence from the world while Buddha was engaged in preaching Abhidhamma to his mother in the Tusita heaven, he created some Ninmitabuddhas as exact replicas of himself. These Nimmitabuddhas could not be distinguished from the real Buddha in voice, words and even the rays of light that issued forth from his body. The created Buddhas could be detected only by the gods of the higher classes and not by the ordinary gods or men of the world.

In short, the early Hīnayānists conceived Buddha's $r\bar{u}pa-k\bar{a}ya$ as that of a human being, and his dhammakāya as the collection of his dhammas, i.e., doctrines and disciplinary rules collectively.

Conception of the Sarvāstivādins

The other school, the Sarvāstivādins, who retained the realistic conception of Buddha, differed a little from the Theravādins. Unfortunately their original Piṭakas in Sanskrit are lost beyond recovery and we have to depend for our information about them on the few fragmentary pieces of their literature discovered in Central Asia, or on the Chinese translations of their Āgamas, in which again very little spade-work has yet been done. Our main source of information at present is the Abhidharmakośa, made accessible to us from Chinese by the monumental French transla-

¹ The five khandhas referred to here are, sīla samādhi, paññā, vimutti and vimuttiñāṇadassana. See Mil., p. 98.

² Vis. M., p. 234; Jātaka, I, p. 84: Rūpakāyasirī.

³ Attha., p. 16.

⁴ See Prof. Vallée Poussin's Bouddhisme, pp. 232f.

⁵ Dr. Chizen Akanuma (*Eastern Buddhist*, II, p. 7) quotes some passages from the Chinese Anguttara and Samyukta Agamas and shows that the *dharmakūya* of Buddha denoted the collection of dharmas (teachings).

tion of Professor La Vallée Poussin. The Kośa, again, it should be noted, is the work of a systematiser and the production of a time much later than that of the Āgamas, to which it bears the same relation as the Visuddhimagga does to the Pāli Piṭakas. As the present state of our knowledge indicates that the Divyāvadāna and the Lalitavistara¹ originally belonged to this school, though they were recast by the Mahāyānists, we must examine with caution some of the statements found in them regarding the kāya conception.

I. Divyāvadāna

There are a few passages in the Divyāvadāna throwing light on the rupakāva and dharmakāva of Buddha and bearing the identical sense of the Pali works. On one occasion Śrona Kotikarna said that, through the grace of his teacher, he had seen the dharmakāya of Buddha, but as he was anxious to see the rupakava, he wanted to go to the place where Buddha was living at the time.2 Upagupta once said to Māra that he had seen the dharmakāya only and requested him to show him the rupakaya. Mara thereupon made an image (vigraha) of Buddha replete with all the major and minor signs of great men.3 In the answer that king Rudrāvana gave to Bimbisāra that "na rājan krpaņo loke dharmakāvena samsprset" [let not, O King, an irreligious person 4 attain (lit. touch) the dharmakaval, the word "dharmakāva" may bear a metaphysical interpretation but the context does not warrant it.5 The remark made by Aśoka, after Upagupta had pointed out to him the stūpa of Ananda, makes the sense of dharmakava quite explicit. It runs thus: 'That body which you all call pure, excellent and made of dharma (dharmātmano dharmamayo) was borne (dhāritam) by him called Viśoka (=Ānanda) and therefore his stupa deserves great honour. The lamp of dharma, the

¹ Winternitz, Geschichte etc., II, p. 194.

² Divyā., p. 19. ³ Ibid., p. 360.

⁴ Ibid., p. 560: kṛpaṇa is defined thus: yas tu dharmavirāgārtham adharme nirato nṛpaḥ, sa rājan kṛpaṇo jūeyas tamastamaḥparāyaṇaḥ.

⁵ Ibid., p. 560.

dispeller of the darkness of afflictions that burnt still among men was due to the power of him, the son of Sugatendra, and therefore, should be worshipped with special reverence.¹

There are, however, Avadānas in the Divyāvadāna, which were not without some Mahāyānic tint, for, we read in the Rudrāyaṇāvadāna,² as we usually find in the Mahāyānic works, that rays of light issued forth from Buddha's mouth when he smiled, irradiating the beings of heaven and hell. It is noteworthy that the Atthasālinī³ also speaks of raśmis (rays of light) of six colours issuing out of Buddha's body. It seems that the Mahāyānic ideas were percolating gradually into the rocky soil of the conservative Theravādins.

II. Lalitavistara

The Lalitavistara gives us a picture of Buddha more superhuman than human and yet far from the Mahāyānic conceptions of the Sambhogakāva and Dharmakāva, though in the last two chapters it dwells on the doctrine of Tathatā. In the Lalitavistara Buddha is deified but there are no traces of the Trikava conception. It says in many places that Buddha appears in the world of men for lokanuvartana (i.e. to follow the ways of the world), which, if he so desired, he could avoid by remaining in one of the heavens and attaining emancipation there. The running account of Buddha's life is interrupted at times—probably they are afterthoughts of the complier-by dialogues between Buddha and Ananda, in order to make the treatise appear Mahāyānic and not Hīnavānic. At one place Buddha explains to Ananda that, unlike human beings, he did not stay in the filth of mother's womb but in a jewel-casket (ratnavyūha)5

¹ Divyā., pp. 396-7. Cf. Przyluski, Asoka, p. 408: In connection with the destruction of the law, Mahāmāyā exclaimed Ceux qui sont nés du Corps de la Loi (dharmakāya), ou sont-ils allés?

² Divyā., xxxvii, p. 568.

³ Attha., p. 16.

⁴ E.g., Mtu., I, pp. 168, 170.

⁵ Lal. Vis., pp. 88, 105, 106. This formed one of the points of contention of the Mahāsānghikas. See Masuda, Early Origin etc., in the Asia Major, Vol. II.

placed in the womb, which was as hard as adamant but soft to the touch like the down of a Kācilindika bird, and that his birth and other events connected with it were all superhuman. At the same time he prophesies that there will be, in the future, men unrestrained in act, thought and speech, ignorant, faithless, proud, believing without deliberation what is heard by them, who will not believe in the superhuman nature of his birth.1 One can perceive through the poetical exaggerations of the Lalitavistara that it has in view the historical Budddha endowed with the major and minor signs -a human being after all, who requires to be reminded by the heavenly musicians of the acts of his past lives and his resolution to become a Buddha and rescue beings from misery, and who needs a stimulus to renounce the world in order to fulfil his resolution.2 In connection with the offer of houses which was made by the gods to the Bodhisattva when he was in the womb, it is said that in order to please all the gods who offered houses he caused the appearance of his pregnant mother Māvādevi in each of those houses by means of the Mahavyuha samadhi. This does not clearly reflect any idea of Nirmānakāya—it appears more like some of the miracles mentioned in the Nikāyas. In the last chapter of the Lalitavistara where Buddha's attributes are mentioned, he is called the great tree (mahadruma), because he possesses a body of Dharmakāyajñāna (the knowledge of Dharmakāya).3 As this chapter is very likely a Mahāyāna addition, we may reasonably say that the Lalitavistara in its original form as a treatise of the Sarvāstivādins viewed Buddha as a human being with superhuman attributes.

III. Abhidharmakośa

We may now consider the writings of Vasubandhu, the great exponent of the Sarvāstivāda school. In his Abhidhar-makoša he imported a new meaning into the words Dharma-

¹ Lal. Vis., pp. 87ff. This goes against the Sarvāstivāda and Theravāda conceptions.

² The descriptions gave opportunity to the Mahāyānists to invent Upāyakauśalya Pāramitā, the duties of Adhyeṣaṇā, Yācanā, etc.

³ Lal. Vis., p. 428.

kāya and Rūpakāya. In examining the three Śaranas, he tried to bring out the real sense of Buddha, Dharma, and Sangha in which a devotee takes refuge. He said that those who take refuge in Buddha do, in fact, take refuge in the dharmas (qualities) which constitute a Buddha (buddhakāraka), i.e., the dharmas by the acquisition of which a certain person is called a Buddha, or in other words, the dharmas by the acquisition of which a person understands all things. These dharmas are kṣayajñāna (knowledge of the destruction of misery), anutpādajñāna1 (knowledge of the further non-origination of misery), and samyagdrsti (right view) of the Asaiksas together with the dharmas attendant on the jñāna, viz., the five pure skandhas. A dharmakāya is formed of these dharmas. In another place, while showing the sameness of the Dharmakayas of all Buddhas, he explained the Dharmakāya as a series of pure dharmas, or rather a renewal of the psycho-physical organism of the substratum (anāsravadharmasamtāna, āśrayaparāvrtti).2 The Dharmakāya then signifies a new purified personality or substratum (āśraya), but it is pointed out that such a dharmakāya is possessed also by an arhat.3 In the Sūtrālamkāra 4 such a dharmakāya is attributed to the mother of

1 Kośa, VI, 67 explains that Kṣayajñāna with Anutpādajñāna makes Bodhi. On account of difference among saints in the acquisition of these jñānas, Bodhi is said to be of three kinds: Śrāvakabodhi, Pratyekabuddhabodhi and Anuttarasamyaksambodhi. By the above two jñānas one completely abandons ignorance (aśeṣāvidyā-prahāṇāt); by the first, one realises the truth that his task is accomplished (i.e., the duḥkha has been realised by him); by the second, one realises that his task is no more to be accomplished (i.e., the duḥkha has been realised by him and he will not have to exert any more.)

The samyagdrati of the Asaikas is to see things as they are really, to know truly the general character (sāmānyalakana) of dharmas. See Kośa, VI, 50 fm. For a note on the Kayajñāna, see Masuda, Early Origin etc., in Asia Major, Vol. II, Fasc. I.

² Kośa, VII, 34; for the sense of āśraya see Ibid., VIII, 34 fn. Cf. āśraya pariśuddhi in Sūtrā., p. 186.

⁸ Kośa, IV, 56.

⁴ Hüber, Sūtrālamkāra, pp. 217, 390 quoted in the Κοέα, VII, 32p. 81.

Sākyamuni or to an advanced upāsaka. Thus we see that the Kośa has two interpretations of the Dharmakāya, one being the qualities adhering to a Buddha and the other the purified personality (āśraya) possessed by him. The Kośa, in fact, replaces the concrete conceptions of the Dharmakāya found in the Nikāyas and the Divyāvadāna by an abstract one. In the last two works the Dharmakāya signified only the doctrines, viz., the Bodhipakkhiya dharmas or Anicca, Dukkha and Anatta, together with the Vinaya rules contained in the Pātimokkha, while to Vasubandhu it meant the qualities adhering to a Buddha as well as the purified personality (āśraya).

Referring to the formulæ of the Śaraṇas, Vasubandhu says that as the physical body (rūpakāya) of Buddha does not undergo any modification by the acquisition of the quality of Buddha, one should not take refuge in the rūpakāya of Buddha, which is, in fact, the rūpakāya of the Bodhisattva and hence sāsrava (impure). Just as a man would respect a monk for the qualities adhering to him and not for his person, so a devotee should take refuge in Buddhatva and not in Buddha the person. In the same way Vasubandhu explains the two other śaraṇas, viz., Dharma and Sangha, the former being explained as Nirvāṇa, or the three Truths—Duḥkha, Samudaya and Mārga, or Sukha, Duḥkha and Asukha-aduḥkha—and the latter as the qualities that a sangha of monks is expected to possess.¹

The Vibhāṣā informs us that there are some who believe that to take refuge in Buddha is to take refuge in the body constituted by the head, nape of the neck, belly, back, hands and feet of the Tathāgata. Some say that as the body is born of parents, it is impure (sāsrava) and therefore it should not be a place of refuge. The refuge should be the Aśaikṣa dharmas, which make a Buddha, i.e., the Dharmakāya.² Apparently the Vibhāṣā refers in the first

¹ Compare the formula of Sarana in the Nikāyas, e.g., Digha, III, p. 227.

² Kośa, VI, p. 32; IV, p. 76n.; VIII, p. 34.

case to the earlier Hinayana schools and in the second to the Sarvāstivādins and their followers.

SIMILAR DHARMAKAYA CONCEPTION AMONG THE SATYASIDDHIS AND THE MAHAYANISTS

The Satyasiddhi school takes almost the same view of the Dharmakāya as the Sarvāstivādins. According to it the Dharmakāya is made of śīla, samādhi, prajñā, vimukti and vimuktijñānadarsana dharmakāyas. Buddhaghosa, Nāgārjuna and the writer of the Milindapañha also refer to such a dharmakāya.1 It means that the body of Buddha was purified by the practices of these five skandhas, and hence it can be called Dharmakāya. But as these purifications are obtained by Arhats also, Harivarman, the founder of the Satyasiddhi school, distinguished the Dharmakāya of Buddha by saying that his Dharmakāya consisted not only of the above five purificatory practices but also of ten powers (daśa bala), four proficiencies (vaiśāradya) and the three recollections (smrtyupasthāna), which the Arhats cannot obtain.2

The Abhisamayālankārakārika3 and the Pancavimsatisāhasrikā-prajñāpāramitā,4 important text-books of the Yogācāra school, define the Dharmakāya with a similar sense. They say that the various dharmas, viz., Bodhipaksikas, Apramāṇas, Vimoksas, Samāpattis and so forth, constitute Sarvajnatā (omniscience) and Sarvajnatā is the Dharmakāya. It should be noted that the Kārikā and the Prajñāpāramitā use this expression in a sense different from that current in the Mahāyāna texts. They really mean the Svasambhogakāya of the later Vijnanavadins.

The Prajñāpāramitās also maintain the conception that the Dharmakāya is produced by dharmas, the highest of which is, according to them, the prajñāpāramitā, i.e., the knowledge which helps a person to realise the dharma-śūnyatā. The Astasāhasrikā takes up the question whether the honour shown to the relics of the Tathagatakaya is more meritorious

¹ Vis. M., p. 234; M. Vr. (as opinion of non-Mādhyamikas), p. 433; Mil., p. 98.

² Sogen, Systems etc., pp. 181, 182.

³ Kārikā, ch. viii

⁴ Pañca., (ASB. ms.) leaf 224a.

than the honour shown to the Prajñāpāramitā, e.g., by making a copy of it. The answer given is that the relics depend on the body purified by the prajñāpāramitā, and therefore it is the source of Buddhas. The source deserves more honour than the remnants of the fruit (i.e., relics of Buddha) produced therefrom, and therefore it is more meritorious to honour the Prajñāpāramitā than the relics.¹ It adds that all teachings of Buddha issue from the Prajñāpāramitā, and the Dharmabhāṇakas preserve and propagate them; so the Dharmabhāṇakas should also be respected. They are protected by the Dharmakāya, the Prajñāpāramitā. Sarvajñatā (omniscience) is pervaded (paribhāvita) by the prajñāpāramitā; from sarvajñatā issues the body of Tathāgata, the relics of whom are worshipped; hence prajñāpāramitā deserves greater honour.²

Hīnayānic speculations: (a) Whether rūpakāya is vipākaja?

The Kośa maintains that the rūpakāya of Buddha endowed with the major and minor signs is the result of the excellent karmas of his previous lives. According to it, even the Buddhas cannot escape the effects of their karma. The schism created by Devadatta in the sangha is attributed to a deed in one of the previous lives of Sakyamuni. The Vyākhyā and the Vibhāṣā explain that it happened to Sākyamuni only, and not to the other Buddhas, because in one of his former lives he sowed dissension among the disciples of an ascetic, possessed of five abhijñās.8 That the Buddhas enjoy or suffer the effects of karma is also maintained by the Divyavadana and the Majjhima Nikaya. The Divyavadāna refers to a saying of Sākyamuni that even the Jinas themselves are not free from their karmas, while the Majihima Nikāya says that a Tathāgata performs good deeds in his previous lives, and as a result of these he enjoys in the

¹ Asta., ch. iv.

² Ibid., p. 99. It is from this conception that the Prajfaparamita is addressed as the mother of Buddhas.

³ Kośa, VII, 34, p. 8 fn., 84; IV, 102, p. 212 fn. 2.

⁴ Divyā., p. 416.

⁵ Majjhima, III, p. 227.

present, pure and pleasant sensations (vedanā) only. Tradition says that when Buddha was hurt by the splinter of stone thrown by Devadatta, he said that ninety-one kalpas ago he had hurt a person by a spear, as the result of which evil deed, he now received a wound.

The Milindapañha, however, takes a different view of this matter. Admitting that Devadatta created a schism in the sangha, it says that as the schism was not created by any act of Buddha's own and as it was caused by an external influence, it should not be said that Buddha as the result of his karma had a divided assembly (bhejjapariso). In a similar way it explains away the wound or the illnesses from which Buddha suffered. First it asserts that Buddha attained omniscience after uprooting all roots of evil (akusalamūlas); so he could not have any more sufferings through karma. It then says that apart from karma there are other causes like the three humours, seasons, etc., which produce vedanā (feelings). According to it, the wound that Buddha received was due to an opakammika (accidental) cause and his illnesses to causes other than karma.

(b) Was Buddha a jarāyuja or upapāduka?

In order to remove doubt from the minds of the people as to the nature of the birth of so great and meritorious a being as the Bodhisattva in his last existence—a doubt expressed also in the Lalitavistara, where a ratnavyūha has been devised for the Bodhisattva's abode in his mother's womb—the Kośa² proceeds to show that the Bodhisattvas possess the power of choosing the manner of their birth (upapattivaśitva), and that Śākyamuni chose birth in a womb (jarāyu) with two objects. One was to benefit the Śākya clan and at the same time not to give opportunity to the people to consider him a magician or a god or a demon, and the other was to leave some relics of his body, by worshipping which men and other beings would go to heaven by thousands, or attain deliverance.

The Mahāsāṅghikas and their followers 3 assert that

¹ Mil., pp. 134f. ² Kośa, III, 9. ³ E.g., the Vetulyakas.

Śākyamuni was an upapāduka (self-born), and that even his son Rāhula was also an upapāduka, for Bodhisattvas cannot have kāma. They assert that Bodhisattvas are possessed of 'ādhiṣthāniki ṛddhi' (i.e., the power of appearing anywhere and in any form), and that by that power Śākyamuni made a seeming show of his existence in the womb of Maya. They conceived Buddha as lokottara (transcendental), and Śākyamuni as only a phantom (Nirmānakāya). The transcendental Buddha has a rūpakāva which is limitless, everlasting, free from all sāsrava dharmas. He is always in samādhi,1 never sleeps or dreams, and can know everything in an instant of thought. He knows neither fatigue nor rest, and is ever busy in enlightening sentient beings. His power and his life are limitless. For the benefit of sentient beings he appears at will in any one of the six gatis. Whatever he utters relates to the truth, though people may understand him differently. In short, the Mahāsānghikas conceived Buddha as a totally supermundane being with illimitable powers and knowledge, who never desired to attain Nirvana.2

Kāya conception at the beginning of Mahāyāna

The Mahāyānists incorporated the Nirmāṇakāya conception of the Mahāsāṅghikas into their Trikāya theory, adding the two other, Sambhogakāya and Dharmakāya, the former approaching the Mahāsāṅghika conception of the transcendental Buddha, and the latter being a new philosophic conception of the Mahāyānists.

These new Kāya conceptions, it seems, did not make much of an appeal at the beginning of Mahāyāna. The Sāddharma-Punḍarīka and the Suvarnaprabhāsa tried to erase from the minds of the people the lingering impression about the historical existence of Śākyamuni. In the Puṇḍarīka 3 we find

¹ Cf. Lankā., p. 240: sadā samāhitās ca tathāgatāḥ.

² For details see Masuda's Origin and Doctrines of Early Indian Buddhist Schools, Asia Major, vol. II, fasc. I; Anesaki's article in the E.R.E., sv. Docetism (Buddhist); Suzuki's Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism, pp. 249-251. See also Kośa, III, 9 referring to Mtu., I, pp. 145. 154.

³ Sad. P., pp. 311ff.

Maitreya assuming the rôle of a sceptic and enquiring how Buddha could, within a short space of forty years after the attainment of Bodhi at Gaya, perform the innumerable duties of a Tathagata and lead incalculable bodhisattvas to Buddhahood. It appears like the paradox of a man of twenty-five years claiming centenarians as his sons and the latter calling him their father. Similarly Buddha's pointing to Bodhisattvas who had been performing the various duties conducive to Buddhahood for many millions of years as his disciples appears paradoxical. Maitreya says further that in the minds of those Bodhisattvas who recently became Mahāyānists (navayānasamprasthitāḥ) there may be doubts of this nature; so the Tathagata should explain the paradox for the welfare of the religion. Buddha then asks his audience thrice to believe his words (avakalpayadhvam abhiśraddaddhvam), and says, "It is not to be considered (naiva drastavyam) that Bhagavān Śākyamuni lately leaving his family attained Bodhi at Gayā. I attained sambodhi incalculable ages ago, and since then I have been preaching the dharma. All that I have said about the previous Tathāgatas, Dīpankara etc., and their parinirvāna were all my own creations. They were only my expedients for imparting the dharma (upāyakauśalyadharmadeśanābhinirharanirmitani). All that I have said to the effect that I was young, recently born, left home, and attained Bodhi, was to appeal to a class of people who otherwise would not have been convinced of the excellence of the religion and derived benefits therefrom. But all that I said was not untrue, as the Tathagatas know what the three dhatus really are; they know that the dhatus neither are born nor die, neither produce nor non-produce, neither exist nor non-exist; neither are they the same nor different, and they are neither true nor false. All that the Tathagatas say is true, but people devoid of right knowledge construe different meanings out of it. Though I have not attained parinirvana, I say that I have attained it. In order to rouse curiosity in the minds of the people and a desire to see Buddha, I say that the appearance of a Buddha is an exceedingly rare event. I made a show of the Nirvāṇa, but did not enter into it.

but people with distorted views could not see my real self, and busied themselves with the worship of my relies. But this also produced a good effect, for they thereby became righteous and gave up their passions. From among them I formed my śrāvakasaṅgha, and showed myself at Gṛḍhra-kūṭa, and explained to them how to attain the agrabodhi".

In the Suvarnaprabhāsa 1 Ruciraketu and Kaundilya the brāhmana play the rôle of the sceptics. The former enquires why Śākyamuni, who performed so many meritorious deeds, should have such a short span of life as eighty years. The latter seeks a mustard-like relic of Buddha's body to worship and thus go to heaven. Ruciraketu is told by the Buddhas of all lokadhātus that they did not know any man or god who could calculate the length of Śākyamuni's life. They said that it might be possible to count the drops of water in a sea but it would be impossible to ascertain the length of his life. Kaundilya brāhmana, who only feigned ignorance, was told by Litsavikumāra that, just as it is absurd to expect cocoanuts from a rose-apple tree, so it is absurd to expect a relic from the Buddhakāya. The Tathāgatas have no origin, they are ever existing and inconceivable. It is only the Nirmitakāya that is shown by them. How can a body, in which there is no bone or blood, leave a dhātu (relic)? Buddhas have only Dharmakāya and there is only the Dharmadhatu.

Nirmāņakāya

The Mahāyānic texts tried to show, on the one hand, that the Hīnayānists were wrong in their belief that Śākyamuni was really a man of flesh and blood and that relies of his body existed, while on the other hand, they introduced the two conceptions of Nirmāṇakāya and Buddhakāya. Whatever is said to have been done by Śākyamuni is accounted for by these texts as the apparent doings of a phantom of the Buddhakāya, a shadowy image created to follow the ways of the world (lokānuvartana),² in order to bring con-

¹ Suvarņaprabhāsa (B.T.S. ed.), pp. 4-8.

² Cf. Mtu., I, pp. 168, 170.

viction to the hearts of the people that the attainment of Buddhahood was not an impossibility. As the Buddhas possess the knowledge of all that is to be done (kṛtyānuṣṭhānajñāna),¹ they can take any form they desire for the illumination of the various classes of beings. The Mahāyānic conception of the Nirmāṇakāya is essentially the same as that of the Mahāsānghikas.

The Prajñāpāramitās in their quaint way refer to the Nirmāṇakāya or Æūpakāya. The Pañcaviṃśati says that a bodhisattva, after acquiring all the necessary dharmas and practising prajñāpāramitā, becomes Sambuddha. He then renders service to beings of all lokadhātus (worlds) of the ten corners at all times by Nirmāṇamegha (Nirmāṇa clouds). This is called the Nairmāṇikā-kāya.²

From the Chinese sources we are informed that Nāgār-juna in his commentary on the Prajñāpāramitā, called the Mahāprajñāpāramitā sāstra, speaks of two kāyas, rūpakāya and dharmakāya. The former is the body born of parents, possessing the qualities of sentient beings, and is subject to human frailties. It was born in Kośala while his dharmakāya was born at Rājagrha. The material body was necessary for "earthly truth". It was for the deliverance of beings that Buddha assumed different bodies, different names, birth-places and ways of emancipation. This interpretation of rūpa- and dharma-kāyas is also followed in the Chinese Parinirvānasūtra and Sandhinirmocanasūtra.

Some of the Yogācāra texts furnish us with the following information regarding the conception of Nirmāṇakāya as prevailing among the Yogācārins:

(i) The Sūtrālankāra 5 explains the Nirmānakāya to be those forms which are assumed by Buddhas to render service to beings of the various worlds. It generally refers to the human form that Buddha takes in order to make a show of

¹ One of the four jnanas peculiar to Buddha, see Mvyut., p. 2.

² Pañca. (Cambr. ms.), leaf 343b.

⁸ C. Akanuma, E.B., II, pp. 17ff.; Masuda, Die Individualistische sto., p. 60.

⁴ E.B., II, pp. 21f.

⁵ Sūtrā., p. 45.

his acquiring the ordinary arts and crafts required by an average man, living a family life and then retiring from it, and ultimately attaining Nirvāṇa by a recourse to ascetic practices.

(ii) The Vijnaptimātratāsiddhi tells us that the Nirmānakāva is meant for Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, Prthagjanas (common men) and Bodhisattvas who are not yet in one of the ten bhumis. It may appear in all lands whether pure or impure. The Chinese commentaries on the Siddhi mention the various ways in which Buddha can transform his body or another's body or voice, and his or others' mind, to suit his purpose. Not only could he transform himself into Śākyamuni, or Śāriputra into a young girl, but also could create an altogether new apparitional body, not, of course, a living, thinking being.2 Often he assumed the voice of Brahmā or expressed himself through the mouth of Śāriputra or Subhūti, and it was for this reason that we find Śāriputra or Subhūti explaining some of the abstruse Mahāyana teachings, which they themselves were not expected to The third way in which he could transform his voice was to produce sounds from the sky. His thoughts were supramundane (lokottara) and pure (anāsrava). He could produce in his mind any thought he liked; in fact, he appeared in his Nirmitakāya as Sākyamuni with a mind (citta) suited to the ways of the world. He could also impose his thoughts on the minds of others.

(iii) The Abhisamayālankārakārikā states that there are four kāyas, of which the Svābhāvikakāya is real, and the three others, viz., Dharmakāya (=Svasambhogakāya), Sambhogakāya (=Parasambhogakāya) and Nirmāṇakāya are sāmvṛta (i.e. unreal); these are meant for Buddhas, Bodhisattvas and Śrāvakas respectively. According to it, the Nirmāṇakāya was intended for Śrāvakas and Bodhisattvas who are not yet in one of the ten bhūmis. It describes the Nirmāṇakāya as a body unsevered from the real kāya, and

¹ Masuda, Die Individualistische etc., p. 60.

² I harived this information from Prof. La Vallée Poussin.

⁸ See Asta., pp. 14, 33, 414.

as the actions performed by it are similarly unsevered from the kāya, they should be regarded as asamsāra (transcendental, i.e., not worldly). Then it proceeds to show that the thirty-seven kinds of purificatory actions performed by the Nirmanakaya are really the actions of the Dharmakaya. The otherty-seven actions, as explained by it, are the thirtyseven steps through which a Nirmanakaya passes after its inception. They are as follows: 1 A Nirmāṇakāya (i) is unmindful of good or bad forms of existence; in other words, takes birth as an animal, human being or god as necessities require—this is called gatiprasama; (ii) practises the four samgrahavastus (elements of popularity); (iii) enlightens himself about matters opposite and similar, good and evil, by the śrutamayi and such other means of knowledge, and then applies himself to the service of others, keeping himself unconcerned (i.e., having no anunaya, like a magician for the things made by him magically); (iv) practises the six pāramitās purified in three ways trimandalavisuddha); (v) performs, and persuades others to perform the ten kuśalakarmapathas (moral duties) and thus establish all in the path leading to Buddhahood; (vi) exerts for realising the non-existence in reality of all things; (vii) comprehends the non-duality of things and the all-pervasiveness of the dharmadhātu, and so on, until he reaches the Tathāgatabhūmi after realising the absence of difference between things constituted and unconstituted.² In short, the $K\bar{a}rik\bar{a}$ wants to say that the whole course of life of a Bodhisattva, extending through incalculable births, is nothing but the Nirmānakāya, a thing not separate from the Dharmakāya, as, in fact, according to the Mahāyāna philosophy, all creations are neither the same as, nor different from, the dharmadhātu.

(iv) The Lankāvatāra explains the relation of Nirmānakāya to Dharmakāya in the same way as the Kārikā. It states that Nirmitabuddhas are not produced by actions; the Tathāgata is neither in them nor outside them (sarve hi nirmita-

¹ J.A., 1913, p. 604.

² Kārikā, ch. viii; also J.A., 1913, pp. 599, 600.

buddhā na karmaprabhavā na teṣu tathāgato na cānyatra tebhyas tathāgatah).¹ It is only when the sons of the Jina realise the visible world to have no existence apart from the citta that they obtain the Nirmāṇakāya free from kriyā and saṃskāra, and endowed with bala, abhijñā and vaśitā.² Like the Siddhi, it says that the Tathāgatas by creating Nirmāṇakāya perform the various duties of a Tathāgata (Tathāgata-kṛtya).³ It gives also the interesting information that Vajrapāṇi serves as an attendant on the Nirmitanirmāṇa-buddhas, and not on the real Buddhas,⁴ and that the function of such a Buddha is to preach and explain the characteristics of dāna, śīla, dhyāna, samādhi, citta, prajñā, jñāna, skandha, dhātu, āyatana, vimokṣa, and vijñāna.⁵

SAMBHOGAKĀYA

We have seen that the Rūpakāya or Nirmāṇakāya was meant for the Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, Pṛthagjanas and Bodhisattvas who were not in one of the ten bhūmis, so another kāya had to be devised, a very subtle kāya; for the benefit of all Bodhisattvas. This is called Parasambhogakāya, as distinguished from Svasambhogakāya, a similar subtle body perceived by the Buddhas alone. It is this Parasambhogakāya which plays the rôle of a preacher of the various Mahāyāna sūtras, the scenes being mostly laid either at Gṛdhrakūṭa, the only place in the three dhātus considered pure and suitable for the appearance of a Sambhogakāya, or in the Sukhāvatī-vyūha, or in one of the heavens.

It will be observed from the description of the appearance of Buddha and his manner of preaching the Sūtras that the Mahāyānists were not yet able to forget or rise above the human conception of the Hīnayānists. They still gave Śākyamuni the rôle of the presiding Buddha of the universe, to whom flocked reverently with flowers, incense, etc., all the Bodhisattvas, Śrāvakas and Gṛhapatis of the various lokadhātus of the ten directions, to hear from him the Prajna-

¹ Lankā., p. 242.

² Ibid., p. 73.

³ Ibid., p. 240.

⁴ Ibid., p. 242.

⁵ Ibid., p. 57.

pāramitā, the Saddharmapundarīka, or the Gandavyūha. These Bodhisattvas again had their own tutelary Buddhas, who, according to the Mahāyāna metaphysics, possessed the same Dharmakāya as Śākyamuni. They also came or were sometimes sent by their Buddhas, with messages of greetings and flowers as tokens of their regard, to Śākyamuni Buddha, whose Buddhaksetra was then the Sahā lokadhātu. Sometimes the descriptions go so far as to say that the Buddhas themselves came to hear discourses from Śākyamuni Buddha, and the concourse of Buddhas and Bodhisattvas became so great that the Sahā lokadhātu had to be cleared of all oceans, mountains, seas, rivers, and cities, as well as gods, men and other beings. As we read in the Hinayana texts that monks used to come to meet Buddha, bringing with them one or two samaneras, so also we read in the Saddharma-Pundarika that on account of insufficiency of space the countless Buddhas could not bring with them more than one or two Bodhisattvas as attendants (upasthāpakas).1

Now let us see what was their conception of the Kāya of this Buddha. According to the Śatasāhasrikā and the Pañcavimsatisāhasrikā,2 it is an exceedingly refulgent body, from every pore of which streamed forth countless brilliant rays of light, illuminating the lokadhatus as innumerable as the sands of the Ganges. When this body stretched out its tongue, innumerable rays of light issued forth from it, and on each ray of light was found a lotus of thousand petals on which was seated a Tathagatavigraha (an image of the Tathāgata, a sort of Nirmānakāya), preaching to Bodhisattvas, Grhasthas (householders), Pravrajitas (recluses) and others the dharma consisting of the six pāramitās. After a Simhavikrīdita samādhi his body illuminated the trisāhasramahāsahasra lokadhātu just as the bright clear sun or the full moon illuminates the world. Buddha then shows his Prakrtyātmabhāva (real form) to all the worlds. The several classes of gods as well as the men of the four continents,

¹ Sad. P., pp. 244-245.

² Sata., pp. 8-29; Pañca., pp. 6ff.; for 'Asecanaka' see Samādhirājasūtra (B.T.S. ed.), p. 10.

Jambudvīpa, Aparagodāna, etc., see this Prakṛtyātmabhāva and think that the Tathagata is sitting before them and preaching the doctrine. From this body again issue forth some rays of light by which all beings of all lokadhatus see Sākyamuni Buddha preaching the $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}$ to his sangha

of monks and congregation of Bodhisattvas.

Though this conception of the refulgent body of Buddha found currency in the Prajñāpāramitās, the expression Sambhogakāya was still unknown to them. It was usually called by them Prakṛtyātmabhāva (natural body) or Āsecanakaātmabhāva (all-diffusing body). As a matter of fact, the Astasāhasrikā is not even aware of the Prakṛtyātmbhāva or Asecanaka-ātmabhāva, showing clearly its priority to the other Prajñāpāramitās. It speaks only of Rūpakāya and Dharmakāya 1 and the long glorious description of Buddhakāya, which appears in the Sata- and Pañcavimsati-sāhasrikā as nidāna (introduction) to the text, is totally absent from it. It is only in the recast version of the Pañcavimśati that the expression Sāmbhogika-kāya was introduced by way of giving a gist of the topic.2 In it the Sambhoga-kāya is described thus: Bodhisattvas, after attaining bodhi by means of the prajñāpāramitā, take a body endowed with thirty-two major and eighty minor signs with a view to preach the doctrines of Mahāyāna to the bodhisattvas and at the same time to arouse in their minds joy, delight and love for the excellent dharma. The original Prajñāpāramitā regarded this refulgent kāya as nirmita (created), and as such they included it in Rūpakāya and did not feel the necessity of introducing the conception of a third kāya, the Sāmbhogika.

In keeping with this dvikāya theory of the Prajāāpāramitās, Nāgārjuna also did not refer to, or probably was not aware of, the third kāya, the Sāmbhogika. Both Drs. Akanuma and Masuda could not trace the conception of Sambhogakāya in Nāgārjuna's Mahāprajñāpāramitā-śāstra. Dr. Akanuma also mentions his disinclination to accept the "Hymns of the Triple Body (Trikāya)" ascribed by the

1 Asta., pp. 338, 497, 513.

² Panca., (A.S.B. ms.) leaf, 359a: Iti Sāmbhogika-kāyah.

Tibetans to Nāgārjuna as a work of the famous Nāgārjuna. If the $K\bar{a}rik\bar{a}s$ of Nāgārjuna on the Tathāgatakāya be examined, it also becomes apparent that Nāgārjuna was interested in giving an exposition of the real kāya (i.e., Dharmakāya or Svabhāvakāya) only. To him the distinction of Sambhogakāya and Rūpakāya was unimportant, as both of them were unreal.

Thus, we see that up to the time of Nagarjuna, the conception of Sambhogakāya was not distinguished from that of Rūpa- or Nirmāṇakāya. The Lankāvatāra presents us first with this conception, calling it Nisyanda- or Dharmatānisyanda-Buddha, and it seems that the term Sambhogakāya was not yet current. We have seen that in Hīnayāna works also it is pointed out that the super-excellent body of Buddha, endowed with the major and minor signs of great men, was due to the countless meritorious deeds performed by him in his previous lives.3 The Chinese rendering of Sambhogakāya by pao sheng 4 報 身 in which pao means fruit or reward, also indicates that Sambhoga had no other sense than 'vipāka or nisyanda'. The later Yogācārins called it Parasambhogakāya in order to distinguish it from the other kāya called by them Svasambhoga. Though the Astasāhasrikā does not distinguish Sambhogakāya from the Nirmāṇakāya, it refers to the super-excellent body of Buddha as the result of his meritorious acts in previous lives.⁵ The Lankāvatāra by using the expression Vipākaja or Vipākastha, shows a stage of transition from the Hinavanic conception of Vipākaja-kāya to that of Mahāyānic Parasambhogakāya.

The Lankāvatāra says that the function of the Nisyanda Buddha is to teach the parikalpita (imaginary) and paratantra (relatively existent) nature of things to those persons, who weave a net of thought-constructions around themselves

¹ Eastern Buddhist, II, pp. 17ff.

² M. Vr., Ch. XXII.

³ Lankā., pp. 28, 34; see ante.

⁴ Sakaki, Mvyut. 117.

⁵ Asta., p. 515. Buddhānām kāyah kāraņasamutpannah pūrvakarmavipākād utpannah, etc.

being unaware of the dream-like nature of things.¹ This is also the function of Śākyamuni of the Sahāl okadhātu when he imparts the teaching of the *Prajñāpāramitās* or the *Saddharma-Pundarīka*.²

The Sūtrālankāra also does not distinguish Sambhogakāya into Svasambhoga and Parasambhoga. It says that with this body Buddhas enjoy the dharmas and it is different according to the different lokadhātus, implying thereby that a Buddha of each lokadhātu has his own Sambhogakāya which is different from those of other Buddhas of other Buddhaksetras.³

- (iii) The Suvarnaprabhāsa and (iv) the Abhisamayālan-kārakārikā tell us that the Sambhogakāya is a very subtle body of Buddha. It is endowed with all the mahāpuruṣa signs and is generally assumed by Buddhas for imparting the higher and metaphysical truths to the advanced bodhisattvas. The Suvarnaprabhāsa⁴ also does not speak of the two forms of Sambhogakāya, to be found in the Siddhi.
- (v) The Siddhi says that there are two Sambhogakāyas called Parasambhogakāya and Svasambhogakāya. The former is seen by bodhisattvas, while the latter is seen by the Buddhas of the various lokadhātus, and not by bodhisattvas. As regards refulgence, illimitability and immeasurability there is no difference between these two kāyas. Both of them have colour and form (varna-rūpa-samsthāna) as well as sound (śabda). On account of the knowledge of sameness (samatā) obtained by Buddhas, the body is anāsrava (pure). It can appear only in a pure land like the Sukhāvatīvyūha or Grdhrakūta. The difference between the Parasambhogakāya and the Svasambhogakāya are that the former has the mahāpurusalaksanas while the latter has not, and that the citta of the former is as unreal as that of the Nirmanakaya, while the citta of the latter is real, and besides, this citta

¹ Lankā., p. 57.

² The function of Nirmitabuddha is to teach dana, sila, etc., see ante.

³ Sūtrā., pp. 45-6.

⁴ Suzuki, Outlines etc., p. 257; in the published portion of the Sanskrit text (B.T.S.) this passage does not occur.

possesses the four jñānas, viz., ādarśajñāna (mirror-like knowledge),¹ samatā-jñāna (knowledge of the sameness of all things), pratyavekṣaṇā-jñāna (knowledge of distinguishing subject, object and the varieties of things) and kṛtyānuṣ-ṭhāna-jñāna (knowledge of doing all that is to be done).²-The rūpa of both the Sambhogakāyas is exceedingly subtle and expansive without limit, yet it is sapratigha (possessed of the quality of obstruction). Nevertheless the subtle bodies of countless Buddhas are interpenetrable.

The recast version of the Pañcavimsati3 refers to the Sambhogakāya, and does not, like the Kārikā, distinguish between Dharmakāya (=Svasambhoga) and Parasambhogakāya, the reason being that in the original version of the Pañcavimsati, there must have been, as in the other Prajñāpāramitās, the conceptions of only two kāyas, and not of three or four. The Kārikā, in fact, supports the Siddhi in regard to the conception of kayas, using only somewhat different names. The conception of the Svasambhogakāva shows a tendency of the Yogācāra school to posit something like the Isvara of the Upanisads behind the phenomenal universe. The Dharmakaya corresponds to the impersonal Absolute of the Vedanta, the Brahman, and the Sambhogakāya to the Īśvara when Brahman assumes name and form. Every Buddha, it should however be noted, has his own Sambhogakāya but all Buddhas have one Dharmakāya. The Lankāvatāra also gives hints to this effect. It says that abhava (absence of anything) is not Tathagata, and again, as Tathāgata is described as 'Anutpāda-anirodha', it has some meaning. It then denotes the Manomaya-dharmakāya.4 It cannot be seen by the non-Buddhists, Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas and even Bodhisattvas in one of the first seven bhumis. Just as different names of one thing or one person like hasta, kara, pāṇi, or Indra, Śakra, Purandara indicate

² Explained in detail in the Sūtrā., pp. 46ff; Mvyut. 5.

¹ Cf. Dīgha, II, p. 93: Dhammādāsa.

³ Panca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaf. 359a. Cf. Sikṣā., p. 159; Bodhic., pp. 1, 4; Mtu., III, pp. 344, 452.

⁴ For the definition of Manomayakāya and its three sub-divisions, see *Lankā.*, p. 81; Suzuki, *E.B.*, iv, pp. 284-5.

different aspects of the same thing so also the different names of Śākyamuni Buddha in the Sahā lokadhātu, e.g., Svāyambhuva, Nāyaka, Vṛṣabha, Viṣṇu, Īśvara, Pradhāna, Kapila, Soma, Bhāskara, Rāma, Vyāsa, or Śūnyatā, Tathatā Bhūtakoṭi, Nirvāṇa, Sarvajña, etc., indicate the different aspects of Śākyamuni Buddha.¹ People being subject to the conceptions of two extremes 'is' or 'is not' (dvayāntapatitayā) do not know that Buddha is like a reflection of the moon on water neither appearing nor disappearing. In this passage there is a clear hint that this Manomayadharmakāya, existing in the Sahā lokadhātu, is the same as the Svasambhogakāya of the Siddhi and the Āsecanakaātmabhāva or Prakṛṭyātmabhāva of the Prajñāpāramitās, and it corresponds to the Upaniṣadic conception of Īśvara.

DHARMAKĀYA

The three kāyas, of which we have so far spoken, belong strictly, to the realm of Samvrti, worldly and transcendental, and as such they were treated as Rupa- or Nirmana-kaya by the early Mahayanists, including Nagarjuna. The only real kāya of Buddha is the Reality as conceived by the Mahāyānists, and is not different from the things or beings of the universe.2 Though an attempt to define it by the current words and expressions is bound to be not only incorrect but misleading, the Mahāyānic texts tried to give an idea of it as far as the language permitted. The $K\bar{a}rik\bar{a}$ and the Siddhi call it Svābhāvika or Svabhāva kāya. It is, according to them, immeasurable and illimitable. It fills all space. It is the basis of the Sambhoga- and Nirmāna-kāyas. It is devoid of all marks (i.e. mahāpurusalaksaņas) and is inexpressible (nisprapañea). It is possessed of eternal, real and unlimited gunas. It has neither citta nor rupa, and again it is not different from them. There is one and only one Dharmakāya. Buddhas may have their individual Sambhogakāyas but they have all one Dharmakāya.3 It can only

¹ Lankā., pp. 192-3; cf. Daśa., p. 55.

² In a Buddhist inscription of Battambang, a stanza in salutation of Buddha brings out this idea. See *Le Muséon*, vol. VII.

³ Cf. Vis. M., p. 508: Nirvāņa is one for all Buddhas.

be realised within oneself and not described, for that would be like the attempt of the blind man to describe the sun, which he has never seen.¹

It is often questioned whether the conception of Dharma-kāya can be traced in the $Praj\tilde{n}ap\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ and the works of Nāgārjuna, and whether the $Praj\tilde{n}ap\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ and the works of Nāgārjuna admit of such a reality, or rather preach pure and simple negativism? To put it in another way, was it the object of the $Praj\tilde{n}ap\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ and Nāgārjuna's works to point out only the incongruities of the world and worldly knowledge and avoid making any statement about the Reality or the truth?

The Astasāhasrikā and other Prajnāpāramitās, though unrelenting in their negation of every possible statement about the reality, never assert that Tathatā or Śūnyatā or Dharmakāya in its real sense is also non-existing. The statements like 'tathatāvikārā nirvikārāvikalpā nirvikalpā' (Suchness is immutable, unchangeable, beyond percept and distinctions)2 show rather a positive conception of the Reality than a purely negative one. In regard to the Dharmakaya also the Astasāhasrikā makes similar statements. It says that he who knows that the dharmas, existing in the world or preached by the Tathagata, have no more existence than things in a dream and, does not enquire whence the Tathagata comes and where he goes, realises the Tathagata through Dharmatā.3 The Buddhakāya, that people speak of, arises through cause and condition like the sound of a flute; it involves really no appearance or disappearance. Those

¹ Masuda, op. cit., p. 59; Suzuki, Awakening of Faith, p. 62.

² Aṣṭa., p. 307; cf. the passage: yā ca tathāgatatathatā yā ca sarvadharmatathatā ekaivaiṣā tathatā'dvayā'dvaidhīkārā'dvayatathatā na kvacit tathatā na kutaścit tathatā na kasyacit tathatā yatah sā na kasyacit tathatā tatah sā tathatā'dvayā'dvaidhīkārā'dvayatathatā.

⁽That which is Tathāgata-tathatā and that which is all-things-tathatā are non-dual, one and the same, Tathatā is neither anywhere nor arises from anywhere, nor belongs to anything, hence as Tathatā does not belong to anybody, it is non-dual and one).

For other passages of similar import, see M. V_{r} ., Ch. xxii.

 $^{^3}$ Asta., p. 514: te dharmatayā tathāgatam prajānāti. Cf. M. V_{I^*} , p. 448: dharmato buddhā draṣṭavyāḥ.

who run after the form and voice of the Tathāgata and conceive of his appearance and disappearance are far from the Truth.¹ No further statements than this can be made about the Reality, for that would be again prapañca. When the Aṣtasāhasrikā asserts that the Tathāgata does not exist, it refers to that Tathāgata as conceived by one on reading the Mahāyāna texts. Even the Bodhisattvas, unless and until they reach the tenth bhūmi, cannot extricate themselves from a conception of the Tathāgatakāya, however subtle it may be (e.g. the Svasambhogakāya). They are still under a delusion and it is this delusion that the Prajñāpāramitās endeavour to remove by asserting that there is no Tathāgata.

Nagariuna by denving the existence of a so-called Tathagata does nothing more than what the Prajñāpāramitās endeavour to establish. His point is that, if bhavasantati (series of existence) be admitted then the existence of a Tathāgata should also be admitted,2 for the Tathāgata represents the ultimate state of this bhavasantati: it is a state attained by a being after a long series of existence. As in reality (paramārthatah) there is no bhavasantati, there is also no Tathagata—that being who is supposed to have become Tathagata after practising mahakaruna and other virtues, and thereby attaining omniscience. If the Tathagata had really existed, he would either be the same as five skandhas or different from them, or the skandhas would be in him or he in the skandhas, but as he is none of these nor any one of these is he, he cannot have any real existence. By these and other similar arguments Nāgārjuna asserts that there is no Tathagata. By such denial he only establishes that the Tathagata as the ultimate state of bhavasantati does not exist.

Candrakīrti, in support of Nāgārjuna's arguments, quotes a passage from the $Astasāhasrik\bar{a}$ (p. 479), in which Buddha and his dharma are compared to $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ or svapna, but at the same time he says "we do not assert the non-existence

¹ Asta., p. 513.

 $^{^2}$ \dot{M} . \dot{V}_{I} , p. 431: vidyata eva bhavasantatis tathāgatasadbhāvāt; Ibid., p. 432. Na hy ekena janmanā śakyam tathāgatatvam anuprāptum.

(nāstitva) of the Tathāgata in every way, for then we would be guilty of apavāda (denial), and yet being desirous of describing the Tathāgata by means of vyavahāra-satya (conventionally) and by taking recourse to super-impositions (samāropa) we say that he is śūnya or aśūnya, or śūnyā-śūnya or naiva śūnya nāśūnya. But he who endeavours to realise the true Tathāgata by having recourse to statements and denials will never know him. Candrakīrti in support of this quotes the verses from the Vajracchedikā, to which the Aṣiasāhasrikā also refers, viz., "he who endeavoured to see me through my form and voice could not see me because

dharmato buddhā drasṭavyā dharmakāyā hi nāyakāḥ, dharmatā cāpy avijneyā na sā śakyā vijānitum.

[A buddha is to be seen in the sense of dharmatā (nature of dharmas), for the leaders (of men) have only Dharma-kāya. That dharmatā is unknowable (so also is the Tathāgata)].

Nāgārjuna concludes his examination of the Tathāgata-kāya by identifying Tathāgata with the world (jagat),² or nature itself, and asserting that the Tathāgata, whom people or even Bodhisattvas have in view, is only a bimba (image) of kuśaladharmas and is not the real Tathatā or Tathāgata.³ A dialectician like Nāgārjuna cannot go further than this to establish the Reality. It is by denial of the existence of unreal things, including the so-called Tathāgata, that he points towards the Reality—the real Tathāgatakāya, the Dharmakāya.⁴

The conception of Dharmakāya was of special interest to the Yogācārins. The $Lank\bar{a}vat\bar{a}ra^5$ in describing it says that

¹ M. Vr., p. 448; cf. Asta., pp. 513, 514; Vajra., p. 43.

² Tathāgato yatsvabhāvas tat svabhāvam idam jagat, Tathāgato niḥsvabhāvo niḥsvabhāvam idam jagat. $M.~Vr.,~{\rm pp.}~448-9$

³ M. Vr., pp. 448-9.

⁴ Prapañcayanti ye buddham prapañcātītam avyayam, Te prapañcahatāḥ sarve na pasyanti Tathāgatam. See also M. Vr., p. 534.

⁵ Lankā., pp. 57, 60.

M/

NALIN Premchana College, K

1

(I harmatā) Buddha is without any substratum (nirālamba) ena lies beyond the range of functioning organs of sense, proofs or signs and hence beyond the vision of Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas or the non-Mahavanists. It is to be realised only within one's own self. The Sūtrālankāra 1 calls it Svābhāvika-dharmakāva. It is one and the same kāya in all Buddhas, very subtle, unknowable and eternal. Trimśikā 2 explains the Dharmai aya as the transformed āśraya (substratum)—the ālayavijñāna—the transformation being effected by knowledge (jñāna) and the suppression of the two evils (dausthulyas), viz., klesāvaraņa and jneyāvarana. The Aloka on the Abhisamayālankārakārikā also explains the Dharmakāya in a similar way. According to it, there are two kinds of Dharmakāya, one being the Bodhipaksika and other dharmas, which are themselves pure and productive of clear knowledge (nisprapañcajñānātmakā) and the other the transformed āśraya of the same, which is then called Svabhāvakāya. Professor Stcherbatsky 4 supplies us with nearly the same information that we find in the $\overline{A}loka$ from some source, which he does not mention. He says that "according to the early Yogācāras the Dharmakāya is divided into Svabhāvakāya (ño-bo-ñid-sku) and jñānakāva (ye-ses-kyi-sku); the first is the motionless (nitya) substance of the universe, the second is anitya, i.e., changing, living". Evidently what the Professor means by Jñanakaya is the Dharmakāya, consisting of the Bodhipaksika and other dharmas, of the Aloka. That the Svabhāvakāya is the nityakāya, as pointed out by him, is also supported by the Suvarnaprabhāsa and other texts.5

The Chinese commentators on the Siddhi say that Dharmakāya is the metaphysical principle of real citta and $r\bar{u}pa$ of the Tathāgata. It is the real nature of things, and can be equated with Tathatā, Dharmadhātu or Tathāgatagarbha.

Sūtrā., p. 45.
 Trimśikā, p. 44.
 J.A., 1913.
 Con. of N., p. 1

 ³ J.A., 1913.
 4 Con. of N., p. 185n.
 5 Suvarnaprabhāsa (B.T.S.), p. 8; Lankā., p. 78; Sūtrā., p. 46.

⁶ I have derived this information from Professor La Vallée Poussin. In Lankā. (pp. 77, 78) the Tathāgatagarbha is described as nitya, dhruva, śāśvata, śiva, etc., just as the non-Buddhists speak of their great soul as nitya, kartā, nirguṇa, vibhu, and avyaya.

NAL
Premo

College

The goal of Bodhisattvas is to realise the Dharmaks, a. Every being has the Dharmakāya, or the Dharmakāya comprises all beings of the world, but as they are blinded by avidyā do not realise this fact. What the Bodhisattva aims at is the removal of this avidya and the realisation of the fact that he is the same as the Dharmakaya. The $\overline{A}loka$ on the $K\bar{a}rik\bar{a}^{\,1}$ enumerates the steps through which a Bodhisattva passes, and points out that the last step of a Bodhisattva is to realise the Dharmakāya (dharmakāyābhisambodhena bhavisyati), after which it becomes easy for him to assume any one of the four kāyas. In the Lankavatāra we notice that Mahāmati is anxious to know how a Bodhisattva after completing the ten bhumis can attain the Tathagatakāya or Dharmakāya and go to any one of the Buddhaksetras or heavens. The Lankavatara also describes in rosy colours the prospect of attaining Dharmakāya. It says that a Bodhisattva after attaining the Mahādharmamegha in the ninth bhumi is adorned with many jewels, and sits on a lotus in a jewelled palace surrounded by other Bodhisattvas of his status. He comprehends there the illusory nature of all things. He is anointed (abhiseka) by Vajrapāṇi as a son of Buddha. He then goes beyond the bhūmi of Buddhasutas by realising within himself the dharmanairātmya and confronts the Dharmakāya.2 The $Trimsikar{a}$ says that just as Vimuktikāya is the goal of the arhats, so Dharmakāya is the goal of the Bodhisattvas. It shows that as the arhats by getting rid of klesavarana obtain a purified kāya, so also a Buddha by getting rid of both kleśāvaraņa and jñeyāvaraņa obtains the Dharmakāya.3

¹ J.A., 1913.

² Lankā., pp. 51, 70.

³ Trimáikā, p. 44.

(c). The Doctrine of Nirvana

SECTION I

The second fundamental point of difference between the doctrines of Hīnayāna and Mhāyāna, mentioned in the Saddharma-Punḍarīka, lies in the conception of Nirvāṇa.

Hīnāyānic Nirvāņa: (1) Liberation from Duņkhatā

The Hinavanist considers himself afflicted with three kinds of misery (duhkha), viz., (a) suffering due to mental and physical causes (duhkha-duhkhatā), (b) that inhering in caused and conditioned existences (samskāra-duhkhatā) subject as they are to origin and destruction, and (c) that due to transformation of pleasurable sensations into painful ones e.g. (viparināma-duhkhatā) 1. He seeks release from these miseries incidental to life in any of the three worlds, Kāma, Rūpa, and Arūpa² (including the six ordinary forms of existence 3) by realising the formula of the law of causation (pratītyasamutpāda) and the four aryasatyas, and the transitoriness (anityata) and essencelessness (anātmatā) of the things of this world and the miseries to which they lead. The Pundarika concedes that many of the disciples of Buddha attained Arhatship or Nirvana by perceiving the non-existence of anything corresponding to soul (ātmā) in any of the five categories of mental and physical elements (skandhas) 4. The Hīnayānists admit that their Nirvana consists in a liberation from the three kinds of

¹ Sad. P., p. 109; M. Vr., p. 475; Mvyut. 3; Koša, vi, 3; Poussin, Nirvāṇa, p. 174; Burnouf, Lotus etc., p. 68; Dīgha, III, p. 216; Samyutta, IV, p. 259, V, p. 56. In the Vibhanga-Aṭṭhakathā (pp. 93-94) seven kinds of dukkhas are mentioned: dukkha-dukkham, vipariṇāmad., saṅkhārad., paṭicchannad., appaṭicchannad., pariyāyad., and nippariyāyad.

² Sad. P., pp. 100, 117, 132-3, Samādhirāja (B.T.S. ed.), p. 13; Sūtrā., pp. 94, 128.

³ Sad. P., pp. 135-6; for the six gatis, see Dīgha, III, p. 264; J.P.T.S., 1884, p. 152; Annales du Musée Guimet, V, pp. 514-528; E.R.E., sv. Cosmogony and Cosmology.

⁴ Cf. Pațis. M., I, p. 146.

duḥkhatā, incidental to existence in the three laukikadhat s. Thus, according to the Hīnayānic conception, beings obtain liberation by attaining nibbānadhātu without any residue 1. The Pāli works, canonical or post-canonical, agree on the point that this release is obtained by realising anityatā, duḥkhatā and anātmatā as well as pratītyasamutpannatā of the world.

What the Mahāyānists endeavour to point out is that the Hinayanists concern themselves with the realisation of the non-existence of a permanent entity like soul (Pudgala-nairātmya) and not of the non-existence of anything whatsoever supposed to exist (Dharma-nairātmya).2 According to the Mahāyānists, this realisation attained by the Hīnayānists cannot lead them to the ultimate Reality; it carries them only some distance towards the Truth, and hence Nirvana in the real sense of the term cannot be said to be attained by them 3. The Hinayanists, however, consider that they reach Nirvana when they know that they will have no more birth as they have led the life of holiness (brahmacarya) and realised the pudgalanairātmya. Some think, as the Lankāvatāra4 puts it, that Nirvāna is attained by comprehending what is really soul or personality; some others think that it is attained by penetrating into the truth that things are dependent on causes. But in fact, the Lankāvatāra 5 adds, there is no real emancipation (moksa) without the realisation of Dharma-nairātmya. So the Hinayanists do not actually reach moksa; they are only tossed up and down by the properties (laksana) of things like a log of wood by the waves.

(II) PASSAGE FROM NIMITTA TO ANIMITTA

The Hīnayānists, according to the Sūtrālankāra⁶, have only personality as their basis (pudgala-nimitta) for medita-

 ¹ $\it DhP., 26$: sankhāraduk
khatāya loko anupādisesāya nibbānadhātuyā muñcati.

² Sūtrā., pp. 154-160; Lankā., pp. 68-69.

³ Cf. Bodhic., p. 442: without the realisation of S'unyatu, there may be nivrti (quietude) but it is not permanent.

⁴ Lankā., pp. 63-4.

⁵ Lankā., p. 135.

⁶ Sūtrā., pp. 140.

tion, and so they reach only Śrāvaka-bodhi or Pratyeka-bodhi and not Samyak-sambodhi, which can only be attained by making all dharmas (existent things and conditions) the basis (nimitta) for meditations 1. The Śrāvakas distinguish between a thing with signs (nimitta) and a thing without signs (animitta) and try to draw away their minds from all nimittas and apply them to the attainment of the animitta which they attain in due course. The Mahāyānists think that the dual conception of things cannot lead to moksa. They do not know of anything other than Tathatā (thatness of things); so to them a nimitta is equally an animitta, and consequently their knowledge, derived as it is on the basis of Tathatā alone, is free from all differentiations or dualism (dvayagrāha-vivarjitam). 2 By the remark that the Hinayanists distinguish between Nimitta and Animitta and consider that a person attains Animitta (=Nibbāna) by cogitating on the Animitta-dhātu and dissociating his mind from all things with signs, the Sūtrālankāra3 refers in a general way to the practice of the Hīnayānists to avoid rāga, dosa, moha and such other nimittas 4 by which a being becomes entangled in worldly things. There are in the Nikāyas many passages of this import, e.g., in the Digha and Aiguttara Nikāyas⁵ it is said that a person by inattention to all signs (of allurement) develops such a mental concentration that it may be described as animitta (without sign). But the prevalent meaning of Animitta in Pāli works is Nibbāna, the goal to be reached through the meditations

¹ Sūtrā., pp. 169-170.

² For the exposition of Dharma-tattva as satatam dvayena rahitam,

see Ibid., pp. 58 ff. ' 3 Sūtrā., p. 169 : Sarvanimittānām amanasikārād animittasya ca dhātor manasikārād animittam samāpadyante (as done by the Śrāvakas and not by Bodhisattvas).

⁴ Mahāniddesa, I, p. 198: Rūpanimitta, saddan., gandhan., rasan., photthabban., and dhamman.

⁵ Anguttara, III, pp. 292, 397; Dīgha, II, 100: Yasmim samaye tathāgato sabbanimittānam amanasikārā ekaccānam vedanānam nirodho animittam cetosamādhim upasampajja viharati; Pațis. M., I, p. 91: Nimittam bhayato sampassamāno animitte adhimuttattā pavattam ajjhupekkhitvā nirodham nibbānam animittam āvajjitvā samāpajjitvā etc.; see also Vis. M., p. 672; Mahāniddesa, I, p. 198.

(samādhis or vimokkhas) called suññata, appaṇihita and animitta. These vimokkhas help the adept to comprehend that the things of the world are essenceless (anatta), unpleasant (dukkha) and impermanent (anicca) ¹. The Aiguttara Nikāya ² hints that a person puts an end to his āsavas (impurities) by dwelling on these three nimittas while the Atthasālini ³ states that the five khandhas appear as frightful to a man as a dead body hung round his neck, if he understands the three lakkhaṇas (anicca, dukkha and anatta).

(III) REMOVAL OF KLEŚĀVARAŅA AND NOT JÑEYĀVARAŅA

The Lankavatara 4 while explaining the position of the Hinayanists says that they believe in the reality of samsara (worldly existence) and are frightened by its attendant miseries from which they seek release; this is only due to their ignorance of the non-existence of any difference between samsāra and nirvāna. The standpoint of the Hinayanists is that the world or things around us are produced out of the five skandhas or seventy-two elements having real exist. ence. The constituted things which originate through some causes and conditions (pratītyasamutpanna) are in a constant state of flux and devoid of any substance.5 The mental and physical constituents undergo momentary (ksanika) changes and there is no permanent entity apart from them. It is by the removal of the notion of the existence of an atman as identical with one of the skandhas or something apart from them that a person attains Nirvana.

¹ These three are called also lakkhanas (properties of worldly things).
Cf. Jāt., I, p. 48: Buddhānañ ca dhammadesanā tilakkhanamuttā nāma natthi, tesam aniccadukkhamanattā ti...

² Anguttara, III, p. 319.

³ Attha., p. 225. ⁴ Lankā., p. 61.

⁵ Patis. M., II, p. 177 devotes a chapter to the exposition of Suñña. The general definition offered by it is that the things of the world are devoid of attā or attaniya. Then it says that the Suñña can be explained in 24 ways, viz., suññasuññam, sankhārasuññam, vipariṇāmasuññam, etc., up to paramatthasuññam (=Nibbāna). The various suññas may well be compared to the 18 kinds of the Śūnyatās of the Mahāyāna scriptures.

The Mahāvānists do not admit the real existence of the skandhas or elements composing a being. They assert that the skandhas exist only in imagination (vikalpa) or are illusory conceptions (māyā) held by the so-called beings suffering from a defective vision due to ignorance. So the Truth, according to the Mahavanists, is Sunyata or Dharma-nairatmya. The Pundarika 1 therefore says that he who knows the dharmas as devoid of atman knows the truth. It is because one does not possess this knowledge of the essencelessness of dharmas (śūnyajñāna-vihīnatvāt) that one is called a Śrāvaka. The Kāśyapa Parivarta sarcastically compares the Pudgalaśūnyatā of the Śrāvakas with the hole made by a termite, and the Dharmasunvata of the Bodhisattvas with the infinite space (ākāśa).2 Of the seven reasons adduced by the Sūtrālankāra to show why Mahāyāna should be considered superior to Hinavana, one is that the knowledge of the Mahayanists is on a higher level, for it penetrates both Pudgalanairātmya and Dharma-nairātmya.3 The Trimśikā 4 brings out very clearly the difference between Pudgala- and Dharma-nairātmya. It says that the realisation of the two forms of Nairātmya is needed for the removal of the two screens (avarana) viz., that of passions (kleśa) and that hindering true knowledge (iñeya). The passions of desire, attachment, etc. arise on account of a belief in a self: so when one realises the non-existence of self, his egoism is destroyed, and as a result his passions are eliminated. The realisation of the non-existence of the things of this world (dharma-nairātmya) removes the screen over true knowledge. The removal of both the screens is needed for the attainment of emancipation (moksa) and omniscience (sarvajñatva). The passions are obstacles to the attainment of emancipation (moksaprāpterāvaranam); hence the removal of passions leads to moksa. The screen of jneya works as a hindrance to the functioning of knowledge (jnana), i.e., in the apperception of things through knowledge. When it is removed knowledge penetrates unhindered into all objects of knowledge in detail

¹ Sad. P., p. 138; Kāš. P., pp. 115f.

² Kāś. P., 114, Pañca., leaves 77, 78.

⁸ Sūtrā., p. 171. 4 Siddhi, p. 15; cf. Sūtrā., p. 94.

(sarvākāra) without, however, causing attachment of any kind and this is called the attainment of omniscience or Bodhi.

The Hīnayānists, however, do not admit that they shake off only the kleśāvarana and not jñeyāvarana as stated by the Mahāyānists. They contend that by the removal of the screen of actions (karmāvarana), of the effects of karma (vipākāvarana) and of afflictions (kilesāvarana),1 the Arhats attain full knowledge without any veil (anāvarana).2 They completely eradicate from their minds the asavas including the aviliasava. Of the three branches of their spiritual culture. viz.. sīla. samādhi and paññā, the last, according to them, brings home to an Arhat the Truth, 3 which is the same for Arhats and Buddhas. The function of Pañña consists in destroying Avijja, the veil of ignorance, the source of worldly existences, and therefore, of all miseries (dukkha). It is Avijjā, which (i) causes experience of things which ought not to be experienced, e.g., evils through thoughts, words and deeds; (ii) veils things which ought to be known, e.g., the merit of observance of good conduct and so forth; (iii) acts as a hindrance to the realisation of the fact that the five khandhas are in reality an undifferentiated heap (rāsattham), and that the perceptions of the organs of sense are essenceless and that the truths are the same tathattham; 4 (iv) drives (javāpeti) beings into the various forms of existence in the Kāma, Rūpa, and Arūpa worlds without cessation; (v) causes one to discriminate between things which in the ultimate analysis have no real difference and clouds one's vision from the real nature of the khandhas; and (vi) blinds one to the relative nature of the

¹ The Mahāyānists perhaps made capital out of the statements very often found in the Hīnayāna works like "Arahattamaggena sabbakilesehi vimuccatīti". *Paṭis. M.*, II, p. 243.

² Patis. M., I, pp. 124, 131.

³ Ibid., II, pp. 31, 244: arhattamaggena sabbakilese samvaratthena silavisuddhi, avikkepatthena cittavisuddhi, dassanatthena ditthivisuddhi.

⁴ Patis. M., p. 104 explains tathattham thus: Cattāro dukkhassa dukkhatthā tathā avitathā anaiñathā; dukkhassa pīļanattho sankhatattho santāpattho viparināmattho...Evam dukkham tathatthena saccam. In this way the other truths are also explained.

world, i.e., its dependence on causes and conditions (patic-casamuppana).¹ By the complete removal of this Avijjā through pañāā, a person becomes Arhat and reaches the state which is beyond change, beyond destruction—the state of immortality. There can be no state higher than this. The Hīnayānists acknowledge that the Buddhas by their extraordinary merits accumulated in the past acquire omniscience (sabbaññutañāṇa)² and many other powers unattainable by Arhats,³ but they do not admit that the Nibbāna of Buddha is different from that of an Arhat. The knowledge (ñāṇa) acquired by Arhats and Buddhas is anāvaraṇa (without any veil) with this difference in the case of a Buddha that his knowledge is detailed and superior in some respects to that of the Arhats.⁴

(IV) TRANSITION FROM LAUKIKA TO LOKOTTARA

It is stated in the Pundarīka that the Hīnayānists conceive of Nirvāṇa as passing from the worldly (laukikadhātu) to the transcendental sphere (lokottaradhātu), i.e., the Hīnayānic Nirvāṇa is a transcendental state beyond the three dhātus free from every kind of affliction and beyond any possibility of retrogression to lower stages. The Lankāvatāra points out that ordinary knowledge (laukikajñāna) of the people of the world has reference to the existence and non-existence of things (sad asat pakṣābhiniviṣṭa) while the transcendental knowledge (lokottarajñāna) possessed by the Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas has reference to the particular and generic characteristics of things (svasāmānyalakṣaṇa-patitāśayābhiniviṣṭa) penetrating through the notion of existence and non-existence of things. The distinction between laukika and lokottara as drawn in the Pundarīka and

¹ Vis. M., p. 526. 2 Kvu., xxi, 3; i. 2.

 $^{^{8}}$ For a comparison of the powers (bala) of Arhats and Buddhas, see Patis. M., II, pp. 173 ff.

⁴ Patis. M., I, pp. 131 ff; II, pp. 31, 32. The Buddhas possess 14 ñaṇas, of which eight are common to the Arhats and Buddhas.

⁵ Lankā., p. 157.

⁶ Kοέα, VI, 14c.d.: svalakṣaṇa=le caractère propre; sāmānyala-kṣaṇa=les caractères généraux.

Lankāvatāra finds support in the Hīnayāna scriptures. There it is stated that the puthujjanas (non-sotāpannas) labour under the notion of individual existence in the worlds while the arhats are free from such notion, as they know that all beings are made of five skandhas devoid of an underlying permanent entity and owing their origin to causes and conditions (pratītyasamutpanna), and that the common characteristics of beings are anityatā, duḥkhatā and anātmatā.

The Patisambhidāmagga, Vibhanga and other works speak of four dhātus, viz., Kāma, Rūpa, Arūpa and Apariyāpanna or Lokuttara.1 Kāmadhātu is the world of beings having vatthukāma (desire for existence in any of the three worlds) and kilesakāma (proneness to passion). It comprises the eleven spheres of existence from the Avici hell to the Paranimmita heaven.2 In Kāmadhātu, the beings possess 5 khandhas, 12 āyatanas, 18 dhātus, 32 indriyas, 9 hetus, 7 kinds of phassa, vedanā, saññā, cetanā and citta, are conversant with the 3 truths and dependent on 4 āhāras.3 Rūpadhātu is the world of beings without kāma (passion), their actions being subtle (sukhuma) 4 in contrast to those of kāmadhātu whose actions are olārika (gross). It comprises sixteen planes of existence from Brahmaloka to Akanittha heaven.⁵ In this dhātu, the beings possess 5 khandhas, 6 ayatanas, 9 dhatus, 14 indriyas, 8 hetus, and 4 kinds of phassa, vedanā, saññā, cetanā and citta, are conversant with 3 truths and dependent on 3 āhāras. Arūpa-

¹ Vis. M., p. 493; Patis. M., I, p. 83.

² Attha., pp. 61-2; Patis. M., I, p. 83. The eleven spheres are the six Devalokas, Manussaloka, Petaloka, Tiracchānayoni and Niraya.

³ Vibh., p. 404. 4 Vis. M., p. 475.

⁵ These are called Rūpabrahmalokas. By practising the first jhāna an adept develops a state of mind which is similar to that of the denizens of the first three Rūpabrahmalokas. Should the adept die after perfecting himself in this jhāna, it is believed that he will be reborn in one of those three lokas, which are therefore called Paṭhamaj-jhānabhūmi. Applying the same reason, the second three Rūpabrahma-lokas are called Dutiyajjhānabhūmi, third three Tatiyajjhānabhūmi, the tenth and eleventh Catuthajjhānabhūmi, and the remaining five Suddhāvāsabhūmi.

dhātu is the world of beings without kāma (passion) and rūpa (material constituents of a body). It contains the gods residing in the four spheres from the ākāsānañcāyatana to nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatana. In this dhātu the beings possess 4 khandhas, 2 āyatanas, 2 dhātus, 11 indriyas, 8 hetus, one kind of phassa, vedanā, saññā, cetanā and citta, are conversant with 3 truths and dependent on 3 āhāras.

These three dhātus contain all the beings of the universe from the lowest to the highest plane of existence. The aim of Hīnayāna Buddhism is to reach a plane beyond the three dhatus, called the Apariyapanna- or Lokuttara-dhatu (the unincluded or transcendental sphere. According to the Patisambhidāmagga² it contains those beings who have reached the four maggas and have obtained the four maggaphalas or the Asankhata, i.e., Nibbana. The Vibhanga a explains that the beings of Apariyāpannadhātu possess khandhas and āyatanas similar to those of Arupadhatu with the difference that the former are conversant with two truths (nirodha and magga), possess one additional power, viz., anaññātaññassāmītindriya and 6 hetus.4 Evidently, the texts have in view those sentient beings of the first three dhatus, who come to possess one of the stages of sanctification including Arhathood. The texts, however, do not explain how a being belonging to the Kāmaor Rupa-dhatu and possessing one of the stages of sanctification can be without the rupakkhandha and how one possessed of the Asankhata or Nibbana can continue to have the khandhas, dhātus, āyatanas, etc.,5 which are the attributes of the members of Apariyapanna- and Arupa-Thus we find that the Hinayanists seek release dhātus. from the three laukikadhātus by attaining the lokottara- or apariyāpanna-dhātu, which includes the Asankhata- or Nibbāna-dhātu.

¹ These four are called *Arūpabrahmalokas*. The adepts, as above, by practising the Ākāsānañcāyatana and other jhānas rise to the same level as the gods of the Akāsānanta and other āyatanas.

² Patis. M., I, p. 84.

³ Vibh., p. 407.

⁴ Buddhaghosa points out that in reality one cannot speak of lokuttarāni viññāṇāni.

⁵ Vis. M., p. 545.

NIRVĀNA ACCORDING TO THE EARLY MAHĀYĀNA WORKS

The Hinayanic Nirvana thus according to the Pundarika 1 is a haven of peace and rest and is a vimukti (emancipation) so far as the klesas 2 (afflictions) are concerned. It further says that there may be people who may look upon this form of existence as Nirvāna and regard the Hīnayānists as right in their ways of thinking and practising. In order to counteract such a supposition it states that there is one and only one Nirvana, not two or three, and that one is and can be attained only by a thorough comprehension of the sameness of all things (sarvadharma-samatāvabodhāt)3. The conception of Samatā (sameness) has been developed in the Sūtrālankāra, which gives five meanings of same. It says that a being after comprehending Dharmasamatā (sameness of things) and realising the non-substantiality of things (dharmanairātmya) sees that in the series of existences whether of himself or of others, there is no difference as regards nairātmya (essencelessness) and duḥkha (misery); that the desire for the removal of misery from himself as well as from others is the same; that the remedy applicable is the same for himself as well as for others; and that the knowledge attained by the bodhisattvas is the same as that attained by him 4. The Lankāvatāra 5 explains samatā (sameness) by saying that it is the sameness of the world (samsāra) and its cessation (nirvāna), i.e., samsāra bears to nirvāna the same relation as waves bear to water. The Pañcavimsati 6 explains $samat\bar{a}$ by the illustration of $\bar{A}k\bar{a}\hat{s}a$ (space). It

¹ Sad. P., pp. 129, 136-7.

² Sūtrā., p. 119; M. Vr., p. 519: Tatra niravašeṣasyāvidyārāgādikasya kleśaganasya prahāṇāt sopadhiśeṣam nirvāṇam iṣyate.

³ Sad. P., p. 133; see p. 143: sarvadharmāḥ samāḥ sarve samāḥ samasamāḥ sadā, Evam jnatva vijanati nirvaņam amrtam sivam.

⁴ Sūtrā., p. 94; see p. 48: samacittatā sarvasattesv ātmaparasamatayā.

⁵ Lankā., p. 42: saṃsāra-nirvāṇa-samatā; M. Vr., ch. xxv: na nirvāņasya samsārāt kiñcid asti višesaņam. For an exposition of Samsāra and Nirvāņa as one, see Suzuki's Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism, pp. 352-6; Y. Sogen's System etc., pp. 40-1.

⁶ Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaves 114 ff; S'ata., pp. 1560 ff.

says that Ākāśa has no direction like east or west, no past, present or future, no increase or decrease, no contamination or purification. It has no origin, continuity or decay. It cannot be a subject of thought. It can neither be heard nor seen; it is neither known nor unknown. It has nothing to do with the Kāma, Rūpa or Arūpa dhātus, with attachment or non-attachment, with hatred or nonhatred and so forth. It has no concern with the various cittotpadas (i.e., the development of citta for attainment of bodhi), bhūmis (stages of spiritual progress), phalas (fruits of spiritual sanctification), or any conceptions like happiness (sukha), misery (duhkha), quietude (santa), excellence (panīta), etc. This is what is called the samatā (sameness) of Akasa. It is in this light that the things of the world are to be seen. What the Pañcavimsati contends for is that, from the standpoint of reality, the things seen, heard or known by us are, in fact, the outcome of our imagination. What we should do is to regard these things as our fancies, because they are really the same as Tathata, of which nothing can be predicated, just as nothing can be predicated of Ākāśa.

According to the Pundarika, the real Nirvana is that state in which one sees things without any differentiation or dichotomy, and for the description of which all the expressions that can be used by man, relative as they are, are inadequate. The Lankavatara describes the jaana of Bodhisattvas as the lokottaratama-jñāna (super-transcendental knowledge), as distinguished from the lokottarajñāna of the Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas and laukika-jñana of pṛthagjana (common persons). It consists in the realisation of all dharmas as mere reflections, having no origin and decay. Hence, no question of existence and non-existence can arise in regard to this (nirābhāsadharmapravicayād anirodhānutpadadarśanāt sad asat paksavigatam).

The Mahāyānists, however, concede the point that the Arhats can remain at peace in the state called by the Hīnavānists Arahathood or Nirvāna but, according to them,

¹ Lankā., p. 157.

it is a lower ideal, a selfish end, devoid of love (sneha)1 and charity. The Pundarika2 states that the arhats after attaining (Hīnayānie) Nirvāna do not, in fact, wish to stay there for ever; it is only a temporary rest (viśrāmo'yam na nivrtih)3. At this stage, they become capable of realising the nature of the Truth and the powers and privileges appertaining to a Buddha, who is indistinguishable from that Truth. Then they set themselves to the performance of the duties still remaining, and ultimately become Buddhas, i.e., attain Nirvana properly so called. They now realise that the three dhatus, from which they have so long struggled to extricate themselves, had no existence whatsoever,4 and were merely imaginary superimpositions (parikalpanā).5 The three dhatus that are seen in the ten directions are only appearances like a mirage; hence they cannot have origination, destruction or transformation, bondage or freedom, light or darkness. As they are non-existent like things in a dream or a mirage, any statement about them would be inappropriate. Unless one realises the things of this universe in this way, he cannot obtain Nirvāṇa (sarvadharmā na prāptāh kutas tasya nirvāṇam iti).6 One who has developed

¹ Sūtrā., pp. 126-7: Niḥsnehānām śrāvaka-pratyekabuddhānām sarvaduḥkhopaśame nirvāne pratisthitam manah.

² Sad. P., pp. 132-3, 138, 140; cf. Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaf 70b.

³ Sad. P., pp. 142, 188. Cf. 5 kinds of Nirvāṇa in the Brahmajāla Sutta. Dr. E. J. Thomas in his *Life of Buddha*, p. 200 refers to it thus, "They hold that Nirvāṇa consists in the enjoyment of this life in five ways, either in the pleasures of sense or one of the four trances".

⁴ Sad. P., p. 318.

⁵ Sūtrā., p. 94; sa traidhātukātmasaṃskārān abhūtaparikalpanāmātrān pasyati.

⁶ Cf. Das Gupta's *Indian Philosophy*, pp. 425, 426, 428 referring to Gaudapāda's definition of the Absolute. The close agreement between the views of the *Sad. P.*, and Gaudapāda's *Māndukyakārikā* will be evident from the following passages:

Sad. P., p. 318: Dṛṣṭaṃ hi tathāgatena traidhātukaṃ yathābhūtaṃ na jāyate na mriyate na cyavate nopapadyate na saṃsarati na parinirvāti na bhūtaṃ nābhūtaṃ na sattvaṃ nāsattvaṃ na tathā nānyathā na vitathā nāvitathā. Traidhātukaṃ tathāgatena dṛṣṭaṃ yathā bala-pṛthagjanā na pasyanti...

bodhicitta never thinks himself as existing either in saṃsāra or nirvāṇa. Hence, an Arhat aspiring to comprehend the ultimate truth should not think of himself as having gone beyond Saṃsāra and established himself in Nirvāṇa. Thus the *Puṇḍarīka* brings out clearly the difference between the Hīnayānic and Mahāyānic Nirvāṇa.

EXISTENCE OF SOUL IS DENIED BUT NIRVĀŅA IS NOT ANNIHILATION

Of late, many scholars have tried to elicit from the various passages of the Nikāyas dealing with Nirvāṇa the sense which Buddha had in his mind, or at least the sense with which the earliest Buddhism started. Most of the earlier scholars, who did the pioneering work in the field of Buddhism, namely, Childers, Burnouf, Hardy were inclined to interpret Nirvāṇa as annihilation or to use the common Indian term Ucchedavāda, a dogma which was opposed to the view of the early Buddhists. Professor La Vallée Poussin suggests that this conclusion of the scholars was an inevitable consequence of the denial of soul by the early Buddhists.

The conception of soul and the denial of its existence in the early Buddhist literature constitute as complicated a problem as the interpretation of Nirvāṇa. As the conception of one largely depends on the other, we shall state here briefly the position of the early Buddhists as to their conception of Pudgala (soul). The Theravādins are explicit in their statement that the five khandhas, viz., rūpa (material aggregates), vedanā (feeling), saññā (perception), sankhārā (impressions) and viññāṇa (consciousness) are the ultimates.

Māndūkya, ii. 31, 32: Svapnamāye yathā dṛṣṭe gandharvanagaraṃ yathā, tathā viśvam idaṃ dṛṣṭaṃ vedānteṣu vicakṣaṇaiḥ. Na nirodho na cotpattir na baddho na ca sādhakaḥ, na mumukṣur na vai mukta ity eṣā paramārthatā.

Māṇḍūkya, iv. 68: Yathā svapnamayo (māyāmayo or nirmitako) jīvo jāyate mriyate' pi ca, tathā jīvā amī sarve bhavanti na bhavanti ca.

¹ Cf. Samyutta, iii, p. 109: Yamaka harboured the wrong view that Buddha taught that a khināsavo bhikkhu kāyassa bhedā bhijjati vinassati na hoti param maranā.

² Nirvāņa, pp. vii f.

to which the composition of the world can be reduced. The mass (khandha or sangaha) of material aggregates, feeling, etc., would have remained in their original state dissociated from each other if avijjā (ignorance) had not stepped in and constituted (sankhata) out of them a being (sattā) with the sense of 'I'. When and how this avijjā of the truth-that the five khandhas remain ever dissociated 1 from each other and do not form an individual-came into existence and brought endless miseries has not been told by any teacher not even by Buddha (purimā koti na paññāyati avijjāya).2 Evidently, the five khandhas alone constitute a being and there is nothing as the sixth, which can be regarded as $Att\bar{a}$ or soul. But still one cannot deny the fact that of the five khandhas viññāna 3 (perception) is the most active constituent and is mainly instrumental in the formation of a being (nāmarupa). It is produced from Sankhārā,4 which again issue out of avijjā.5 According to Buddhaghosa, the belief in a self arises with the ninth link (viz., upādāna) 6 of the chain of causation. Hence, on upādāna hinge the origin and cessation of worldly existence. The belief in a self (ahankāra) is nothing but the false notion of the undisciplined men of the world 7 that one of the five khandhas is soul (atta). It corresponds

1 Usually the Pāli texts speak of Avijjā as ignorance of the four ariyasaccas.

In the Vis. M., (pp. 198, 525) it is equated to bhavatanhā (desire for existence) and in another place (p. 526) it is explained as "khandhānam rāsattham, āyatanānam āyatanattham, dhātūnam suñnattham, indriyānam adhipatiyattham, saccānam tathattham aviditam karotī ti pi avijjā. Paramatthato avijjamānesu itthipurisādīsu javati, vijjamānesu pi khandhādīsu na javatī ti avijjā. Api ca cakkhuviññānādīnam vatthārammanam paticcasamuppāda-paticcasamupannā ca dhammānam chādanato pi avijjā.

2 Vis. M., p. 525.

3 Viññāṇa=six forms of perception through the six organs of sense, viz., cakkhu, sota, ghāṇa, jivhā, kāya and mano.

4 Viz., puññābhisankhāro apuññābhisankhāro aneñjābhisankhāro, kāyasankhāro vacisankhāro cittasankhāro. Vibhanga, p. 135.

⁵ For a full explanation of Avijjā, see Vis. M., p. 526.

6 Vis. M., p. 569: Upādāna is of four kinds: kāmupādānam, diṭṭhu-pā°, sīlabbatupā°, and attavādupā°.

7 Dh. S. 1217; Vibh., p. 375.

to the false notion of Ahankāra as conceived by the teachers of the Sāṃkhya and Vedānta. The Buddhist conception of self (attā) is therefore as much imaginary as the notion of ahankāra in the Brāhmanic systems of philosophy.

Vasubandhu's appendix to the eighth chapter of the Abhidharmakosa and the first section of the Kathavatthu throw a flood of light upon the early Buddhist theory of soul. In fact, in the Nikāyas the existence of soul is not categorically denied in answer to direct questions on that point.2 What the early Buddhists held was that there is no such thing as soul in the sense which had come to be widely accepted previous to the advent of Buddhism, viz., as a persisting, unchangeable entity. "In Buddhism", says Mr. Shwe Zan Aung, "there is no actor apart from action, no percipient apart from perception. In other words there is no conscious subject behind consciousness... Subject, in Buddhism, is not the self-same permanent conscious object but merely a transitory state of consciousness".3 This conception is identical with Bergson's conception of mind or soul. spirit or ego. Mind or soul, according to Bergson, is not "some sort of permanent substantial reality on which the various states of consciousness are beaded as on a string.... The states of consciousness are each of them the entire mind in one of the phases of its continuous movement... They are not parts or fragments of the mind, members in an endless series which, for no reason, we choose to regard as a unity and call by a single name".4 In Buddhism, the

Stcherbatsky, Soul Theory of the Buddhists (published by the Royal Academy of Sciences, St. Petersburg); La Vallée Poussin, Fr. translation of the Kośa, ch. ix.

² E.g., Dīgha, I, pp. 185 ff; Stcherbatsky, Soul Theory of the Buddhists, (p. 846) shows that Buddha would have said 'tam jīvam tam sarīram' if the questioner had not meant by Jīva a soul "as a real living unit, controlling our actions from within". As an answer in the positive or negative about such a soul would be like the discussion about the hardness or softness of the hair of a tortoise, Buddha had to be silent on the point (avyākata).

³ Comp. of Phil., pp. 7, 8.

⁴ Philosophies, Ancient and Modern, Bergson by J. Solomon (Constable and Co., 1911), p. 36.

conception of soul as a permanent entity is not only wrong but works as an obstacle to the comprehension of the unreality and transitoriness of things of this world. When Buddhism arose, the term atman had become so very common, and so much associated with the attributes ascribed to it by the teachers of the early Upanisads that the Buddhists had no other alternative than to deny its existence as far as possible in order to wipe out from the minds of the people all the deep-rooted ideas. Besides, Buddhism started with the premises that everything whatsoever except Nirvana is unreal; 1 so there could not be any real soul. But it could not do away with the word atman, for the Buddhist texts tell us that the early expositors could not help using the current expressions in propounding their doctrines. They wanted to impress on the minds of the people that there is a continuity of the skandhas kept up by action (karma) but there is no persisting, unchangeable and indestructible entity to keep up that continuity. Professor Stcherbatsky puts it thus: "A personality (pudgala), in which other systems imagine the presence of a permanent spiritual principle, a soul (ātman), is in reality a bundle of elements or forces (saṃskārasamūha) and a stream of thought (santāna). It contains nothing permanent or substantial, it is anatma".2 This definition of soul struck at the root of the supposition of any permanent entity and served fully the purpose of Buddhism, viz., to show that there is nothing in the world to which one can cling as real and permanent and so he must develop a state of mind in which he must drift to the ultimate, real state called Nirvāṇa, without having anything to cling to in the intermediate process.

FOUR LINES OF INTERPRETATION IN THE NIKĀYAS

Scholars who took the passages in the Buddhist literature on the denial of soul too literally, without considering the

¹ The nature of unreality varies with the two forms of Buddhism, Hinayāna and Mahāyāna; for a discussion of this, see infra.

² Con. of N., p. 8.

motive for the denial of the soul made at a particular place and in reply to the query of a particular person, believed that the early Buddhists did not admit the existence of soul and that hence the finality reached by perfect beings was complete annihilation, the absence of existence altogether. There were also some scholars, not very many among the earlier group, who inclined to the view that Nirvana was not annihilation but an inexpressible state corresponding to the Vedantic Brahman. All these scholars, although they held one or other of the two views, complete annihilation or eternal, inexpressible existence, often admitted that Buddha was an agnostic and did not give a definite answer to any of the queries of a metaphysical character, viz., whether there is a soul, or what really is Nirvana. Thus, the opinions of scholars can be classified as follows:-

- (i) That Nirvāna is annihilation; 1
- (ii) That Nirvāna is an inconceivable and inexpressible eternal state:
- (iii) That Nirvāņa has been left undefined (avyākrta) by Buddha.2 To these may be added the interpretation of Buddhaghosa
 - (iv) That Nirvāna is eternal, pure and infinite consciousness.

NIKĀYAS, A MOSAIC OF MATERIALS OF DIFFERENT TIMES AND

It should be observed that all those scholars, who arrived at these conclusions, cited passages from the texts of the Nikāyas in support of their findings, and that the views taken by them in most cases followed naturally from those passages. In these circumstances, we have to admit that

According to Colebrooke, Nirvana=profound calm;

¹ Cf. Suzuki, Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism, p. 351 quoting the Vimalakīrtisūtra: "Non-activity and eternal annihilation were cherished by Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas".

² See La Vallée Poussin, Nirvāṇa, pp. 9, 87 ff.; also E.R.E., II, p. 377 and his Way to Nirvana, p. 134; Beal, Catena etc., p. 172.

[&]quot; Hardy, Burnouf, Childers, Nirvana=extinction;

[&]quot; Max Müller, Nirvāņa=rest;

[&]quot; Oldenberg, Nirvāṇa=supreme happiness.

the Nikāyas as a whole do not present a coherent system of philosophy and doctrine, but the question is whether, in view of the fact that the Nikāyas took centuries to grow and attain a definite shape, we are entitled to expect from them a coherent system. The Nikāyas are, in fact, a mosaic made up of materials of various times and places, wide apart from each other; hence, it would not be reasonable to expect from them a coherent interpretation of Nirvāṇa. The ancient teachers, too, were puzzled in regard to the correct interpretation of Nirvana, but they never attempted to discover a consistency in the passages of the Nikāyas as a whole. It will be seen from the discussions preserved in the Kathavatthu and the Abhidharmakośa that these disputants cited a set of passages in support of their contentions, and not any particular Nikāya or Sūtra. To these ancient disputants each saying was independent, and carried the weight which a number of sayings would do. It is, however, striking that the disputants never questioned the authenticity of the passages cited by their opponents. This shows that a disputant only preferred one set of passages to another and built his theories on that set. The Nikāyas evidently are only a collection of these various passages put in a uniform setting and given the garb of the sūtras. Attempts, of course, are now being made to sift these sutras and find out the various strata, but it is doubtful how far the efforts will be fruitful in the absence of new evidences. It may be contended that a Piṭaka is a collection of texts made by a particular school of Buddhist thought, and that consistency should be apparent or discoverable in the passages of that Pitaka. The contention seems reasonable, but the facts are against it. Professor Poussin has discovered in the Nikāyas many passages cited by the Sarvāstivādins in the Kośa in support of their contentions, while Mrs. Rhys Davids and Mr. Aung have identified many of the citations of the opponents of the Theravadins in the Pāli Piṭaka, the collection of the Theravadins. This fact indicates that the collection of Pāli sūtras was not made with any sectarian motive and that the compilers of the Pāli Tripiţaka included in it all the sayings that they could

find out, excepting, very probably, some which went directly against their creeds and dogmas, and for the rejection of which they took the plea of unauthenticity. It is now fairly well known that each Nikāya developed by itself under the special attention of a group of reciters called Bhānakas who confined themselves exclusively to the preservation of that particular collection.2 Buddhaghosa, although an orthodox adherent of the Theravada school, had to acknowledge that even these bhanakas differed among themselves regarding the use and sense of certain technical expressions.3 Thus, we see, that even the orthodox supporters of the Pāli Tripitakas believed that the Nikāyas did not agree in all their interpretations. We should also bear in mind the significant remark found in the Kośa 4 that many sūtras were lost, that many of the sūtras underwent slight changes, and that new ideas and expositions were woven around them in such a way that the accretions conveyed a sense different from that of the kernel around which they were set.5

Nievāņa, the inconceivable state, the infinite consciousness

On account of this admixture of materials, it is possible to make a selection of passages of the Pāli Nikāyas in such a way as to substantiate any one of the four interpretations of Nirvāṇa to which we have referred. The passages which give the impression that Nirvāṇa is annihilation, if read in the light of other passages, which interpret Nirvāṇa as an inconceivable existence, may convey a sense different from annihilation.

- 1 A hint to this effect is seen in the Dipavamsa, ch. iv.
- 2 Sum. Vil., p. 15.
- 3 Vis. M., p. 95: Majjhima-bhāņaka Revatthera; p. 275: idam tāva Dīghabhāņaka-Samyuttabhāņakānam matam. Majjhimabhāņaka pana etc. See also pp. 286, 431.
- 4~Kośa,ii. 55, p. 278 fn. sūtrāni ca bahūny antarhitāni mūlasangītibhramsāt.
- ⁵ Cf. Prof. Poussin's remark in his Nirvāṇa, p. 9: "La vieille tradition scripturaire (Petit Véhicule), codifiée, renouvelée, amplifiée par les écoles, est mal datée, en partie tardive, point toujours claire, contradictoire sinon dans ses dogmes du moins dans ses tendences". See also p. 133.

Prof. Keith has, for instance, shown that the simile of the extinction of the flame, which is one of the many important similes relied on by scholars favouring the view of annihilation, has been worked out in the Aggivacchagotta sutta to show that it is not extinction but disappearance in the "deep, unmeasurable, difficult to fathom" state of existence 1. Buddhaghosa has drawn attention to one or two passages in the Dīgha 2 and Majjhima 3 Nikāyas which present us with quite a new interpretation of Nibbāna. The passage runs thus:

Viññāṇam anidassanam anantaṃ sabbato pabhaṃ. Ettha āpo ca paṭhavī tejo vāyo na gādhati, Ettha dīghan ca rassañ ca anuṃ thūlaṃ subhāsubhaṃ, Ettha nāmañ ca rūpañ ca asesam uparujjhati, Viññānassa nirodhena etth' etam uparujjhatīti ⁴.

On a certain occasion a bhikkhu was advised by Buddha to put his question thus:—"What is that place where (distinctions like) water and earth, fire and air have no footing, where long and short, fine and coarse, good and bad, or name and form cease absolutely?" instead of asking "Where do the four elements earth, water, fire and air disappear absolutely?". (The answer quoted above was given to it.) "It is viññāṇa (consciousness), which is signless, infinite ⁵, radiant on all sides

¹ Keith, B. Phil., pp. 65-6: "The comparison is indeed significant, for there is no doubt that the Indian idea of the extinction of fire was not that which occurs to us of utter annihilation, but rather that the flame returns to the primitive, pure, invisible state of fire, in which it existed prior to its manifestation in the form of visible fire".

² Dīgha, I, p. 223; Sum. Vil. in the I. H. Q., II, i.

⁸ Majjhima, I, p. 329; Papañcasūdanī, I, p. 413.

⁴ Cf. the Majjhima Nikāya (I, p. 329) passage: Viññāṇam anidassanam anantam sabbato pabham, tam paṭhaviyā paṭhavittena ananubhūtam, āpassa āpattena ananubhūtam, etc. The Papañcasūdani (I, p. 413) comments on it as follows:—Padadvayena (i.e., viññānam anidassanam) pi nibbānam eva vuttam. Anantan ti tayidam uppāda-vaya-antarhitattā anantam nāma....Sabbato pabhan ti sabbato pabhāsampannam. Nibbānato hi añño dhammo sappabhataro vā jotimattaro vā parisuddhataro vā paṇḍarataro vā n'atthi, etc.

⁵ Buddhaghosa says that it is infinite (ananta) because it has no origin, no decay, no duration (sthiti) and no change.

(sabbato pabham) ¹ where all the distinctions mentioned above cease, and where the (constituted) viññāṇa, after cessation, disappears ". Buddhaghosa in commenting upon this passage says that the first viññāṇa is another name for Nibbāna ² while the second viññāṇa is one of the five khandhas. His interpretation, it seems, is based upon a few Nikāya passages. In the Samyutta Nikāya ³, Buddha referring to the parinibbāna of Vakkali bhikkhu said that the wicked Māra was searching for the viññāṇa (consciousness) ⁴ of Vakkali, who had been just dead, and predicted that Māra's attempt would not be successful because Vakkali had passed away (parinibbuto) with viññāṇa which cannot be localised (apatiṭṭhita). The sense of apatiṭṭhita-viññāṇa is given elsewhere in the Samyutta Nikāya ⁵, where it is explained as consciousness which requires

1 J. d'Alwis' suggestion of 'pabham' for 'paham' has been preferred here. For a note on this, see Sacred Books of the Buddhists, II, p. 283n. Buddhaghosa, it seems, preferred the word "Papam" (from Sanskrit Prapā=a shed on the roadside for providing passengers with water, Aufrecht, Abhi. Ratnamālā, p. 283) to "Pabham" more for maintaining the analogy between Nibbāna and sea just mentioned before this passage. He says that just as in a great sea no landing-place is provided for seafarers, so also in Nibbāna there is no particular name corresponding to the 38 kammatthānas (bases for meditation), through which a monk aims at Nibbāna, i.e., through whatever kammatthānas (compared here to landing-places) one may reach Nibbāna, there is nothing to distinguish it in Nibbāna. See also ante, p. 148, n. 4.

For Prof. O. Franke's notes, see his Digha Nikāya (Quellen der

Religions Geschichte), Leipzig, p. 166n.

2 Sum. Vil. (I. H. Q., II, i), p. 33: Tattha viññātabban ti viññāṇaṃ; nibbānass' etam nāmam. With regard to the second 'viññāṇaa' Buddhaghosa says "Tattha viññāṇan ti carimaka-viññāṇam pi abhisaṅkhāra-viññānan ti" (Cf. Vis. M., p. 689). He holds that the viññāṇa, the last consciousness of an arhat, is abhisaṅkhāra (constituted) and that it ceases like the flame of a lamp to pass into a state of indistinguishability (apaṇṇakabhāva). Cf. Keith, B. Phil., pp. 47, 48 where Prof. Keith points out that Prof. Franke's attempt to prove that there is much of negativism in early Buddhism favours the view that Nibbāna of early Buddhism was more idealistic than negativistic. See also O. Franke's notes on Nibbāna in the Z. D. M. G., lxix, pp. 475-481.

3 Samyutta, III, p. 124; Dhp. A., I, p. 432: appatitthitena ca

viññāņena Godhiko Kulaputto parinibbuto.

4 i.e., Patisandhiviññāṇa, see Vbh. A., pp. 161, 192f.; Dhp. A., I, p. 432.

5 Samyutta, II, p. 65; III, pp. 53-61.

no support (patitithā or ārammaṇa) for its origin'. It arises only when the attachment (rāga) to rūpa (material elements of the body), and the other four khandhas is removed. It is unconstituted, devoid of growth and independent of any cause and condition and hence free. Being free it is steady; being steady it is happy; being happy it is without any fear of change for the worse; being fearless it attains parinibbāna.

In commenting on this passage Buddhaghosa further says that an arhat never has any maññanā (thought-construction)1 in regard to the four elements or Nibbana or anything whatsoever, which a puthujjana or a khināsava2 (but not yet an arhat) has. Buddhaghosa thus tries to show that Nibbana is inexpressible, infinite and that any attempt to establish a relation between it and a being is a delusion of the mind. He is also constrained to say that such a description of Nibbana had to be given as a set-off to the arguments of Brahmā, hinting thereby that even such statements are not permissible as Nibbana is inexpressible. From such interpretations of the Nikāya passages as well as from his exposition of Nibbana in the Visuddhimagga, treated later on,4 it will be apparent that he, far from supporting nihilism, held that Nibbana is a transcendental, indescribable state. In fact, there was hardly any school of Buddhism, which favoured the view of annihilation, and so it seems that the opinions of scholars who supported annihilation do not rest on very sure foundations. Prof. La Vallée Poussin has criticised in detail the views of these scholars. He has given the gist of their views, showing the weak points in them along with his learned dissertation on

¹ The Nikāya passages referred to here (Majjhima, I, p. 4) were not in harmony with Prof. Stcherbatsky's theory and so they did not appeal to him. See his remarks in Con. of N., p. 42n. The "maññana" of Buddhaghosa reminds us of one of the passages of the Prajñāpāramitās, in which they assert that all dharmas are like dreams and that Bodhisattvas 'svapnam api na manyante, svapnena na manyante, etc.; see, e.g., Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaves 225, 399b: saṃsāraṃ saṃsārato na vikalpayati, nirvāṇaṃ nirvāṇato na vikalpayati and so forth.

² For distinction between an Arhat and a Khinasava, see Papanca-sūdani, I, p. 42.

³ Papancasūdanī, II, p. 413.

⁴ See infra.

the interpretation of Nirvāṇa (Études sur l'histoire de religions, 1925). As in his work he has reviewed most of the writings of his predecessors on Nirvāṇa, we need not deal with them again. For the present purpose, it is sufficient to state his opinion and those of Profs. Berriedale Keith and Stcherbatsky, the three latest exponents of the subject.

Prof. La Vallée Poussin on Nirvāņa

Prof. La Vallée Poussin starts with the statement that it is possible to distinguish Buddhism on the one hand as popular and devotional, and on the other as clerical and mystic.1 The former is meant for the laity and the latter for the monks. The popular and devotional form of Buddhism holds out the prospect of paradise to the laity. It is only a means to an end, for the layman in one of his later lives is to become a monk and take to the clerical and mystic side of Buddhism and ultimately attain Nirvana. Prof. Poussin then proceeds to define Nirvana. He says that Nirvana is undoubtedly the highest happiness, putting a stop to duhkha and transmigration. It implies the absence of merit as well as of demerit. It requires a purely ascetic discipline to bring the desires or passions to an end.2 The monks unlike the laity do not seek paradise, for even the life in paradise ends with the exhaustion of one's good karma.3 They therefore seek a state which affords eternal (dhruva) beatitude (sukha).4 The very common appellation to denote this state is Amatapadam (immortality), which Prof. Poussin considers to be a very old and characteristic expression used to describe Nirvana. He thinks that the notion of deliverance has been made precise in the early

¹ Nirvāna, pp. 1,7, 8. Cf. Karma and Jñāna of Brāhmanic philosophy; the former leads to svarga (heaven) while the latter to mokṣa (emancipation).

² Nirvāņa, p. 4.

³ Cf. Chāndogya, 8, 1, 6; Tad yatheha karmajito lokah kṣīyate, evam evāmutra puṇyajito lokah kṣīyate (just as the things produced by efforts of people are exhausted by their use, so also heavenly lives, etc., earned by sacrifices, merits, etc., are exhausted by their use).

⁴ Nirvāna, pp. 48, 60.

Buddhist literature. It is an abode, supreme and definite. but yet this notion has not been coloured by any positive philosophic doctrine or by speculation upon God, soul, or being in itself. He, as also Dr. E. J. Thomas 2, refers to the fact that the early Buddhists did not speculate about such Upanisadic doctrine as the Parabrahman which was developed by the Vedantists long after Buddhism. They knew only of the highest heaven called Brahmaloka. Dr. Thomas remarks in connection with the Brahmajala Sutta that "among all these views there is no expressed contradiction or even recognition of the Vedantic theory of Atman or Brahman as the one ultimate reality"3. Prof. Poussin also points out that it is not correct to hold that Buddhism originated purely in opposition to Brāhmanic theories. He says that there is nothing which permits us to affirm that Nirvana was conceived in opposition to any Brāhmanic theory. Nirvāna, Immortality, or Deliverance appears to be a rudimentary idea free from all metaphysical speculations. It is connected more with myths than with metaphysics. Nirvāna is an invisible abode where the saint disappears, often in the middle of a flame, or in a kind of apotheosis.4 In short, the Hinayana Buddhism from the time of the Mahāvagga to Buddhaghosa emanated, so to say, from the Yoga almost without any mixture. The Immortal State, the Inexpressible is what a saint aims at, because it is the deliverance from birth and death. It is, however, not possible to establish any relation, philosophical or ontological. between the Immortal and the world of beings who transmigrate. Immortality is the name given to Nirvāna; in other words, perfect happiness, extinction, detachment are terms which are devoid of doctrinal complexities, and which, in fact, appear to signify merely the extinction of the fire of desire, or, to put it in another way, constitute the road to the Immortal State, or the Immortal State itself.⁵ It is obvious that Prof. Poussin wants to contradict the long-

¹ Nirvāna, p. 49: "La notion de la deliverance était précise: l'ascète ne doute pas que la délivrance ne soit un séjour suprême et definitif".

² Life of Buddha, p. 200.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Nirvāņa, p. 57

⁵ Ibid., pp. 53-4.

advocated view that Nirvāṇa is annihilation. He cites several passages to show that the self-originating fire in which a saint consumed himself, as also the saint himself, was not annihilated. While summarising his views, he gives the following different uses of the term Nirvāṇa:

- (i) The Nirvāṇa, the Absolute, the Uncaused which is by itself the Destruction of passion, of duḥkha.
- (ii) The complete possession of Nrvāṇa, which reduces all passions and all new existences to the quality of anutpattika (not being capable of reproducing); in other words, that which constitutes the saintship, the deliverance from thought (or conceptions), the Sopadhiśeṣa Nirvāṇa (Nirvāṇa with corporal residue).
- (iii) The consciousness of the possession of Nirvāṇa, consciousness obtained in ecstasy which is beatitude, and which is the best form of Nirvāṇa in the world, and properly speaking, the only Nirvāṇa.
- (iv) The possession of the Samādhi of the cessation of ideas and sensations (samjñāvedayitanirodha), a possession obtainable by saints, perfect or imperfect, a samādhi which appears like entering into Nirvāṇa, and of which one becomes conscious through the body only, since the thought is then stopped.
- (v) The entering into Nirvāṇa at the last moment of thought, the end of duḥkha, the entering into Anupadhiśeṣa Nirvāna (Nirvāna without any corporal residue).
- (vi) The possession of Nirvāṇa relating to such and such a passion which carries with it the quality of not being able to reproduce itself for such passion and such future existences; an incomplete sanctity which one enjoys in ecstasy.²

Prof. Poussin has endeavoured to show that the Nirvana of the early Buddhists is not annihilation; it is a state which may well bear comparison with the paradise of the laity but it is free from the implication of a life in paradise, i.e., unlike the life in a paradise, it is eternal (dhruva), it is beatitude, but without any sensation even of

bliss. It is beyond merit and demerit, a quiescent state which is obtainable in this life by saints when they establish themselves in the samādhi of samjñāveditanirodha (cessation of ideas and sensations). In this state as the thought is completely stopped, the saint feels only by his body the supreme bliss. He however warns us not to identify the supreme state of bliss with the Vedāntic Parabrahman, for the Buddhists had not yet arrived at that conception. His reason for holding this opinion is, chiefly, that the early Buddhists were not interested, to any appreciable extent, in metaphysical speculations, but were rather busy with myths. Hence, their conception of Nirvāna was not of a metaphysical nature but just the utmost possible extension of the conception of paradise.

PROF. STCHERBATSKY ON NIRVANA

Prof. Stcherbatsky protests strongly against the view of Prof. Poussin that Nirvāṇa is a sort of ultimate conceivable existence—a view suggested by the expression Amatapadam,² often used to describe Nirvāṇa, and by the descriptions of the same found in the Milindapañha and the Nikāyas. Prof. Stcherbatsky does not examine the various passages of the Piṭakas and other works, which influenced Prof. Poussin's conclusions. It would appear from the Conception of Nir-

1 Cf. Dhammasangani, 1389, 1579 ff.: Nibbāna is not to be taken as accompanied by pīti (delight), sukha (happiness), or upekkhā (equanimity). In the I.H.Q., IV, p. 247, Prof. Poussin says, "Nirvāṇa from the beginning is perfect happiness, the summum bonum, much better than any paradise, not a paradise (of course) without any conceivable relations with any form of existence. The canonic literature states clearly that the happiness of Nirvāṇa, end of suffering, is blissful because it is not vedita".

² In this connection we may mention that Amatapadam does not always necessarily mean "heavenly state". The word 'mṛtyu' (Pāli maccu), in the lines of the *Taitt. Upa.* 2. I. I: Brahmavidāpnoti param, na punar mṛtyave, and *Chā. Upa.* 7. 26. 2: Tad ekam paśyati na paśyo mṛtyum paśyati, is explained by the commentators as neither heavenly existence nor eternal death but as pramāda (negligence, error) and moha (delusion). This comment is supported by the *Dhammapada* line: Pamādo maccuno padam. See *P. T. S. Dict.*, sv. Maccu.

vāṇa as well as from his earlier work the Central Conception of Buddhism that Prof. Stcherbatsky bases his findings purely on the study of the Abhidharmakosa of Vasubandhu, and ignores the fact that the Kosa does not present us with the original doctrines which the Piṭakas are supposed to preserve. He also does not attach importance to the fact that the Theravādins and Sarvāstivādins do not agree as to the nature of disintegration of constituted elements (saṃskṛṭavastus), which is clearly hinted at in the discussion in the Kathāvatthu¹ on the theory of she Sarvāstivādins that "all exists". In his treatment of the discussion of this topic, however, he refers to the fact that the Vibhajyavādins (=Theravādins) did not always agree with the Sarvāstivādins.

In view of the fact mentioned above, it is doubtful how far Prof. Stcherbatsky was right in attributing to Buddha the views found in the Kośa that "(i) Buddha was led to a denial of every permanent principle, (ii) that the originality of Buddha's position consisted in denying substantiality altogether, and (iii) that forsaking the Monism of the Upanisads and the Dualism of the Sāmkhya, he established a system of the most radical pluralism".3 These might have been the views of the later Vaibhāsikas but were certainly not those of the early Buddhists, not to speak of Buddha himself. Many passages can be, and have been, cited from the Pitakas 4 to show that Nirvana is a reality, that it is unspeakable and possesses the sign of peacefulness, the taste of immortality, that it offers consolation, that it is unborn, uncreated, and indestructible. In the face of the glowing descriptions that are to be found of the state of Nirvāna in early post-canonical works,5 it is difficult to agree with Prof. Stcherbatsky that Nirvana is nothing but

¹ Kvu., I. 6, pp. 115 f.

² Central Conception of Buddhism, pp. 43, 76 ff.; Keith's B. Phil., p. 168; Con. of N., pp. 3, 27; for bibliography on the topic "All exists" see Kośa, v. 24, pp. 49, 50 fn.

³ Con. of N., p. 3.

⁴ See besides Prof. Poussin's Nirvāna, Heiler's Die buddhistische Versenkung, München, pp. 36-42; P. T. S. Dict. sv. Nibbāna.

⁵ e.g., Thera- and Theri-gatha; Milindapanha.

eternal death and that it is an unconstituted element (asamskrta-dhātu), because it is tantamount to the absolute annihilation of the constituted elements (samskrta-dharmas) -"a kind of entity where there is no consciousness". In fact, Prof. Stcherbatsky's opinion makes it resemble one of the heretical doctrines condemned by Buddha, viz., Asaññi attā hoti arogo param maranā (the soul remains after death as an unconscious but healthy entity).2 Without multiplying instances, we can refer to the last few lines of the Kevaddha Sutta³ to show that there are passages in the early Buddhist works which go directly against the conclusions of Prof. Stcherbatsky. If Nibbāna is extreme happiness (paramasukha), a place of perfect peace 4 (santivarapadam), an object of realisation (sacchikiriyā),5 it is safer to accept the opinion of Prof. Poussin that Nirvana is the highest conceivable paradisaical existence than to agree with Prof. Stcherbatsky that Nirvana is simply an end of the samskrta dharmas—a stone-like life without a vestige of consciousness.

In short, Prof. Steherbatsky makes Buddha a materialist and an annihilationist (Ucchedavādin) so severely condemned by Buddha. Prof. Stcherbatsky admits this anomalous position of his exposition, and endeavours to extricate himself from the anomaly by stating that Buddha's materialism and annihilationism were of a modified nature, because, as he says, the elements constituting a being were not only material, but both material and spiritual, and hence, according to him, Buddha was not an out-and-out materialist like the Carvakas, or like Ajita Kesakambalin and Pakudha Kaccayana, but was partially so. Then, as regards Buddha being not an out-and-out annihilationist he points to the moral law, the strength and importance of which were recognised by Buddha; Buddha meant that the being, which is only a conglomeration of "evanescent elements", passes through a series of existences governed by the moral law, ultimately to be annihilated

¹ Central Conception of Buddhism, p. 53.

² Majjhima, II, pp. 230 f.

³ Digha, I, p. 223; for its commentary see Sum. Vil. in the I.H.Q., vol., II, i; see ante, pp. 148 ff.

⁴ Majjhima, I, p. 257.

⁵ Ibid., I, pp. 56, 63, 510.

or, in other words, to attain Nirvana or eternal death. Hence, according to Prof. Stcherbatsky, Uccheda or annihilation takes place not after one life but a series of lives.

NIRVĀŅA AS VIEWED BY PROF. KEITH

Prof. Keith on the basis of the Nikāya passages where there is an emphatic assertion of the existence of Nirvana as something unfathomable, unborn, uncreated, unconstituted. and so forth,—a description echoed in the works of Nāgārjuna,-and also on the strength of the discussions in the Buddhistic literature on the existence of the Tathagata during his life-time or after his decease, thinks that the Madhyamaka view can be traced in the Nikāyas, and that there are "positive assurances of the reality of something over and above the empirical world".1 He says further that "the great sermon at Benares on the characteristic of that which is not self does not deny in express terms that there may exist another realm of existence which is exempt from empirical determination, and which therefore must be regarded as absolutely real".2 Though Prof. Keith thinks that the view of a section of the early disciples about the "existence of an absolute reality admits of serious support" and that passages or expressions can be traced in the Nikāyas having the colour or flavour of the Brāhmanic Upanisads or the Mahābhārata, he puts forward the proviso that on the basis of these coincidences it would not be proper to say that the Buddhist Nirvana is "essentially the absolute parallel with the Brahman", for the Buddhists "like every new belief were largely compelled to put their wine in old bottles".3 He also does not ignore the fact that there are ample evidences in the Nikāyas to show that "Buddha was a genuine agnostic",4 though he himself is not much in favour of the view. In short, Prof. Keith is of opinion that the Nikāvas do not teach annihilation, or eternal death. He finds in Nirvana only a negative aspect of the Absolute or the Void and would not recognize it to be the

¹ Keith, B. Phil., p. 67.

² Ibid., p. 61.

³ Ibid., p. 68.

⁴ Ibid., p. 63.

same as Brahman of the Upanisads or the Vedantists. Prof. Poussin also would subscribe to this view if it be taken as the Mahayanic conception of Nirvana, for, according to him, the Hinayanic Nirvana is something definite and real, a tangible reality. Prof. Stcherbatsky rises above all hesitations and asserts that the Hinayanic Nirvana is eternal death, while the Mahāyānic Nirvāna is eternal life, and that the latter is the same as the Monism or Advaita Brahman of the Vedāntists.1 Though he may be partial to Vasubandhu and Nāgārjuna, he cannot be justified in ignoring or explaining away the passages of the Nikāyas which interpret Nirvana differently from Vasubandhu. The opinion of Prof. Poussin that "there is a great deal of Mādhyamika philosophy in the Pāli canon",2 and the reference of Prof. Keith to passages or suttas of the Nikāyas indicative of the reasonableness of holding such an opinion, appear startling to Prof. Stcherbatsky, and against them he holds without mentioning any authority or citing any passage, that "it is quite impossible to maintain that Hinayana is an advaita system" 3 and that it is going too far to see a "full-fledged Prajñāpāramitā" in the Majjhima Nikāya.

Now that we have stated the views of the latest exponents of the Buddhist conception of Nirvāṇa, we shall proceed to examine some of them in the light of evidences yielded by the Pāli works.

Is samjñāvedayitanirodha a foretaste of Nirvāņa?

It is, however, striking that both Profs. Stcherbatsky and Poussin have tried to form an idea of Nirvāṇa on the basis of the quiescent state attained by a yogin at the highest altitude of his meditation. Both agree that it is this quiescence which is aimed at by all saints, including the arhats. To Prof. Stcherbatsky, Nirvāṇa was the highest form

¹ Dr. F. Otto Schrader in his article on Nivāṇa in the J.P.T.S. (1904-5) favours the metaphysical conception of the Absolute as the real interpretation of Nirvāṇa of the early Buddhists.

² E.R.E., sv. Nirvāṇa. Prof. Poussin has also traced Vijñānavāda ideas in the Anguttara; see his Nirvāna, p. 65.

³ Con. of N., p. 42 fn.

of quiescence imaginable and hence it is a condition where there is no vestige of consciousness—an absolute annihilation of life, while to Prof. Poussin it is a condition where the mind (citta) does not function, but the body is pervaded by an extremely pleasant feeling; the mind, being inactive, does not enjoy the pleasure.

Prof. Poussin formed his impression mainly from the utterances of perfected saints in the Udāna and the Theraand Theri-gatha. His conception of Hinavanic Nirvana appears to my mind to be the magnified form of the pleasant sensation felt by saints in the second and third trances. The Nikāuas often speak of the pleasant sensation in the second and third trance as similar to that of a person when his body is besmeared with fine powder by an expert bath attendant: but they do not speak about the sensation felt by a saint while in Nirvana. Prof. Poussin is justified in regarding the highest meditation of Samiñāvedita-(or vedavita-) nirodha as a foretaste of Nirvana in this world, but his view that the body of the saint is pervaded by blissful sensation is unwarranted.2 The Pāli texts are quite clear about their definition of this highest meditation. In the Mahāparinibbāna Sutta,3 Buddha entered into meditation before attaining parinirvana and rose from the lowest to the highest samādhi, the Saññāvedayitanirodha, when Ananda, imperfect as he was, took him to be dead (parinibbuta). This is the highest meditation to which an adept can reach.4 The condition of a person in this meditation is almost the same as that of a dead man. The Samyutta Nikāya⁵ explains the differences thus: There is a complete cessation of the activities in a dead man as well as in a person in the highest samādhi,—i.e., of the (i) physical activities (kāvasankhāro) e.g., inhalation and exhalation, (ii)

¹ Con. of N., p. 28.

² Nirvāṇa pp. 83-4: la possession du recueillement de la cessation de l'idée et de la sensation, possession réservée aux saints complets ou incomplets, recueillement semblable à l'entrée dans le Nirvāṇa et dont on a conscience par le corps puisque la pensée y est interrompue.

³ Dīgha, II, p. 156.

⁴ M. Vr., p. 48.

⁵ Samyutta, IV, pp. 293 f. cf. Majjhima, I, p. 301.

speech activities (vacisankharo) e.g., reflection and deliberation (vitakkavicāra), and (iii) mental activities (cittasankhāro). e.a., ideation and feeling (saññā ca vedanā ca)1. The life (āyu) of the man engaged in meditation is not exhausted as also his internal heat $(usm\bar{a})$, and his organs of sense remain in a placid condition, while in the deceased person there is no life $(\bar{a}yu)$ and no internal heat $(usm\bar{a})$ and his sense-organs are defunct. In the Saññavedavitanirodha, a saint cannot at will rise from it. Before entering into the samādhi, he fixes the time-limit after which he would revert to the ordinary state of consciousness and he does so at the fixed moment. This meditation in which the mind. the body, and the power of the speech completely cease to function may be likened to the condition of deep sleep (susupti) of a man. It is similar to the Upanisadic conception of "deep-sleep consciousness" in which there is no consciousness either of the objective world or of the self2. The Pāli texts nowhere mention a blissful sensation enjoyed by the body apart from the mind. The feeling of ease enjoyed by an ascetic in the highest trance is generated within the body, and not by any contact with an external material The verses in the Thera- and Theri-gatha and the passages in the Mahāparinibbāna sutta describing the last trance of Buddha only express the ecstasy experienced by a perfected saint when he is in the highest trance. It is really the foretaste of what he is going to experience permanently. At the Arhat stage, i.e., on the attainment of the Sopadisesanibbanadhatu, he is assured of the fact that the supreme bliss in the inexpressible form of existence is going to be permanently his after the dissolution of his physical body.

¹ Cf. Patañjali Yoga-Sūtra, I. 2: Yogaścittavrttinirodhah.

² Ranade, Constructive Survey of Upanisadic Philosophy, p. 269.

³ There are passages in the Nikāyas, in which it is said that "vimokkhe kāyena phassitvā viharati" (Anguttara, II, 90). The Vimokkhas do not refer to Nibbbāna but to the eight meditations (Dīgha, III, pp. 261-2) or to the three Samādhis called Animitta, Appanihita, and Suññata vimokkhas (Vis. M., p. 658). These refer only to experiences of meditating saints felt within themselves and not by coming into contact with something external.

or in other words, he is going to be established in the Anupādisesa-nibbānadhātu permanently. The close relation between the meditation of Saññāvedayitanirodha and Nibbāna will be apparent from the verses of the $Ud\bar{a}na$ describing the parinibbāna of Dabba Mallaputta:

Abhedi kāyo nirodhi saññā vedanā pi 'tidahaṃsu sabbā, vupasamiṃsu saṅkhārā viññāṇam attham agamā ti. [The body is disintegrated, perception stops, all sensations are burnt away, the (three) activities cease and the (constituted) consciousness disappears.]

The Saññavedayitanirodha, therefore, is very similar to parinibbāna. The Majjhima Nikāya¹ adds that a perfect saint not only attains it but also destroys his āsavas (impurities) by knowledge and thus goes beyond the clutches of Māra. Hence, the Saññavedayitanirodha of a saint is tantamount to a foretaste of Nibbāna only when it is accompanied by the other necessary conditions, viz., destruction of āsavas, insight into the truth and so forth.

IS NIRVĀŅA ETERNAL DEATH?

Prof. Stcherbatsky thinks that Nirvāṇa being allied to Saṃjñāvedayitanirodha, it may be regarded as a state without a vestige of consciousness. In the account of Buddha's parinirvāṇa, Buddha enters into the Saṃjñāvedayitanirodha but he does not stay there permanently. He comes down to the lowest and then rises again to attain parinirvāṇa in the fourth dhyāna.² If Nirvāṇa had been a permanent form of Saṃjñāvedayitanirodha, then Buddha would have remained there and attained mahāparinirvāṇa.

To prove his contention that Nirvāṇa is eternal death, Prof. Stcherbatsky takes support from another statement in the Mahāparinibbāna-sutta commented upon in the Mādhya-mika-Vrtti.³ The passage is:

Pradotyasy eva nirvānam vimoksas tasya cetasah.

He attributes to the Vaibhāṣikas the comment which follows this passage in the Vṛṭṭi. The Vaibhāṣikas,4 as

¹ Majjhima, I, p. 160; III, p. 45.

³ M. Vr., p. 525.

² Dīgha, II, p. 156.

⁴ Con. of N., p. 191.

is supposed by him, assert in refuting the abhava theory of the Sautrantikas that there is something 'in which desire is extinct', and that it is not merely 'extinct desire' as the Sautrantikas think.1 In the Sanskrit text there is no word or hint about the extinction of consciousness. All that is said is about tṛṣṇā. Prof. Stcherbatsky, however, in his translation says that every desire (also consciousness) is extinct (at final Nirvana).2 Probably his addition "and consciousness" in the line was suggested by the line that follows, viz., "yasmin sati cetaso vimokso bhavati." He translates cetaso vimoksah as "consciousness is quite extinct." It is difficult to accept his English rendering and it is not at all clear why he should prefer "consciousness" to "mind" as the English equivalent of cetas. The Pali version of the line, "Pajjotass' eva nibbanam vimokho cetaso ahū ti",3 was uttered by Anuruddha to describe Buddha's Nirvāṇa. Buddhaghosa in commenting upon this passage says that vimokkho means the removal of all screens hindering vision, and that the extinction of the flame indicates the state of non-manifestation.4 Prof. Stcherbatsky may have other reasons for such an opinion, but it is difficult to agree with him in regard to the fact that the early Buddhists generally, including the Theravadins, regarded Nirvāņa as an inanimate reality. In the Kathāvatthu and the Dhammasaigani, Nibbana has been qualified as acetasika, the English rendering of which, according to Mrs. Rhys Davids, should be "not a property of the mind", or according to Prof. Poussin, "where mind does not function any more".5 Here acetasika does not mean inanimate substance, but it is a state where the individual citta (=manovijnāna)

2 Con. of N., App., p. 191.

3 Digha, II, p. 157; see Otto Franke, Z.D.M.G., xlix, p. 476.

5 Also "Unmental, automatic" see Points of the Controversy, pp. 57ff., 249.

¹ Nirvāņa as Kṣayamātra is discussed in the Vis. M., p. 508; see infra, p. 173.

⁴ Sum. Vil. (Burmese ed., Rangoon, 1903), p. 168: Vimokkho ti kenaci dhammena anāvaraņo vimokkho, sabbaso apaññattibhāvupagamo pajjotanibbānasadiso jāto.

or the abhisankhāraviñnāna of Buddhaghosa 1 ceases to exist; hence Nirvana is not eternal death.

Prof. Stcherbatsky in interpreting Nirvāna as an eternal state of death has attached too much importance to the influence of Samkhya on Buddhism.2 He almost identifies the Vaibhāsika with the Sāmkhya School excepting for the conception of Purusa in the latter.3 He says that Nirvāna is a lifeless reality corresponding to the undifferentiated matter (Prakrti) 4 of Sāmkhya. The position of Prof. Stcherbatsky reduces itself to this that the phenomenal world issued out of Nirvana to return to it again by the removal of Avidyā (ignorance), and that Nirvāna is the same as the five skandhas in their original undifferentiated state. This is unsupported by the canonical as well as the non-canonical texts. The Sarvāstivādins in enumerating the various 'elements' mention Nirvāna as an Asamskrta-dhātu existing side by side with the elements constituting a being. The Theravadins also hold that the five khandhas are nothing but masses of five kinds of elements, out of which a being is constituted through Avidya. Both the Sarvastivadins and the Theravadins are emphatic in their statement that a being once constituted out of the seventy-two elements or five khandhas passes through innumerable existences, until by the removal of Avidya, he enters into the Asamskrtadhātu or Nirvāna, which is an element existing by itself. According to the Samkhya School of philosophy, the moksa (emancipation) of a being consists in his realisation of the fact that Purusa and Prakrti remain ever apart (viveka-khyāti) and not by a being passing from the con-

¹ See ante. Prof. Stcherbatsky himself writes elsewhere (Central Con. of B., p. 15) that citta=mano=manovijnana.

² See his Soul Theory of the Buddhists, p. 824.

³ Con. of N., pp. 27-8. 4 Ibid.

⁵ Nowhere in the Buddhist texts, any statement is made that the five khandhas were originally in an undifferentiated state. All that they say is that the material elements of all beings of all times of the Kāmadhātu and Rūpadhātu are collectively called Rūpakkhandha, so also Vedanā, Saññā, Sankhārā, and Viññāṇa of all beings taken together are called Vedanākkhandha, Saññākkhandha, Sankhārākkhandha and Viññanakkhandha. Vis. M., pp. 443, 452.

stituted to the unconstituted state. In Sāṃkhya, the emancipated being is one of the innumerable Puruṣas while in Buddhism he is after death indistinguishable from Nirvāṇa. The agreement between Sāṃkhya and early Buddhism lies in the fact that the undifferentiated matter (Prakṛti)¹ of Sāṃkhya corresponds in its differentiated form to the five khandhas and not to Nirvāṇa as inferred by Prof. Stcherbatsky. If an analogue for Nirvāṇa be sought for in Sāṃkhya we may say that it could have been found in Puruṣa if the innumerable Puruṣas were one Asaṃskṛtadhātu.

IS NIRVĀNADHĀTU A VASTU?

On the basis of the Visuddhimagga and the Abhidharmakośa, Prof. La Vallée Poussin remarks that Nirvāṇa is a vastu² (material substance), a reality, which the body touches when in the highest trance (saṃjñāvedayita-nirodha), while Prof. Steherbatsky, in consonance with his interpretation of Nirvāṇa, says that it is a "reality (dharma or vastu) in the sense of a materialistic lifeless reality" similar to the Prakṛti of Sāṃkhya. The inclusion of Nibbāna in Asaṅkhata-dhātus along with Ākāsa and the comparison drawn between Ākāsa and Nibbāna make us think that Nibbāna is a substance (vastu, dhātu) similar to Ākāsa.³ But the expression dhātu is used in Buddhist works in senses as varied as some

1 Buddhaghosa refers to Pakati-Purisa but does not compare them with Buddhist khandhas. See Vis. M., pp. 518, 525.

8 The conception of Ākāśa as made by the Sarvāstivādins may be

similar to that of the Samkhyas.

Dr. B. N. Seal thinks that "Akāśa corresponds in some respects to the ether of the physicists and in other, to what may be called proto-atom (prolyle)." See Ray's *Hindu Chemistry*, p. 88.

The Vaisesikas define Ākāša as "a simple, continuous, infinite substance and is the substratum of sound." Prof. Radhakrishnan, Ind. Phil., II, pp. 192-3.

² See P. T. S. Dictionary, p. 176 sv. dhātu-nibbāna. Drs. Rhys Davids and Stede have drawn attention to the fact that dhātu in connection with Nibbāna or Amata does not convey the sense of any thing. It is only a state—the state of Nibbāna, for which they coined the word "Nibbāna-dom or Nibbāna-hood". On the various meanings of Vastu, see Kośa, II, p. 285.

of the other terms, like dhamma, khandha, or samkhārā; so it is not safe to interpret the dhatu of Nibbana-dhatu as a vastu or dravya (thing). As for the reason of the Buddhist writers for selecting Akasa as an object of comparison with Nibbāna, it may be said that it was done only because many aspects of Ākāsa were identical with those of Nibbāna, but it does not follow that because Akasa is a dhatu, Nibbāna is also a dhātu. Like Ākāsa, Nibbāna is inexpressible; it is beyond empirical determination but not a material substance. In the Buddhist works, the term 'Nibbanadhātu' has been used in such a way that one is likely to take it for a substance like Akāsa or Samudda. In the Mahāniddesa, a large number of bhikkhus is described as attaining nibbāna without residue (anupādisesanibbāndhātu) but causing no perceptible increase or decrease in the 'Nibbānadhātu'. The Milindapanha 2 compares Nibbāna to Ākāsa or Samudda implying thereby that it exists but its form, location, age, or measure cannot be ascertained. It is like space (Ākāsa) without origin, life or death, rise or fall. It is uncovered and supportless and is infinite. Just as birds fly about in the Akasa or animals float about in the sea so also the perfect (Ariyas) move about in the Nibbanadhātu. It is like fire without a continued objective existence. Just as fire remains latent unless and until two pieces of wood are rubbed to make it patent, so Nibbana which is without any continued objective existence is called forth into being when the necessary conditions are put together. The Kathāvatthu 3 in connection with the discussion of 'Amatadhātu' maintains the same position. It shows that the Theravadins declined to agree with the Pubbaselivas who held that Nirvana (Amata) is a material object.

¹ Mahāniddesa, I, p. 132; Kvu., p. 124; Mil., pp. 316: Atthidhammassa nibbānassa rūpam va santhānam va vayam va pamānam apaññāpanam. Cf. Samyutta, II, pp. 124-6.

² Mil., p. 320: Yathā Maharaja ākāso na jāyati na jīyati na miyati na cavati no uppajjati duppasaho acorāharaņo anissito vihagagamano nirāvaraņo ananto evam eva kho mahārāja nibbānam na jāyati.......... ariyagamanam.....anantam.

³ Kvu., ix. 2.

This inference of the Pubbaseliyas was based, as pointed out in the text, on the well-known passage of the *Majjhima Nikāva*:¹

Nibbānam nibbānato sañjānāti, nibbānam nibbānato saññatvā nibbānam maññati, nibbānasmim maññati, nibbānato maññati, nibbānam me ti maññati, nibbānam abhinandatī ti. [He knows Nibbāna-as (an object) nibbāna; having so known, he thinks of it; thinks (that he) is in it or away from it; that it is his and that it is worth praising.²]

Buddhaghosa, in commenting upon this discussion, says that the opinion of the Pubbaseliyas is due to the drawing of a careless inference and that the passage cited above refers to earthly Nirvāṇa and not to the real Nirvāṇa and hence it is not conclusive. Buddhaghosa's view may not be acceptable to all but it makes it quite clear that according to the Theravādins, Nirvāṇa, though denoted by Amata, must not be taken as a dravya (thing), though it may serve as an ārammana (basis) for meditations.⁴

RÉSUMÉ: EARLY BUDDHIST CONCEPTION OF NIRVANA

The results of my examination of the expositions of Nirvāṇa in the Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna works, and of the discussions of same by modern scholars, may be summarised thus:

The texts of the early Buddhists present a threefold conception of Nirvāṇa, viz., ethical, psychical, and metaphysical.

¹ Majjhima, I, p. 4.

² For a comment on this passage see Keith, B. Phil., p. 49; La Vallée Poussin, Nirvāṇa, pp. 126, 127. See ante.

The sense of the passage is that a person who has not truly realised Nibbāna may labour under the delusion that Nibbāna is an object which he has known, and with which he stands in some relation, namely, that he has entered into it or that he is away from it, or that Nibbāna is his or that Nibbāna is an object to be praised.

³ Kvu. A., p. 116: ditthadhammanibbānam samdhāya bhāsitam tasmā asādhakam, Cf. Papancasūdani, p. 38: Tattha Nibbānan ti "yato kho bho ayam attā pancahi kāmagunehi samappito samangibhūto paricarati, ettāvatā kho bho ayam attā paramaditthadhammanibbānam patto hotī ti"; see Dīgha, I, 36.

⁴ Vis. M., pp. 680, 681.

- (i) ETHICAL. The ethical conception of Nirvana has received the largest amount of attention in the Pāli texts as well as in the writings of modern scholars. The Nikāvas abound in terms and passages expressive of the ethical conception of Nirvana so much so that Dr. Stede wrote as late as 1923 that "Nibbana is purely and solely an ethical state to be reached in this birth by ethical practices, contemplation, and insight. It is therefore not transcendental".1 This opinion is not supported by facts. Throughout the Nikāyas, Nibbana is described as the destruction (khaya) of attachment (raga), hatred (dosa) and delusion (moha), of desire (tanhā), impressions (sankhārā), and firm grasp of wrong ideas (upādāna), of impurities (āsava) and afflictions (kilesa), and of desire for existence (bhava), birth (jāti), old age, death (jarāmarana), and thus of misery (dukkha). In describing the positive aspect of Nibbana, the Nikayas state that it is a condition which is very happy (accantasukha), imperishable (accuta), steady (acala, dhīra), tranquil (santa) and free from fear (akutobhaya). It is the state of the highest bliss (amata). The ethical conception of Nirvana appealed so much to the Buddhist authors that they wrote literary pieces of great poetical excellence in order to pay glowing tributes to the attainment of same.
- (ii) PSYCHICAL. Many scholars have dealt with the psychical aspect of Nirvāṇa but without laying sufficient emphasis upon its significance. This aspect of Nibbāna is generally brought out in those passages of the Nikāyas, which treat of the Jhānas or the path of contemplation. The object of Jhānas is to bring the mind into such a state that it will be above worldly pleasure and pain. It can be effected by dissociating the mind completely from all worldly matters. This is achieved by means of the trances, the highest of which is the Saññāvedayitanirodha. From the foregoing discussion about the highest trance, it is evident that Nibbāna is psychically Saññāvedayitanirodha provided

¹ See P. T. S. Dict., sv. Nibbāna. The part of the Dictionary, containing the article on Nibbāna was published after the death of Dr. Rhys Davids.

that the adept complies with the other necessary conditions of Arhathood. In course of our exposition of the various dhātus, it has been shown that an adept in the first thana rises mentally to the same level as that of the denizens of the Rupabrahmaloka, and gradually proceeding higher and higher develops a mental state corresponding to that of the beings of the Nevasaññānāsaññāyatana—the highest plane of existence in the three worlds. He acquires the five transcendental powers (abhiññā), viz., performing supernatural feats (iddhividha) such as visiting the Brahmaloka; acquiring divine ear (dibbasota) and divine vision (dibbasakkhu), knowing others' thoughts (paracittavijānana), and remembering former existences (pubbenivāsānussati). According to the Buddhist conception, an adept who is capable of rising up as high as the eighth trance (nevasaññānāsaññāyatana) is as powerful as the gods of the highest Arupabrahmaloka. The stage of Nibbana being still higher, he has to rise further in trance and attain the Saññavedayitanirodha, where his mind stops functioning and hence there is no perception or sensation. He is now fit to stay in the Apariyapannadhatu or Lokuttaradhātu. While in this trance, he has a foretaste of Nibbana, which is going to be his permanently. He acquires the sixth abhiñña, viz., knowledge of the destruction of his impurities (āsavakhayakāranañāna) and of the consequent attainment of emancipation. His mental faculties then become so very clear 2 that he understands with a moment's thought all that is happening around him. He is now possessed of full illumination, i.e., he is enlightened.

(iii) Metaphysical. The metaphysical aspect of Nibbāna presents the greatest difficulties to the students of Buddhism and has been the source of many controversies. There is

¹ The usual expression is, āsavānam khayā anāsavam cetovimuttim pañfiāvimuttim ditthe va dhamme sayam abhiññā sacchikatvā upasam pajja viharati. Dīgha, III, p. 281.

² See Jātaka, I, p. 106 Vanņupatha Jāt.: Obhāsamattam=supernatural illumination while striving to attain jhāna. Cf. Dīgha, II, p. 33; Sangutta, II, pp. 7, 105: cakkhum udapādi ñāṇam udapādi pañīā u° vijjā u° āloko u°; Paṭis. M., II, p. 150: "Āloko udapādī ti" obhāsatthena.

no end of metaphorical terms and passages in the Nikāyas to describe Nibbana admitting of a metaphysical interpretation. The notable passage of the Itivuttaka 1: 'Atthi, bhikkhave, abhūtam akatam asankhatam' shows that the early Buddhists conceived of Nibbana not as annihilation but as something positive,2 which is, however, infinite and indescribable like Ākāsa. It is called a dhātu (realm) beyond the three dhātus,—the Apariyāpanna- or Lokuttara-dhātu. It is a state to be realised (sacchikātabba) within one's own self (paccattam veditabbo viññūhi). It is homogeneous (ekarasa) and in it there is no individuality. It is like the disappearance of flame in the fathomless state of existence in the infinite.

The few passages of the Digha and Majjhma Nikāyas, in which Nibbana has been equated to infinite consciousness (anantaviññāna) do not, however, find support in other portions of the same works, which throw light on the conception of Nibbana. All that can be said under the circumstances is that these passages were later interpolations made at a time when the Samyutta Nikāya was being compiled. The account of the death of Vakkali with apatitthitaviññāṇa and not patisandhiviññāṇa hints that the constituted viññāṇa of an Arhat passes away and mixes up indistinguishably with an ever existing infinite consciousness. This seems to be an anticipation of the Vijnanavada school of philosophy, but we cannot deny the existence of a trend of thought like this among the early Buddhists. The more accurate conception of Nibbana would certainly be that it is a state beyond the domain of word and thought and possible of realisation only within one's own self.

SECTION II

The Pāli Nikāyas, as already pointed out, are a mosaic composed of materials of various times and regions; hence they yield divergent opinions regarding the conception of Nibbana. But the one presented above is supported by most of the suttas of the Nikāyas and can be treated as

² Kvu., p. 124; see also Mil., p. 316. 1 Itiv., p. 37.

the earliest. We shall now pass on to some of the later Buddhistic works and ascertain from them how far the early conception of Nibbāna was retained in later times and what changes, if any, were introduced.

THE Kathāvatthu on NIRVĀŅA

Before we deal with the Visuddhimagga, we may well examine the few remarks scattered here and there in the Kathāvatthu regarding the conception of Nibbāna.1 While discussing the existence of puggala, the Kathāvatthu makes a remark showing that it conceives Nibbana as a real and eternal state. It says that if puggala (soul) be taken as not disintegrating with the disintegration of khandhas, this will entail sassatavāda, for the soul becomes eternally existent like Nibbāna.2 Buddhaghosa in commenting upon this says: Yathā hi nibbānam na uppajjati na bhijjati evam hi puggalo⁸ (just as Nibbāna does neither originate nor decay so would be the soul). Thus we see that the Kathāvatthu, supported by Buddhaghosa, takes Nibbana as an eternal state without origination and decay, and does not consider a parinibbuta puggala as sassata.4 In other connections too, the Kathāvatthu remarks that Nibbana is eternal and unchangeable (nibbanam dhuvam sassatam aviparināmadhammam).5 It also says that Nibbāna unlike ñāna (knowledge) exists by itself like rūpa or cakkhu and does not require any arammana (basis) to arise.6 Unlike sīla (morality), phassa (contact) and vedanā

¹ Though according to the orthodox tradition, it is canonical it may also be treated as non-canonical as it was composed after the canon had been closed. For the present purpose, we leave out of account the various aspects (guṇa or ākāra) of Nibbāna. It has been dealt with by Prof. Poussin in his Nirvāna, pp. 158 ff.

² Kvu., I. i. 170 (p. 34): Khandhesu bhijjamānesu no ce bhijjati puggalo, puggalo sassato hoti nibbāna-samasamo.

⁸ Kvu. A., p. 25.

⁴ Kvu., p. 61.

⁵ Kvu. I. 6 (p. 121); see also the note of the commentator in the Points of the Controversy, p. 63 fn.

o *Kou.*, IX. 5; cf. *Dh. S.* 1408, 1415, 1418: Rūpañ ca nibbānañ ca suārammaṇā.

(feeling), it is acetasika (not a property of the mind) and is unconnected with mind (citta-vippayutta). It is asankhata (unconstituted) because it possesses the three signs, viz., no origination (uppāda), no destruction (vayo) and no change (na thitānam aññathattam paññāyati). The Kathāvatthu thus conceives Nibbāna as existing eternally without origin, decay and change, and is beyond all description.

THE Visuddhimagga ON NIRVĀŅA

In the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa retains the conception found in the Kathavatthu and selects only those passages from the Nikāyas which lend support to his view. In describing its gunas, he comments on a passage of the Anguttara Nikāya (ii. 34) where Nibbāna is described as suppressing pride, removing lust, destroying alaya (of the five kamagunas), and arresting the cycle of existence in the three worlds. While commenting on the etymology of the word Nibbāna,6 he says that it is the going out of the 'vana' which is a synonym of tanhā and is so called because it acts as a hindrance to the four kinds of birth (yonis), five forms of existence (gatis), seven viññana existences (i.e. the planes of existence above the Arūpa worlds) and nine sattāvāsas (abodes of sentient beings). This shows only the aspect of quietude (upasama) of Nibbana. He then takes up the well-known passage of the Samyutta Nikāya (iv. 362, 369 ff.) to show that Nibbana is truth, transcendental, difficult to be seen, without decay, eternal, indescribable immortal, happy, peaceful, wonderful, healthy, pure and is an island of refuge. It appears from the selection of passages made by Buddhaghosa that he is a supporter

 ¹ Kvu, IX. 7; cf. Dh. S. 1513: Katame dhammā acetasikā? Cittañ ca rūpañ ca nibbānañ ca.

² Ibid. XIV. 6; cf. Dh. S. 1515: Katame dhammā cittavippayuttā?
Rūpañ ca nibbānañ ca.....

³ Dh. S. 1439.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 60. cf. *Dh. S.* 1416: Nibbānam na vattabbam uppannan ti pi anuppannan ti; see also 1534, 1535.

⁵ Vis. M., pp. 293, 294. ⁶ Ibid.

⁷ Also dealt with by Prof. Poussin in his Nirvana, pp. 153, 154.

of the view that Nibbāna is eternal and that it is a lokottara 1 state beyond the Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa dhātus.

Buddhaghosa's conception of Nibbana is well brought out also in his arguments against the Sautrantika view of the non-existence (abhāva) of Nibbāna.2 He starts with the assertion that Nibbana brings peace of mind (santi), and has the taste of imperishableness (accuti) and solace (assasakarana), and brings one to a state of mind which is inexpressible (nippapañca), and in which differentiations disappear (animitta). He then takes up the view of his opponents, evidently the Sautrantikas, that Nibbana does not exist like the horn of the hare because of its non-perceptibility (anupalabbhaniyato), and meets it by saying that Nibbana does exist and is realisable if the right path be followed—the realisation being similar to the cognizance of others' thoughts in the transcendental plane (lokuttara-citta)3 by the power of knowing the thoughts of others (cetopariyavañāna).4 One is not justified in saving that a thing does not exist because it cannot be perceived by ordinary men. He states further in support of his contention that if the existence of Nibbana be denied, the practices of Sammaditthi, etc., become fruitless (vanjhabhavo apajjati). To this the opponent answers: The practices are not really fruitless since they lead to realisation of abhava (i.e., Nibbana as total absence of every thing).

Buddhaghosa: If Nibbāna be merely abhāva, then the absence (abhāva) of past and future would also be Nibbāna, but it is surely not.

Opponent: The absence of the present might be Nibbāna. Buddhaghosa: The absence of the present (vattamāna) is not possible, for it is self-contradictory, because it must be either past or future. Besides, it would also

¹ Cf. Dh. S. 1447; Lanka., p. 157 see ante.

² Vis. M., pp. 507-9.

³ See Shwe Zan Aung's Comp. of Phil., p. 12: transcendental consciousness beyond Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa dhātus.

⁴ It is one of the Abhiññās possessed by Arhats, see $Vis.\ M.$, p. 431.

be incorrect to say that the absence of the present is Nibbāna, for in the present life at a certain moment (vattamānakkhandhanissitamaggakkhaṇe)¹ one obtains the sopādisesa-nibbānadhātu (i.e., Nibbāna with corporal residue).

Opponent: Would it not be equally incorrect to say that at that moment there was the non-presence of kilesas

(impurities)?

Buddhaghosa: To deny the non-presence of kilesas would be to deny the efficacy of the Ariyamagga, and that is impossible.

This reply of Buddhaghosa did not, it seems, convince his opponent who passed on to the next argument as to whether the khaya, i.e., destruction of attachment (rāgakkhaya), etc. should be taken as Nibbāna.² Buddhaghosa answered in the negative, saying that in that case arhathood would also be mere extinction. Besides to take Nibbāna as khaya (destruction) of something would make Nibbāna impermanent, constituted, and disconnected with sammāvāyāma, etc. To this the opponent replied: It would not be wrong to say that because a thing after its decay has no more origination, it has attained Nibbāna.

Buddhaghosa: Decay of this sort does not enter into the question; even if it be so considered, it would not support the contention of the opponent, for it is the ariyamagga which produces (lit. turns into) the state of Nibbāna (bhāva), and it is the ariyamagga which destroys evil and prevents its reappearance, because it is the stage (upanissayatta) for final destruction without the possibility of further origination (anuppattinirodhasankhatassa khayassa); that of which it forms the basis (upanissaya) is destroyed by conduct.

The opponent then took up the third argument inquiring why Nibbāna had not been given a description (sarūpen' eva kasmā na vuttan ti ce?).

¹ For Maggakkhana see Patis., M., I, pp. 69f; Vis. M., pp. 681, 682. For Phalakkhana see Vis. M., p. 680.

² Cf. M. Vr., p, 525: Sautrāntikas say: Nanu ca yo'sya nandirāgasahagatāyās tranāyāh kṣayo virāgo nirodho nirvānam ityuktam.

Buddhaghosa: Because it is exceedingly subtle; so extremely subtle, indeed, that Buddha even once thought of not preaching it at all; it can be seen by ariyacakkhu only (i.e., realisable by Arhats only). Being associated with the magga, it is extraordinary (asādhāraṇa), and its beginning being absent, it is devoid of origin.

Opponent: It is not without origin because it originated out of the magga.

Buddhaghosa: It was not originated by the magga; it can be attained only by following the magga; hence it is originless, and consequently decayless and deathless; being without origin, decay and death, it is eternal (nicca).

A fourth argument was put forward by the opponent, which is as follows:

Opponent: Would it not be objectionable to regard Nibbāna as eternal like the anu (atom)?

Buddhaghosa: No. Nibbāna has no hetu (cause) as aņus have; so it cannot be compared to the aņu.

Opponent: Is Nibbāna eternal on account of its eternal nature (i.e. does any quality of eternalness adhere to Nibbāna)?

Buddhaghosa: That cannot be, in view of the fact that the anu, etc., are not realised (asiddh atta) by the magga.

Buddhaghosa in conclusion said that for the reasons he had put forward Nibbāna is eternal and, being devoid of the nature of form, is formless (arūpa). There is only one Nibbāna, and not different Nibbānas for different Buddhas. He then showed that it is called sopādisesa-nibbāna when there remains a corporal residue (upādisesa), though a complete destruction of impurities has been effected by meditation (bhāvanā). It is called nirupādisesa-nibbāna¹ on the disappearance of upādisesa, which happens on account of the absence of any kind of manifestation after the last thought

 $^{^{1}}$ For sopādisesa and nirupādisesa nibbāna, see also M. Vr., p. 519.

of kammaphala. This is due to the stopping and uprooting of samudaya (causes of origin). In short, it cannot be said that Nibbāna does not exist in view of the fact that it is attainable by means of special knowledge obtained by unflagging zeal; that its existence is indicated by the words of the omniscient Buddha; and lastly that it exists in reality (paramatthena sabhāvato) is indicated by the words: Atthi bhikkhave ajātam abhūtam akatam asankhatam (*Itiv.*, p. 37; Ud., p. 80).

The Paramathamañjusā, in commenting upon this portion of the Visuddhimagga, argues in its own way for the existence of Nibbana. It starts by saying that Buddha can never utter an untruth; so when he says "atthi bhikkhave ajātam etc.", it has to be admitted that the unconstituted dhātu, Nibbāna, in the highest sense, does exist. It cannot be abhava (absence of anything) because of the fact that Buddha described Nibbana as deep, immeasurable, difficult to be understood, etc. These can be said only of an existent state or object, and not of anything non-existent. Anything non-existent must in every way be non-existent. The following question may, however, arise as to the nature of abhāva of kilesas, to which attention is drawn by the Theravadins as an aspect of Nibbana: Whether the abhava of kilesas existing in beings is one or many. If the abhava be one, then it should be effected by one path (magga) and there is no need of many maggas (evidently referring to the four maggas sotāpatti, sakadāgāmi, anāgāmi, and arahatta), and all beings should attain Nibbana at the same time. This objection is answered thus: If the abhava be taken as one, then it is the abhava of kilesas which is effected by the realisation of Nibbana. It is in fact not an effect of magga, it is a thing to be envisaged. The opponents may say that there is no need of maggas, as it is not necessary to give up the kilesas, and there being no question of giving up kilesas and putting an end to dukkha, what is the use of the realisation (sacchikiriyā) of kilesā-

¹ Visuddhimagga Tīkā of Ānanda (Burmese ed.) edited by Saya U. Pye, 1910, vol. II, pp. 618-620.

bhava. The objection is answered thus: Each magga has some definite function to perform. The sotapattimagga removes the first three samyojanas, the sakadāgāmimagga reduces raga, dosa and moha to their minimum, while the anagamimagga eradicates them, and lastly the arahatta puts an end to all samyojanas. Abhāva is really one, and it should not be inferred that there are many abhavas because many kinds of kilesas are eradicated, i.e., it does not follow that because there are sakkāyaditthi-abhāva, rāga-abhāva and moha-abhāva, there are so many abhāvas. Abhāva is really one and does not vary according to the nature of the object, of which, there is abhāva; so the abhāvas are not to be regarded as five, because the five samyojanas are removed. It is only the common usage of the term that implies the existence of many abhavas. The state of abhava (absence of anything) cannot but be one, so Nibbana is not many but one. The Tika concludes its argument by saying that the abhava is effected by maggas, each magga producing its own effect, and that abhava is not to be envisaged (na sacchikātabbo), while Nibbāna is to be envisaged; hence, the abhava of kilesas is not identical with Nibbana.

THE Abhidharmakośa on Nirvāna

In the Abhidharmakośa Vasubandhu expatiates on the Vaibhāsika conception of Nirvāna. He first asserts that Nirvāna is one of the Asamskrtas (unconstituted), and as against the objection of the Sautrantikas that it might be a result produced by the mārga, he says that the mārga leads to the attainment or possession of Visamyoga (disconnection) or Nirvana and that it is self-existent and not the fruit of mārga.1 In answering the question of the Sautrāntikas as to the nature of the dharma called Visamyoga or Pratisamkhyānirodha, the Vaibhāsikas state that it is a dharma, the nature of which is real and inexpressible; only the Arvas realise it inwardly and individually. It is only possible to indicate its general characters, when the Pratisamkhyā-niro-

¹ See Kośa, ii. 55. Cf. Vis. M., p. 508 dealt with before for a similar argument against the Sautrantikas.

dha is said to be an entity (dravya), real, good, eternal, and distinct from others, it is called the Visamyoga.

The Sautrantikas in their zeal to establish that Nirvana is abhava (absence of passions, etc.) argue that the Asamskṛtas (the unconditioned) are not real like the entities rūpa (form), vedanā (feeling), etc. They cite the instance of Ākāśa, which is, according to the Sarvāstivādins, an Asamskṛta-dhātu, and point out that Ākāśa (space) is nothing but the absence of something tangible, or in other words, of any resisting substance. Just as a man in darkness says it is ākāśa (vacuity or space) when he is not cognisant of the existence of anything tangible or resistible, so also the Ākāśa of the Sarvāstivādins should be understood. Analogically they assert that the second Asamskrta-dhatu of the Sarvāstivādins, namely, the Pratisamkhyā-Nirodha, is really the destruction of anusayas (desires) and existence already produced, and the non-origination of any further anusayas; and as this is achieved by means of knowledge (pratisamkhyā), it is called Pratisamkhyā-nirodha. The third Asamskrtadhātu, the Apratisamkhyā-nirodha, is the absence or nonorigination of dharmas on account of the complete absence of causes 1 independent of the force of knowledge (apratisamkhyā), e.g., when death before its time interrupts the existence, it is said that there has been Apratisamkhyā-nirodha of dharmas which would have been born in course of this existence if the existence had continued.2

In this connection the Sautrāntikas mention the opinion of Sthavira Śrīlābha, also a Sautrāntika teacher, who interpreted the pratisaṃkhyā-nirodha as the future non-origin of passions due to knowledge (prajūā), and the apratisaṃkhyā-nirodha as the future non-origin of duḥkha, i.e., of existence due to the disappearance of passions and not directly due

¹ Yamakami Sogen prefers "condition" (pratyaya) to causes. See his Systems etc., p. 164. He explains Apratisamkhyānirodha (p. 167) as the "non-consciousness of dharmas or things which would have forced their way into our consciousness but for the engrossment of our attention by something else. Apratisamkhyānirodha, accordingly, is a thing of daily occurrence in everybody's life."

² Kośa-vyākhyā (B. Buddhica), pp. 16-18.

to knowledge. The former, it is said, refers to sopādiśeṣa-and the latter to anupādiśeṣa-nirvāṇadhātu.¹ The Sautrāntikas did not approve of the distinction made by Śrīlābha between Pratisaṃkhyā and Apratisaṃkhyā. According to them, the future non-origin of duḥkha implies pratisaṃkhyā; so, in fact, apratisaṃkhya-nirodha is included in the pratisaṃkhyā-nirodha.

The Sautrāntikas considered also the opinion of another school, supposed to be the Mahāsānghikas according to the Japanese editor of the Kośa. The Mahāsānghikas define apratismkhyā-nirodha as the posterior non-existence (paścād abhāva) of dharmas already born by virtue of their spontaneous destruction. In this definition, apratisamkhyā-nirodha is not eternal in view of the fact that it does not arise as long as the anuśayas do not perish.

The object of the Sautrāntikas is to show through these definitions that the pratisaṃkhyā-nirodha implies an antecedent, viz., pratisaṃkhyā and hence it cannot be eternal (nitya), because, if the antecedent be wanting, the consequence also becomes wanting. The Sarvāstivādins met this by arguing that the Sautrāntikas were not entitled to say that pratisaṃkhyā is anterior and the non-origin of unborn dharmas posterior. The fact is, as the Sarvāstivādins thought, that the non-originated always exist by themselves; so when the pratisaṃkhyā is lacking, the dharmas are born; if and when pratisaṃkhyā arises, the dharmas are not born absolutely. The efficacy (sāmarthya) of the pratisaṃkhyā in regard to the non-origin of dharmas is shown thus:

- (i) before pratisamkhyā there is no obstacle in the way of the origin of dharmas; and
- (ii) after pratisaṃkhyā, i.e. pratisaṃkhyā being given, the dharmas, the origin of which has not been stopped previously (akṛtotpattipratibandha), are not born.
- (1) Then as against the view of the Sautrantikas that Nirvana is simply non-production (anutpada) of dharmas,

¹ Of. Vis. M., dealt with above. See Prof. La Vallée Poussin's article on the two Nirvāṇadhātus according to the Vibhāṣā in I. H. Q., vol. vi, pp. 39-45.

the Sarvastivadins cite a sutra from the Samyukta Agama (26.2) in which it is stated that the practice and culture of the five faculties, faith etc., have for their result the abandonment of duhkha, past, present, and future. In fact, this abandonment (prahāna) refers to nothing else than Nirvāṇa and is solely of a future dharma and not of a past or present dharma. The Sautrantikas cannot accept it and interpret this passage somewhat differently, saying that the "abandonment" refers to the abandoning of passions (kleśas) relating to duhkha, past or present, and citing some other passages from the Samuukta Agama in support of their contention. They argue that the passions, past and present, produce in us some germs to originate future passions: when these germs are killed, the passions, past and present, are abandoned. It is with reference to this fact that one says that the action (karma) and the result (phala) have been destroyed. Therefore by the abandonment of a future duhkha or future passion one understands that the duhkha or passion will not be born any more owing to the absence of germs.

(2) The Sarvāstivādins then take up a second argument, found also in the Visuddhimagga,1 which inquires why it has been stated in the Samyukta Agama (31.12) that "of all dharmas, constituted or unconstituted, viraga (detachment) is the best". If a dharma be non-existing. how can a statement like the above be made? The Sautrantikas explain this by asserting that they admit its existence, as they admit that of a sound which has no existence before it is produced and after it has died away. The quotation praising "virāga" may well refer to a non-existent unconditioned thing, the absolute non-existence of everything evil.

(3) The third argument of the Sarvāstivādins is that if the Pratisamkhyā-nirodha or Nirvāna be non-existent, why is it mentioned as one of the Truths. The Sautrantikas answer that truth (satya) is taken in the sense of "notinexact" (aviparīta). The Āryas realize what exists and

¹ Vis. M., p. 507.

what does not exist in a "not-inexact" manner; in that which is suffering (duḥkha) they see only duḥkha; in the non-existence of duḥkha, they realize the fact of the non-existence of same. Really, there is no contradiction in taking the "non-existence of duḥkha" or the pratisaṃkhyānirodha as a Truth. And this non-existence is the third Truth, because the Āryas see and proclaim it immediately after the second.

- (4) The Sarvāstivādins then have recourse to the fourth argument that if the asaṃskṛtas be non-existent, how is it that knowledge has non-existent things as its basis (ārammaṇa). The Sautrāntikas dismiss this objection by remarking that they find in it nothing against their theory, and say that they will explain it in connection with the discussion of the past and the future.¹
- (5) The fifth argument of the Sarvāstivādins relates to the nature of the consequence found by the Sautrāntikas in the maintenance of their theory that the unconditioned really exist. The Sautrāntikas point out the unreasonableness of regarding the existence of a non-existent thing as real. In fact, they say that the unconditioned can neither be apprehended by the senses (pratykṣa) like rūpa (form), vedanā (feeling), etc., nor can they be known by inference (anumāna) from their activities, i.e., through the organs of sense.
- (6) In the sixth argument, the Sautrāntikas become the questioners and inquire how, if Nirodha be a thing in itself, a genitive construction like 'duḥkhasya nirodhaḥ' can be justified. The Sautrāntikas understand by Nirodha (destruction of a thing) the "non-existence of a thing", so also by the "destruction of duḥkha" they understand the "non-existence of duḥkha". They do not admit the existence of any relation of cause and effect between two things existing by themselves. To this the Sarvāstivadins reply, that, according to them, destruction is a thing in itself. Nevertheless one can specify the relation between "destruction" and the "thing destroyed", for, according to them, nirodha

¹ For which see Kośa, v. 25.

with reference to a thing indicates "obtaining possession" (prāpti) of the "destruction" at the moment when one is dispossessed of the thing. The Sautrāntikas would however inquire, what it is that determines or specifies the taking of possession of the "destruction".

- (7) The seventh argument of the Sarvāstivādins is: if Nirvāṇa be non-existence, if it be only abhāva, what is that thing which is obtained by a bhikṣu in this life? The Sautrāntikas explain it by saying that a bhikṣu in Nirvāṇa attains a stage (āśraya) in which neither passion (kleśa) nor a new existence is possible.
- (8) In the eighth argument the Sautrāntikas cite a text from the Samyukta Āgama (13.5) where Nirvāṇa is described as a disappearance (vyantibhāva), a decay (kṣaya), a destruction (nirodha), an appeasement (vyupaśama), a detachment (virāga), a passing away (astaṅgama) of duḥkha, and as a non-reproducer (apratisaṃdhi) of duḥkha, and infer therefrom that Nirvāṇa is abhāvamātra. The Sarvāstivādins do not accept this interpretation, stating that the passage refers to Nirvāṇa as a thing in itself, in which there is no appearance (aprādurbhāva) of duḥkha. The Sautrāntikas do not agree with the Sarvāstivādins regarding the force of the locative case used in the passage.
- (9) The ninth argument put forward by the Sautrāntikas is that the simile of the flame used in the famous line, "Pajjotass' eva nibbānam vimokkho cetaso ahu" (as the nirvāṇa of the flame, so is also the deliverance of thought), suggests only the passing away (atyaya) of the flame, and not a thing existing by itself.
- (10) The tenth and the last argument advanced by the Sautrāntikas is that the Abhidharma, on which the Vaibhāṣikas rely most, contains the statement: "What are the avastuka dharmas? They are the Asaṃskṛtas". In this, the term "avastuka" signifies to the Sautrāntikas "unreal", "without true nature", but it is differently interpreted by the Vaibhāṣikas. According to them the term "vastu" is employed in five different senses, viz., (i) svabhāva vastu (a

¹ See above for a discussion of this passage.

thing in itself), (ii) ālambana vastu (object of knowledge), (iii) samyojanīya (cause of attachment), (iv) hetu (cause), and (v) parigraha (act of appropriation). In the present passage, vastu has been used in the sense of hetu; here "avastuka" signifies "that which has no cause". The unconditioned, although real, being always devoid of any activity, have neither any cause which produces them nor any fruit produced by them.

Kathāvatthu, Visuddhimagga and Abhidharmakośa analysed

We have now before us the expositions of Nirvāṇa as found in the *Kathāvatthu*, *Visuddhimagga* and *Abhidharmakośa*. The last two also present a fairly good view of the Sautrāntika standpoint. These may be analysed thus:

(1) As against the Sautrāntika view that Nirvāṇa is unreal, that it is merely abhāva (absence) of kleśas, the mere destruction of rāga, etc., all the texts mentioned above maintain that Nirvāṇa has real existence, their grounds being that

(i) it is realisable if the right path be followed (Vm.); it

is realised by the Aryas $(A. \text{ and } Vm.)^1$;

(ii) the arhats realize it in this life. It is known as the attainment of sopādiśeṣa-nirvāṇa-dhātu (A. and Vm.);

(iii) the existence of Nirvāṇa has been described by Buddha in statements like "atthi bhikkhave ajātam abhūtam, etc." (Vm.), or, with reference to its subtlety or depth or excellence in statements like "duddasam duranubodham, etc." $(Vm.\ Tik\bar{a})$, "virāga is the best of all dharmas" (A.) or by mentioning it as one of the Four Truths (A.) or the ārammaṇa (basis) of knowledge $(Vm.,\ K.\ and\ A.)$.

(2) As against the Sautrāntika view that Nirvāna, being only abhāva, cannot be eternal, existing by itself like rūpa (form) or anu (atom), or that it cannot be asamskṛta since

it is the result of magga, the texts maintain that

(i) Nirvāņa is eternal, exists by itself like rūpa or aņu²

¹ A.=Abhidharmakośa; Vm.=Visuddhimagga; and K.=Kathāvatthu.

² Cf. Belvalkar, Brahma Sütra (Poona), II, 2, pp. 61-64.

(Vm. and A.); does not require any \bar{a} rammana (basis) like j \bar{n} \bar{a}na for its origin (Vm. and K.), and is unconnected with citta (acetasika, cittavippayutta) (Vm., K. and A.), but it should be distinguished from \bar{u} pa and anu by the fact that it is uncaused (Vm. and A.) and requires the practice of magga for its realisation (Vm.);

(ii) Nirvāṇa is eternal but not the parinibbuta puggala, *i.e.*, individuality ceases in Nirvāṇa (\hat{K} .); and that Nirvāṇa is one and not different for different Buddhas $(Vm.)^1$;

(iii) Nirvāṇa is asaṃskṛta as it has no origin, no decay, and no change (Vm. and A.);

(iv) the \bar{a} ry \bar{a} s \dot{a} r \bar{a} igika-m \bar{a} rga leads only to the cessation of kleśas; nirv \bar{a} na is not produced by m \bar{a} rga, but exists by itself eternally (Vm. and A.).

(3) The Sautrāntikas understand the comparison of Ākāśa and Nirvāṇa in the sense that as ākāśa is really the absence or non-cognition of any resistible thing so Nirvāṇa is also the absolute absence of kleśas. The texts comment on it as follows:—

Nirvāṇa is infinite, immeasurable and inexpressible like ākāśa (Vm., K. and A.); it has a positive existence, but the kleśas work as an āvaraṇa (screen) to the vision of beings, and so when the mārga removes the kleśas it is visualised (A.). The attainment of Nirvāṇa means the possession of the Visamyoga (disconnection) or Nirvāṇa (A.).

(4) To the question why if Nirvāna exists, Buddha did not define its nature (svarūpa), the texts answer that it is very subtle (Vm. and A.), so much so that even Buddha at first hesitated to preach it (Vm.).

(5) Buddhaghosa inclines towards the view that Nirvāṇa is inexpressible, indistinguishable, eternal and blissful. In the sopādiśeṣanirvāṇa, the Arhat obtains inwardly a vision of same and actually gets it when he enters into nirupādiśeṣanirvāṇa.

(6) Vasubandhu emphasises the fact that Nirvāṇa is still a dhātu, a dravya (a thing in itself) but endowed with all the qualities mentioned above. The atoms or ions com-

¹ Cf. Dharmakāya of the Mahāyānists; see ante.

posing a being are continually changing, and ultimately, by the force of mārga which he has been following, the individual reaches the immaculate state and becomes indistinguishable from the eternal and immaculate elements called Nirvāṇa-dhātu. Professor Poussin, on the basis of the available descriptions of this Nirvāṇa-dhātu, prefers to find in it a perfectly blissful and eternal life while Professor Stcherbatsky, following the strict logic of the atomic theory, concludes that the Nirvāṇa-dhātu is "eternal death", or the Sāṃkhya's undifferentiated matter.

As to the difference of opinion between Buddhaghosa and Vasubandhu, it should be observed that Buddhaghosa is untrammelled by the atomic theory, the consistency of which has all along been maintained by Vasubandhu in his arguments. Buddhaghosa states unequivocally that Nirvāṇa transcends every conceivable form of existence (beyond all sattāvāsas or viñāāṇaṭṭhitis), and is an infinite and inconceivable state. This looks very much like the metaphysical conception of the Vedāntic Brahman, though not strictly so, as has been pointed out by Profs. Poussin and Belvalkar. But it is clearly not advaya brahman, for it involves the conception of innumerable beings having separate existences of their own and only losing their identity when they are parinibbuta-puggalas.

THE Prajñāpāramitās on Nirvāņa

The conception of Nirvāṇa assumed a totally different form in the Mahāyānic works. We have seen that the Saddharma Puṇḍarīka understands by Nirvāṇa the realisation of the sameness of all dharmas. The sameness (samatā), as explained in the Prajñāpāramitās and the Sūtrālaṅkāra, means, from the standpoint of the highest reality (paramārthatah), the non-distinguishability between any two things and the impossibility of particularizing a thing. The Prajñāpāramitās develop this idea of sameness a little further and show that

¹ Brahma Sūtra (Poona, 1924), II. 2, p. 57; "Hīnayāna has not developed any special aptitude for metaphysical theories and logical subtleties." Cf. Srībhāsya, ed. by Durgācaraņa Sānkhya-Vedāntatīrtha, p. 176: Nirvikāra-svaprakāśa-caitanyamaya-brahma.

everything perceived or known in this world is really an illusion (māyā) to the unenlightened mind. So when any one speaks of Nirvāna or the attainment of Nirvāna, he imagines, because of imperfect vision, the existence of a man and his nirvana, and thinks that the man after practising the disciplinary rules attains the ultimate state called Nirvāna 1. In reality, all these are merely his fancies (parikalpanā). One of the similes to show this unreality runs thus: Suppose a magician (māyākāra) or his disciple, expert in performing magical feats, creates the five kinds of enjoyable things (pañca-kāmaguṇa) and shows himself as enjoying these things.2 Does he, in fact, enjoy them? a Bodhisattva or Buddha speaks of the so-called worldly pleasures (kāmagunas), Bodhisattva practices, skandhas, (e.g. sīla, samādhi, etc.), the eightfold path, Nirvāna, or Buddha. These, in fact, do not exist at all3; they are mere names invented to denote things, the existence of which is conceived by the unenlightened, e.g., something which has no real existence is called a sattva (being) or rupa (form),4 but sattva or rūpa is only a term, a mere designation. That which is a designation has no origin or decay; it is used only as a symbol; its interior, or exterior, or both cannot be perceived. The Prajñāpāramitās carry it further by stating that even the designation (nāmadheva) must not be taken as having any form of existence 5. There being no such thing as entrance (aya) and exit (vyaya) of anything whatsoever, not excluding sarvadharmatathatā or Buddha, it should not be said that there is Arhat or Buddha 6, or any kind of relation between them. If Buddha creates some māyāpurusas

¹ Pañca. (A.S.B.Ms.), leaf 399b: A bodhisattva does not seek Nirvāņa because he "saṃsāraṃ saṃsārato na vikalpayati nirvāṇam nirvāṇato na vikalpayati".

² S'ata., p. 117.

³ Sata., p. 432: Atyantayā bodhisattvo nopalabhyate; p. 613: Prakṛtiśūnyāh sarvadharmāh.

⁴ See Sata., pp. 325ff, for sattva may be put a man, a doer, form, eye, bodhisattva, etc.

⁵ Sata., p. 522: Nāmadheyam na sthitam na viṣṭitam nādhiṣṭhitam. Tat kasya hetoh? Avidyamānatvāt tasya nāmadheyasya.

⁶ Sata., p. 552.

(illusory men) and makes them pass through all the stages of sanctification and attain omniscience, no one inquires about the existence of the māyāpuruṣas, their practices or attainments.¹ Similarly we should not trouble ourselves with the definition of either a monk or his nirvāṇa. On ultimate analysis monk and nirvāṇa do not exist; they are hallucinations, and both being unreal (śūnya), the monk and nirvāṇa are the same in character. So we should remove all misconceptions about the world and make the realisation of advayam advaidhīkāram (non-duality) of everything whatsoever as our aim.²

Nāgārjuna on Nirvāņa

Nāgārjuna also supports this conception but his arguments are those of an expert logician and philosopher. He takes into account the views of the Hinayanists, mainly the Sarvāstivādins and shows the weak bases of their views. The Hinayanists, he says, speak of two kinds of Nirvana, sopādiśesa and nirupādiśesa, and think that Nirvāna is the nirodha (extinction) of kleśas (defiling elements) and skandhas (constituents) existing in a being. They wonder how the Mahāyānists can conceive Nirvāna if they think that everything is unreal (sūnya) without origin and decay. What is it then, from which Nirvana confers release. Nagarjuna answers: If kleśas (defiling elements) and skandhas (constituents) be elements existing by themselves, how can they be destroyed? 3 The Śūnyatāvādins do not seek a Nirvāņa where there is an end of klesas and skandhas. Their Nirvāna is

Aprahīṇam asamprāptam anucchinnam aśāśvatam, Aniruddham anutpannam etan nirvāṇam ucyate. (Nirvāṇa is that which is neither discarded nor attained; it is neither a thing destroyed nor a thing eternal; it is

¹ S'ata., pp. 886ff.

² Ibid., p. 825: Sarvākārajñatā advayā advaidhīkārā sarvadharmābhāvasvabhāvatām upādāya.

³ The arguments of Nāgārjuna are found in the *Mādhyamika Vrtti*, Ch. XXV translated by Professor Stcherbatsky as an Appendix to his *Con. of N*. In places, however, there are differences between Stcherbatsky's interpretation and the one that is given here.

neither suppressed nor does it arise). Candrakirti, in commenting upon this verse, says that it is not to be eradicated like raga (passion) etc. nor to be attained like the fruits of a saintly life (e.g. srotāpatti, sakṛdāgāmi, etc.). It is not eternal like aśūnya (real elements).1 It is by its nature without origin and decay, and its laksana (characteristic) is that it does not admit of description.2 In such an indescribable thing, how can an imagination (kalpanā) of the existence of klesas and skandhas, and their eradication through Nirvana find a place? So long as those activities of our imagination continue to exist, there can be no Nirvāna. Nirvāna is realised only when all prapancas, i.e., attempts at particularization or definition cease. argument of the Sarvāstivādins that even admitting the nonexistence of kleśas and skandhas at the stage where Nirvāna is reached, it may be that they exist in samsara, i.e., before the attainment of Nirvana,—the Mahayanists give the forcible reply that there is not the slightest difference between Nirvāna and Samsāra. So, in fact, Nirvāna requires no process of eradication. Nirvana is really the complete disappearance (ksaya) of all figments of the imagination. The klesas, skandhas, etc., the disappearance of which is generally supposed to be necessary in Nirvana,3 have, according to the Madhyamikas, no real existence whatsoever. Those who cannot get rid of the conception of "I-ness" or "Mine-ness" usually assume the existence of non-existent things. The sufferings of those who are in a stage in which they recognize the existence and non-existence of things will never end. Candrakīrti includes in the category of such sufferers the schools of Kanada, Kapila, etc. and also the Vaibhāṣikas who believe in the existence of real entities; he also includes the Atheists (Nāstikas4) who deny their existence, the Sautrantikas who deny the existence of

¹ Prof. Stcherbatsky suggests in the footnote that Aśūnya=Nirvāṇa of the Hīnayānists=Pradhāna of the Sāṃkhya.

² Prof. Stcherbatsky translates 'prapanca' by plurality and then sometimes even stretches this sense of the word.

³ M. Vr., p. 445.

⁴ Prof. Stcherbatsky prefers to call the Nāstikas, Materialists.

the past, the future and the citta-viprayuktas 1 but admit that of all else, and the Yogācāras who do not believe in the existence of parikalpita (imaginary) things but admit the reality of the parinispanna (the ultimate)—the pure consciousness (vijñaptimātratā).2 Nāgārjuna savs that Nirvana does not consist in the eradication or destruction of anything. It is really the avoidance of all imagination (kalpana) of eradication, destruction, etc. Just as a man imagines that he has taken poison and faints, though, in fact, the poison has not entered his stomach, so also a being in this world, not knowing really what the ego is, conceives of "I-ness" and "Mine-ness," and suffers on that account. Nirvana is beyond the limits of existence (bhava) and non-existence (abhāva). A being fancies that something exists and that Nirvana is the end of it, while, in fact, that something does not exist and therefore there can be neither its continuance nor extinction. Nirvana really consists in the avoidance of the conception that something exists.3

According to Nāgārjuna, there are some (referring to the Vaibhāṣikas, etc.) who contend that Nirvāṇa does exist, for it works as a bar to the current of passions (kleśas), deeds (karmas), and births (janmas) like a dam arresting the course of a stream, and that a thing which is non-existent cannot be an effective barrier like a dam. In reply to this it is argued (by the Sautrāntikas) that Nirvāṇa has been defined as the effacement (kṣaya) of desires together with pleasures (nandī) and passions (rāga). So what is mere extinction cannot have any existence. It is like the extinction of the flame of a lamp. This argument does not convince those who conceive Nirvāṇa as a real object, for, according to them, the extinction of desires happens in the Dharma called Nirvāṇa.4

¹ M. V_T ., pp. 444–5: Sautrāntikamate 'tītānāgatam śūnyam anyad. asūnyam, viprayuktā vijnaptih sūnyā.

² M. Vr., p. 445. In the enumeration of schools it will be observed that the Sthaviravadins have been omitted, as also the Vedantists.

³ Cf. the Prajnāpāramitā view, ante, pp. 185-6.

⁴ This controversy is given also in the Kośa, see ante.

Nagar) na refutes the opinion that Nirvana is a bhava (real thing) on the following grounds:

- (i) that a really existent entity like vijnana (consciousness) must suffer decay and death which Nirvana cannot, and therefore that which has no decay and death cannot be said to have any form of existence;
- (ii) that an existent entity like vijnana is necessarily constituted (saṃskṛta) but Nirvaṇa is unconstituted (asaṃskṛta) and hence cannot have existence;
- (iii) that an existent entity requires for its origin a causal substratum (svakāraṇasāmagrī), but Nirvāṇa does not require any, for it must be without a substratum (anupādāva).

As against the opinion that Nirvāna is merely abhāva (non-existence), an opinion held by the Sautrāntikas, Nāgārjuna adduces the following reasons:

- (i) Nirvāṇa is not what is said to be the absence of defiling element (kleśa), birth (janma), etc., for, that would make transitoriness (anityatā) of kleśa, janma, etc. the same as Nirvāṇa. Transitoriness is the absence of kleśa and janma and nothing else, and so if Nirvāṇa be the absence of kleśa and janma then it must be the same as transitoriness of kleśa and janma, and in that case no exertion would be required to attain Nirvāṇa—which is not admitted.
- (ii) If Nirvāṇa be abhāva (non-existence), how can it be spoken of as being without any substratum and without any reference to a bhāva (existent thing)? For no question of substratum (upādāna) can arise in regard to a non-existent thing. Against this may be raised the objection that the son of a barren woman or the horn of a hare is also said to be an abhāva (absence) without any positive counterpart. Nāgārjuna meets this by saying that abhāva (non-existence) implies a change (anyathābhāva) undergone by a thing which is existent, while the son of a barren woman or the horn of a hare is only imagination (kalpanā) without implying the existence of any object. As there can be no abhāvā (absence) without a positive counterpart, so Nirvāṇa is not abhāva.

¹ M. Vr., Ch. XV, 5, p. 267.

Nāgārjuna now proceeds to state his conception of Nirvāna, which is neither bhāva nor abhāva. He savs that coming and going, birth and death, are regarded sometimes as existing relatively, either antithetically like long and short, or as cause and effect like the lamp and its light. or the seed and its sprout. In both cases, they are shown to be a complex of causes and conditions. Everything whatsoever must therefore have a cause and a condition, but Nirvana, in which birth and death have ceased, is uncaused and unconditioned and hence not produced (apravrtti). Existence or non-existence cannot be predicated of what is not produced; so Nirvana is neither existence nor nonexistence. Those (i.e., the Sarvastivadins and the Sthaviras) who believe in the transmigration of constituents (samskāras) state that the group of constituents has for origin and decay a causal basis. When there is no causal basis, the group is no longer produced (apravartamana). Then it is called Those (i.e., the Sammitivas) who believe in the transmigration of pudgala (personality) say that permanence (nityatva) or impermanence (anityatva) cannot be predicated of personality. Its coming and going happen through its corresponding upādāna (substratum) and are dependent on it. When the substratum of this personality ceases to exist, then it is called Nirvana. Nagarjuna contends that the presence (bhava) and absence (abhava) of the mere nonappearance (apravrttimātrakam) of constituents (samskāras) or the personality (pudgala) cannot be conceived; similarly the existence (bhava) and non-existence (abhava) of Nirvana cannot be affirmed. In support of his contention he quotes the saying of Buddha that desire for both existence (bhava) and non-existence (vibhava) should be given up, and points out that Buddha did not say that desire for Nirvana should be given up. If Nirvāna has the nature of existence (bhāvarūpa) or the nature of non-existence (abhāvarūpa), then, according to Buddha, it must be given up; so existence and non-existence cannot be predicated of Nirvana.

There are again some (i.e., the Vaibhāṣikas) who contend that Nirvāṇa is both existence (bhāva) and non-existence (abhāva). It is abhāva because in it there is absence of

passion, birth, etc. It is bhāva because it exists by itself. Nāgārjuna refutes this on four grounds, saying that Nirvāṇa cannot be both bhāva and abhāva, for, in that case,

- (i) Mokṣa (deliverance) would be bhāva and abhāva, and this would mean that the presence of saṃskāras as well as their extinction represents deliverance (mokṣa). But the former cannot be mokṣa, and therefore Nirvāṇa is not both bhāva and abhāva.
- (ii) Nirvāṇa would be a dependent existence, for both bhāva and abhāva exist or arise through cause and condition. But as it is not so dependent, it is without any substratum.
- (iii) Nirvāṇa would be caused and conditioned (saṃskṛta), for bhāva and abhāva cannot but be uncaused and unconditioned.
- (iv) In Nirvāṇa, both bhāva and abhāva would exist together but this is impossible, for light and darkness cannot be simultaneously present at the same place. Hence Nirvāṇa cannot be both bhāva and abhāva.

Lastly, Nāgārjuna takes up the question whether Nirvāṇa is the negation of both bhāva and abhāva and shows that it cannot be so by two arguments:

- (i) If bhāva and abhāva could have been realized, the negation of them would have been conceived as Nirvāṇa but as what is really bhāva and abhāva is not known, it is inconsistent to describe Nirvāṇa by their negation.
- (ii) If it be imagined that Nirvāṇa is neither not-bhāva nor not-abhāva, it is impossible to ascertain the knower of such Nirvāṇa. If it be admitted that beings in the phenomenal world cognize it, it may be asked whether they cognize it empirically by vijñāna (consciousness) or metaphysically by jñāna (knowledge). Vijñāna (empirical consciousness) needs signs (nimitta) for cognition but Nirvāṇa is animitta (signless). Jñāna (transcendental knowledge) has śūnyatā (essencelessness) as its basis. It is originless (anutpāda) and formless (arūpa). How then with the help of this knowledge, which is indefinable, and escapes every attempt at clear expression, can it be cognized definitely that Nirvāṇa is neither not-bhāva nor not-abhāva? What cannot be

cognized or understood (lit. grasped) cannot be said to have existence.

Nāgārjuna then points out that the fourteen problems, which Buddha did not think worth answering (avyākṛtaṃ),¹ prove only the non-existence of things in reality and the identity of saṃsāra and nirvāṇa.

If everything be non-existent some may question, why it is said that Buddha preached his dharma, and for whose benefit he preached it. Nāgārjuna answers this question by saying that the Mādhyamikas define Nirvāṇa as the cessation (upaśama), and of not being in process (apravṛtti) of prapañca (expressibility) and nimitta (signs) and as a state the nature of which is upaśānta (quiet) and śiva (peaceful). When Buddha is in Nirvāṇa (a state as described above), how can he be expected to have preached doctrines to men and gods? In the Tathāgataguhya-sūtra it is said that not a single word was uttered by Buddha between the attainment of bodhi and mahāparinirvāṇa, but people, according to their individual tendencies and aims of life, conceive Buddha as giving discourses.

Conclusion of the Prajñāpāramitās and Madhyamakakārikā

Nāgārjuna, we see, leads us through a maze of arguments to the same conclusion that the *Prajāāpāramitās* have reached by every possible negation. Candrakīrti quotes a stanza from the *Prajāāpāramitā* itself in support of Nāgārjuna's contention that Nirvāṇa or the Truth is the inexpressible absolute and is different from the Tathatā or Tathā-

```
1 See, e.g., Digha, I, pp. 187 ff.; M.Vr., p. 536.
```

Prapancopasama=vācām apravṛttiḥ Śiva=cittasya apravṛttiḥ " =kleśānām apravṛttiḥ " =janmano apravṛttiḥ

=kleśaprahāṇena " =niravaśeṣa-

vāsanāprahāņena ,, =jūeyānupalabdhyā ,, =jīānānupalabdhyā.

3 M. Vr., p. 539: Avāca'nakṣarāḥ sarvasūnyāḥ sāntādinirmalāḥ, Ya evam jānāti dharmān kumāro buddha socvate.

Cf. Lankā., p. 194: Uktam deśanāpāthe mayānyais ca buddhabodhisattvair yathaikam apyakṣaram tathāgatā nodāharanti na pratyāharantī ti.

^{* 2} M. Vr., p. 538:

gata, descriptions of which are to be found in Mahāyānic works. The stanza runs thus:

Tathāgato hi pratibimbabhūtaḥ kuśalasya dharmasya anāsravasya, Naivātra tathatā na tathāgato 'sti bimbam ca saṃdṛśyati sarvaloke.¹

[Tathāgata is an image of good and pure dharma, there is (in reality) no Tathatā or Tathāgata; only images are visible in all the worlds.]

In connection with the discussion on the existence and non-existence of samskāras, Nāgārjuna likewise points out that if Tathatā be equated with 'tathābhāvo 'vikāritvam sadaiva sthāyitā' (sameness, changelessness and ever-existence),2 as is done by the Yogācārins, then he would also assert that that Tathatā is non-existent. By all these negations Nāgārjuna only tries to show that the difference between the Madhyamikas and the Yogacarins 3 consists in the fact that the former, unlike the latter, do not enter into the question of existence and non-existence of the Reality. Candrakīrti, however, apprehends that such a denial of the existence of Buddha or Tathagata might lead people to the belief that Nagarjuna preached pure and simple negativism; so he says, "we do not assert the non-existence (nāstitva) in every way of the inexpressible Tathagata, for in that case we should be guilty of apavada (denial)".4 Mādhyamikas assert that the Reality is beyond determination, i.e., statements like śūnya, aśūnya, both śūnya and aśūnya or not both śūnya and aśūnya cannot be made about it. These statements are used in the texts for the sake of prajñapti (communication). We should bear in mind that whenever Nāgārjuna negatives the existence of Tathatā or Tathagata or any other synonym of it, he attributes to it. the sense commonly accepted by the imperfect bodhisattvas

¹ M. Vr., pp. 449, 540. ² Ibid., p. 265.

³ Ibid., p. 275: Madhyamakadaráana evāstītva-nāstitva-dvaya-darśanasyāprasango na Vijnānavādidaráanādisviti vijneyam.

 $^{^4~}M.~Vr.,~\rm p.~443:$ Na ca vayam sarvathaiva nisprapaūcānām tathāgatānām nāstitvam brumo yad asmākam tad apavādakṛto doṣaḥ syāt.

or the Yogācārins. So, in fact, Nāgārjuna does now teach pure and simple negativism. But it should be remembered that there were among the followers of Nagarjuna some who interpreted Nāgārjuna's principle as absolute nihilism and we may regard Bhavaviveka as a prominent exponent of this view. But from this fact it does not follow that Nāgāriuna himself or his followers in general denied a supreme and ineffable reality, Tathatā or Śūnyatā and at least such negativism is not supported by the Mahāprajñāpāramitāšāstra of Nāgārjuna. The object of the Prajnāpāramitas as well as of the Madhyamakakarika is to establish a Unity corresponding to the Vedantic Absolute. The most characteristic mark, however, of the Vedantic Absolute is that it is of the nature of pure intelligence (cit) and bliss (ananda). In the Unity of Nagarjuna bliss at least is totally absent. Santa and siva are the two terms which find place in Nagarjuna's conception of the Reality; hence it would be assuming too much to find in his conception a full-fledged Vedāntic Brahman—an all-pervading 'I' which Buddha categorically denies.¹ According to Dr. Das Gupta, it approaches more the Nyāya-Vaiśesika conception of mukti, i.e., a state entirely devoid of quality of any sort, either abstract or attributive, in which "the self remains in itself in its own purity, unassociated with pleasure, pain, knowledge, willing, etc."2 The Madhyamika reality or Nirvana may well, therefore, be said to have a resemblance to the impersonal aspect of the Vedantic Brahman but not to its other aspects.3

¹ Cf. Beal, Catena etc., pp. 175ff (from Chinese sources); Lańkā., p. 78 in connection with Tathāgatagarbha; Reischauer, Studies in Japanese Buddhism (1925), p. 63: "Nothing is more striking than the similarities between the Vedānta philosophy and the speculations of Mahāyāna Buddhism; the one is as characteristically metaphysical in its mould as the other".

² Das Gupta, Ind. Phil., p. 366 quoting Nyāyamanjari, pp. 499ff.

³ Cf. Dr. Barnett's remarks in his Intro. to the *Path of Light*, pp. 29-30: "The Vedāntic metaphysicians could find no term to predicate of Brahman, the absolute, transcendental Reality but 'nay, nay'! And it is rather in this sense that we should interpret the negations of the Mahāyāna philosophers".

THE Lankāvatāra on NIRVĀŅA

We conclude our examination of Nirvana by ascertaining what the Lankavatara, an authoritative and early text of the Yogācārins, says about it. At the outset it may be said that the Yogācārins agreed with the Mādhyamikas so far as the unreality of the things of this world and the nonduality (advaya) of samsara and airvana is concerned. The Madhyamikas were not prepared to establish any relation between the phenomenal world and the absolute except by remarking that from time immemorial beings have been subject to delusion, rendering them unable to realise the Truth unless and until they become Buddhas, after going through the processes prescribed in Mahāyāna works. The Yogācārins differed from the Mādhyamikas in attempting to find a relation between the absolute and the individual, and in doing so they asserted that there exists only citta (cittamātra) or vijnāna (vijnānamātra).2 This citta or vijnāna. better known as Ālaya-vijñāna (store of consciousness, the substratum of samsāra), though originally pure, becomes polluted by delusions and dichotomizes itself into me and not-me, subject and object, the former becoming mind (manas) and the latter the external world. So, according to the Yogācārins, Nirvāna consists in the ceasing of the mind to dichotomize and in realising that there exists only citta and that the phenomenal world is only a delusion of the citta. The Lankavatara says that Nirvana consists in the removal of the imagining intellect (vikalpasya manovijñānasya vyāvrttir nirvānam ity ucyate),3 the source of seven vinanas and that it is not any one of the following four as conceived by the heretics:4

- (i) absence of any real existence (bhāvasvabhāvābhāva);
- (ii) absence of the various forms of existence (lakṣaṇa-vicitra-bhāvābhāva);
- (iii) realisation of the absence of the existence of one's own signs (svalakṣaṇabhāvābhāvāvabodha); and

¹ Cf. e.g. Lanka., p. 76; M. Vr., p. 537.

² For criticism of this, see M. Vr., pp. 274ff.

³ Lankā., p. 126.

⁴ Ibid

(iv) destruction of the chain of continuity of the general characteristics (svasāmānyalakaṣaṇa-saṃtati-praban/ha-vyuc-cheda)¹.

According to the Lankāvatāra,² Nirvāna is the transformation (parāvṛtti) of vijñānas, mind, etc. It is devoid of the mental distinctions of existence and non-existence, and of eternal and non-eternal. It is not eternal, because it has no distinct generic characteristics, and it is not non-eternal because it can be realized by saints (āryas). It resembles neither death nor destruction.³

The Lankavatara then proceeds to elucidate its position by enumerating the different conceptions of Nirvana current among the non-Yogācārins, and remarks in a general way that all these conceptions are defective, because they fall under either of the two extremes of 'is' and 'is not'4. The conception of Nirvana mentioned last among the non-Yogācāra conceptions, however, appears to be Mahāyānic. It runs thus: There are some who declare that Nirvana is the removal (vyāvṛtti) of citta, manas and manovijñāna by passing from one bhumi to another till the attainment of the Tathagatabhumi, and practice of the samadhi of Maya, etc., appertaining thereto by (i) realising that everything is a fancy of one's own mind, (ii) not occupying oneself with the existence and non-existence of external things, (iii) ascertaining the true nature (yathābhūta) of things, (iv) non-perceiving subject and object without being deluded by the two extremes which follow from one's own thought-constructions, (v) realising the ineffectiveness of having recourse to proofs, (vi) knowing that the truth is a matter only of selfrealisation, (vii) comprehending two nairātmyas, and (viii) removing the two kinds of klesas (intellectual and habitual) and the two screens (āvaraņas: kleśa and jñeya). various conceptions which non-Buddhists hold in regard to Nirvāna are their imaginations. Moksa (emancipation) and moksopaya (means of emancipation), about which they

¹ Lankā., p. 157: The Śrāvakas are referred to as svasāmānya-lakṣa-napatitāśayābhiniviṣtāḥ.

² Ibid., pp. 98-9. 3 Ibid., p. 66.

⁴ Ibid., pp. 182-7: for a summary see E.B., IV, pp. 226ff.

speak, do not really exist but the teachers have vikalpa (thought-construction) about them and think of the action and the actor, existence (sat) and non-existence (asat), and busy themselves in falpa (useless talks) and prapañca (diffuse talks). Just as forms in a mirror are seen but do not exist there, so also in the mirror of vasana 1 foolish people see the citta as twofold (dvidhā)2. Not knowing cittadrśva (citta-image) truly, the ignorant form vikalpas of the seen and the seer, whereas in fact there is only one citta, devoid of laksya and laksana (percipient and percept). The Lankāvatāra then goes into details of this exposition, asserting that Tathagata or Buddha is beyond predications and cannot be said to be made (krtaka) or unmade (akrtaka), cause or effect, for such predication would be doubly faulty. If the Tathagata be krtaka, he would be anitya and identical with all actions, which are by nature impermanent, and if he be akrtaka, he would be non-existent,3 and the merits so far collected by him become useless, and he becomes non-existent as a sky-flower. So the Tathagata should be regarded as beyond four-fold limitations and hence beyond proofs, and is only to be realised within one's own self. When Buddha speaks about things as nirātma, he refers to phenomenal things and not to the Tathagata. A Tathagata is neither the same nor different from the skandhas; hence he is neither nitya nor anitya. Similarly he is not the same nor lifferent from moksa. In this way, if no statement can be made about the Tathagata, and if he is beyond proofs, he turns into a word without any origin and destruction and can be equated with ākāśa, having nothing to rest upon (nirālamba) and beyond prapanca.4 Though the Tathāgata is called Anutpāda-anirodha, it must not be supposed that 'Tathagata' means only absence (abhava) of

¹ Vāsanā=knowledge derived from memory=present consciousness of past perceptions, or an impression remaining unconsciously in the mind from past good or evil actions and hence producing pleasure and pain (saṃskāra). See Monier Williams' *Dict.* sv. Vāsanā.

² Lankā., p. 182.

³ Alabdhātmakāḥ=na lakṣaṇataḥ kalpyāḥ, see Lankā., p. 19.

⁴ Cf. M. Vr., p. 536.

something; this Anutpāda-anirodha is really the name of the Manomaya-dharmakāya² (=Svasambhogakāya) and is not in fact the Reality, the real Tathāgata (=Dharmakāya).

Points of agreement and difference re. Nirvāņa in Hīnayānic and Mahāyānic works

Without going into the discussion on the conception of Nirvāṇa which Buddha had in his mind, and which is to be found in the Piṭakas—a topic ably discussed in many works, the latest of which is Professor La Vallée Poussin's Nirvāṇa—we shall compare here the conceptions as found in the Kathāvatthu, Visuddhimagga and Abhidharmakoša on the one hand, and the Prajñāpāramitā, Mādhyamika Vṛtti, and Lankāvatāra on the other.

All these texts agree in regard to the following points:-

- (i) Nirvāṇa is inexpressible (niṣprapañca); it is unconstituted, and has no origin, no decay and no change.
- (ii) It is to be realised only within one's own self—the pratyātmavedya of the Yogācārins and the paccattam veditabbam (viññūhi) of the Hīnayānists.
- (iii) It is not abhāva (absence of anything) as maintained by the Sautrāntikas.
- (iv) It is one and the same for all Buddhas, past, present and future.
 - (v) Mārga leads to Nirvāņa.
 - (vi) Individuality ceases in Nirvana.
- (vii) The Hīnayānists, in agreement with the Mahāyānists, hold that Buddhas possess extraordinary powers and knowledge, far superior to the Arhats. But they do not consider that the Nirvāṇa attained by Buddha is different from that attained by the Arhat.³ They thus object to the assertion of the Mahāyānists that the Nirvāṇa of the Arhats is a lower and not a perfect state.

¹ Lankā., p. 191.
2 See ante, p. 122.

³ Jāt., I, Dīpankara Buddha is said to have attained anupādisesanibbānadhātu.

(viii) Vimukti (freedom) from afflictions (kleśa) as an aspect of Nirvana is the same for Arhats and Buddhas.¹

The points of difference regarding the conception of Nirvāṇa as found in the works mentioned above are:—

(i) The K., V. and A.² mention that Nirvāṇa is existing, eternal (nitya), blissful (sukha) and pure (śuci). The Yogācārins subscribe to this statement when they identify Apratiṣṭhita Nirvāṇa with Dharmakāya.³ Strictly speaking both the Mādhyamikas and the Yogācārins do not predicate of Nirvāṇa anything like eternal or non-eternal (nitya or anitya), blissful or without bliss (sukha or asukha), pure or impure (śuci or aśuci), for Nirvāṇa to them is beyond all predication and hence cannot be called nitya, anitya and so forth.

The Mahāyānists following the warning of Buddha against the two extremes of śāśvata and uccheda decline to apply the predications to everything, including Nirvāṇa, but the K. and V. state that Buddha's warning refers only to the conception of soul, and not to Nirvāṇa.

- (ii) The K., V. and A. consider that Nirvāna is a thing to be acquired (prāptam) while the M. and L.⁴ consider it to be unobtainable (asamprāptam).
- (iii) The K, and V, maintain that Nirvāṇa forms an ārammaṇa (basis) for meditation and knowledge of monks. The M, and L, do not distinguish between Nirvāṇa and the monk, knowable and the knower, object and the subject.
- (iv) The K., V. and A. define Nirvāna as a lokottara (transcendental) state, and as really the highest possible state conceivable by them.

The L. and M. recognise a state higher than lokottara (L. calls it lokottaratama) and identify it with Nirvāṇa, remarking that in this state sarvajñatā (omniscience) is obtained—a state unattainable by the Hīnayānists.

The Yogācārins are of opinion that the Hīnayānists attain

¹ Sūtrā., p. 36.

² K. stands for Kathāvatthu; V. for Visuddhimagga; and A. for Abhidharmakośa.

³ Suzuki, Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism, p. 354.

⁴ M. stands for Mādhyamika Vṛtti and L. for Lankāvatāra.

only Vimuktikāya or Mokṣa, while the Mahāyānists attain Dharmakāya and Sarvajñatva. The Hīnayānists subscribe to this view, for, according to them, Buddha is far superior in knowledge and powers to an Arhat and is omniscient while an Arhat is not.

- (v) The Hīnayānists know only two forms of Nirvāṇa, sopādiseṣa and nirupādiseṣa, or pratisaṃkhyā and apratisaṃkhyā. The Yogācārins add to them Prakṛtisuddha nirvāṇa 1 and Apratiṣṭhita nirvāṇa.²
- (vi) The Mādhyamikas consider that Nirvāṇa is the impersonal absolute immanent in nature, and the only reality.

¹ Cf. M. Vr., p. 541; atyantaparinirvrta.

2 The Apratisthita Nirvāṇa is the state of one who after obtaining sopādisesa-nibbānadhātu develops maitrī, benevolence or charity for the suffering millions and chooses not to let himself automatically pass, as he would otherwise, to anupadisesanibbana-dhatu [Cf. Panca. (A.S.B.ms.), leaf 157a: Srāvakā nirupadhiśc sanirvāņadhātau pratisthitāh]. He is then said to be possessed of Nirvana tinged with charity or benevolence. The Sūtrālankāra (pp. 126-7) puts it very clearly: The Śrāvakas and Pratyekabuddhas, being devoid of love, fix their minds on Nirvāṇa, consisting in the cessation of all misery. The Bodhisattvas, however, being full of compassion, do not like to fix their minds on Nirvana: hence they are said to be in the Apratisthita Nirvana. It will be noted that the Arhats are not entitled to seek the Apratisthita Nirvāņa; they pass directly from sopadhisesa to nirupadhisesa-nirvāṇadhātu. The Apratisthita Nirvāṇa can be obtained by Buddhas only, and hence it is a state superior to that of the The Vijnaptimātratā adds that Buddhas in the Apratisthita Nirvāņa rise above the idea of Samsāra and Nirvāņa (ef. Sūtrālankāra, p. 36); hence Śākyamuni was not really influenced by love or charity after the attainment of Nirvana. The Hinayanists conceive him as one without love (cf. Milindapañha, p. 160: vigatam tathagatassa pemam vigato sineho), though in fact, they repeatedly mention that he preached the Truth out of compassion for the innumerable suffering beings (lokānukampāya bahujanahitāya sukhāya). Compassion presupposes the existence of love, which may be, and in fact in the case of Buddha (but not of Bodhisattvas) was purely unselfish and, as the Mahāyānists say, devoid of klesa. For a detailed treatment of the Apratisthita Nirvāna see Masuda, Die individualistische Idealismus der Yogācāra Schule, pp. 49 f.; Stcherbatsky, Con. of N., pp. 185, 245-6; Lévi, Mahāyāna Sūtrālankāra, ii, pp. 21, 27; Keith, B. Phil., pp. 257-8; Bodhic., p. 75; Vijñaptimātratā, x, pp. 99 (ed. of Saeki Kiokuga).

everything else being mere thought-construction. It appears like the Absolute of the Vedānta, but lacks the *cit* (consciousness) and *ānanda* (bliss) of the latter.

From this it follows that there is the dharma-samatā or the sameness of all things, even of nirvāṇa and saṃsāra. These are related to each other as the sea and the waves.

(vii) The Mādhyamikas hold with the Yogācārins that Nirvāṇa is advaya (non-dual), i.e., in it there is no duality of subject and object, or positive and negative; and that all worldly things are mere illusions.

(viii) The Mahāyānists conceive two 'screens' called kleśāvaraṇa and jñeyāvaraṇa¹ which operate as hindrances to the attainment of Nirvāṇa. They hold that the Hīnayānists can get rid of only the kleśāvaraṇa, while they themselves get rid of both.

CONCLUSION

The agreements and disagreements in the accounts of Nirvāṇa, as noticed above, point to the following conclusions:

The Hīnayānic Nirvāṇa, i.e., the Nirvāṇa as described in the literature of the Theravāda school, clearly refers to a Unity eternally existing beyond the three worlds (Kāma, Rūpa and Arūpa dhātus). It is infinite, inexpressible, unborn, and undecaying. It is homogeneous (ekarasa) and knows no individuality. In it, all discriminations or dichotomy cease. Many of the aspects of Ākāśa (space) and the ocean bear comparison with those of Nirvāṇa.

Every being is a conglomeration of elements, which can be classified under the five heads, rupa, vedana, saña, sankhara and viñana; hence one being is not essentially different from another, an ordinary man is not different from a perfected saint. But if the nature and proportion of each of the five constituents existing in an individual be taken into account, then one being is different from another, an ordinary man is different from a perfected saint. It is in this way that the Buddhist saying 'n'eva so na ca añao' (neither the same nor different) is explained.

¹ For details, see ante. Also Lanka., pp. 97, 241.

The combination of elements is the outcome of Karma (past deeds) and is happening every moment (kṣuṇika), implying that the disintegration of elements always precedes it. The elements in a combined state pass as an individual, and from time immemorial he labours under the misconception of a self and of things relating to a self. His vision being distorted or obscured by ignorance of the truth he cannot perceive the momentary combination and disintegration of elements. On the other hand, he is subject to an inclination for them. A perfect man with his vision cleared by the Buddhistic practices and culture realises the real state of things, viz., that an individual consists of the five elements and does not possess a permanent and unchanging entity called soul.

The elements, combined under the force of karma, pass as an individual, who becomes deluded by misconceptions. He weaves a net of fancies around himself and believes he is related in some way or other to things or individuals. Because of such illusions he experiences endless sufferings, or according to the Mahāyānists, thinks of himself as suffering, on account of his supposed separation from people or things near and dear to him, or through supposed disorders or derangements of his mental and physical system.

It is for these deluded so-called individuals that Buddhism prescribes the eightfold path. By following it an individual ultimately realises the transitoriness of things, to which he has hitherto attributed some form of existence, and finds that the elements, by which he thought himself constituted, are ultimately not constituents peculiar to him but common to all other so-called beings. He is then said to have attained Nirvāṇa, i.e., a mental state in which he can no longer distinguish himself as an individual different from the infinite elements constituting the universe. In other words, all individuality ends in it. In that state of Nirvāṇa Gautama Buddha is not different from Śāriputra—all are one and the same.

The Mahāyānic conception of Nirvāṇa is completely different from the Hinayānic. The fundamental point of difference is that the Mahāyānists deny the existence of elements

altogethe. They do not know of any other reality but the truth, the Dharmakaya or Dharmadhatu. Many of the aspects of their conception are brought out by the various terms used in Mahāvānic works. For instance, when Nirvāna is equated with śūnyatā, the implication is that all things which are ordinarily supposed to exist are really nonexistent just as the mirage has no substantiality whatever. e.g., the prthivī-dhātu is void (śūnya) of real origination, destruction, or existence in reality.1 When it is equated with Tathatā or Dharmatā, the implication is that all things of this world are essentially of the same nature, void of any name or substratum.2 It is that which is neither exist-Śūnyatā represents the negative ence nor non-existence.3 and Tathatā the positive aspects of the Truth. When it is called bhūtakoti (true limit), it is implied that on analysis of dharmas, which are false designations, one arrives finally at the Reality, beyond which it is impossible to pass and which alone is true. Some of the other expressions which are often used as synonyms of Nirvāna are, -avitathatā (not untruth); ananyatathatā (unique); aviparyāsatathatā (irreversible); paramārtha (the highest truth), tattva (the essence); acintvadhātu (incomprehensible substance), dharmadhātu (totality of things), dharmasthiti (substratum of things); supraśanta (perfectly calm, unruffled by origination or destruction); advaya and advaidhīkāra (non-separable and non-divisible).4

The Mahāvānists hold that all beings other than Buddhas are under delusions, the nature of which varies according to their spiritual advancement. An ordinary man is as much under a delusion that he has a son or property as the Hinayanic saints, the Arhats, who think that they have attained Nirvana, a state of perfect rest and happiness, and have gone beyond the three worlds. The contention of the Mahāyānists is that the only reality is Nirvāna or Dharmadhātu, everything else being a delusion of the mind.

¹ Siksā., p. 246. ² Lankā., p. 226. 3 Siksā., p. 263.

⁴ Cf. Samyutta, II, pp. 25ff; "Iti kho, bhikkhave, yā tatra tathatā avitathatā anannatathatā idapaccayatā, ayam vuccati, bhikkhave, paticcasamuppado ti. For explanation of the words in italics, see Vis. M., p. 518.

moment an individual realises that he is the Reality, that Saṃsāra is identical with Nirvāṇa, he becomes perfect, i.e., a Buddha. One must eradicate from his mind the conception not only of his own individuality but also of the substantiality of anything whatsoever perceived or cognized by him. When a being attains a state of mind, in which he cannot distinguish himself from any other thing of the world or from the Absolute, he is said to attain Nirvāṇa in the Mahāyānic sense.

DOCTRINE OF NIRVANA

(d). The Doctrine of Truths

An important point of difference between Hinayana and Mahāyāna pointed out by the Saddharma-Pundarīka is that, according to the former, a being, by comprehending the Āryasatyas including the Pratītyasamutpāda, attains Nirvāņa, i.e., he passes from samsāra to nirvāna, from a laukika to lokottara state; while, according to the latter, a being, by comprehending the fact that there is no difference between samsara and nirvana, that the world has only a relative existence (pratītyasamutpanna) and that it is unreal but appears real to a deluded mind, realises the true Nirvāna, which is nothing but the Śūnyatā or Tathatā. the absolute principle underlying the universe. The conceptions of the Reality being so wide apart, the Hinavanists and the Mahāyānists look upon everything including the Buddhistic practices from two quite different angles of vision. To the Hīnayānists, the Aryasatvas and the Pratītyasamutpāda are real and hence belong to the domain of the highest truth (paramattha and not sammuti), while to the Mahāyānists, they are unreal and belong to the domain of convention (samvrti or parikalpita-paratantra). The Mahavanists, however, could not do away with the four truths and the formula of the chain of causation, for, they held that beings, deluded as they are, should at the beginning try to comprehend the Pudgala-sūnyatā through them. In consonance with their conception of the Reality, the Mahāyānists held that Buddha had two forms of teaching, conventional and transcendental, and that whatever he said about the Āryasatyas or Pratītyasamutpāda were conventional, his real teaching being Sunyata or Tathata, which could not be imparted by one to another and could be realised only within one's own self. Before we enter into the discussion about his two forms of teaching, let us see what the Āryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda are.

THE ĀRYASATYAS

The Aryasatyas, as commonly known, are dukkho (misery), samudaya (origin of misery), nirodha (cessation of misery) and magga (means of the cessation of misery). The underlying teaching of these four truths is that they are to be treated as formulæ for application to everything perceived. That these four truths constitute merely a formula and not a doctrine has been brought out very clearly in many Buddhist texts. In the Majjhima Nikāya 1 while giving an exposition of what the right view (sammāditthi) is according to the Buddhists, Sāriputta takes up, for instance, āhāra (food), dukkha (misery), jarāmarana (old age and death). tanhā (desire), nāmarūpa (name and form) and avijjā (ignorance) and applies to each of them the fourfold formula, examining it in this way: Take up for consideration a material or an immaterial thing. Ascertain its origin. Inquire how it decays. In pursuance of this method Sāriputta defines Sammāditthi through āhāra thus: One who knows āhāra (food), āhārasamudaya (how food originates), āhāranirodha (how food decays) and āhāranirodhagāminipatipadā (the way in which the decay of food happens) possesses Sammāditthi. The first truth relates to Ahāra which, in the Buddhist philosophy, is of four kinds.2 The second truth is āhārasamudaya, i.e., āhāra comes into existence on account of tanhā. The third truth is āhāranirodha, i.e., the ceasing of ahara when the tanha is extinct. The fourth truth is the way in which ahara ceases; it happens by the practice of the eightfold path, viz., sammā ditthi, sankappa, vācā, etc. One who knows correctly these truths gets rid of hatred and attachment, rises above the belief in a self, drives out ignorance, and attains freedom from misery. So, we see that in these four truths there is nothing particularly Buddhistic. They are found in the Brahmanical systems of philosophy as well.3 For instance, the Yoga-sūtra of Patañjali (II, 15)

¹ Majjhima, I, p. 261. See also Lal. Vis., pp. 349, 416-7; Mtu., II, p. 288; III, p. 53.

² Digha, III, pp. 228, 276; Dhs. 71-3; Vis. M., p. 341.

³ Prof. Stcherbatsky remarks; "These four topics—the four noble truths as the term has been very inadequately translated and re-

says: Yathā cikitsāśāstram caturvyūham, rogo rogahetur ārogyam bhaisajyam iti evam idam api sāstram catur vyūham eva tad yathā saṃsāraḥ saṃsārahetur mokṣo mokṣopāya iti (just as the science of medicine has four sections dealing with the diagnosis, cause and cure of diseases, and their remedies, so also this science of spiritual healing has four sections dealing with an examination of the nature of the things of the world, the cause of their origin, their removal, and the factors that bring about the removal). The Abhidharmakośa also follows up this interpretation by coalescing the four truths into two, viz., cause and effect, saṃsāra (world) and nirvāṇa (cessation). Duḥkha and samudaya relate to samsāra, while nirodha and mārga to Nirvāna. Samsāra (world) is the effect while samudaya is its cause; so also Nirvāna (cessation) is the effect while mārga is its cause.1

This position of the Hīnayānists with regard to the Āryasatyas is logical, for their cardinal tenet is that a being suffers by wrongly assuming the existence of a self, and thus conceiving himself as a separate entity, standing in some form of relation to every other being or thing of the world, to which again he ascribes an individuality similar to his own. The chief aim of Hīnayāna teaching is to expel from one's mind all ideas of individuality, whether of himself or of any other being or thing of the world, and this can only be effected by an examination of the things of this world under the four aspects mentioned above. Scrutinizing everything in this way, a being gets rid of his wrong assumption and sees things as they really are. This is called sammādiṭṭhi (right view) or vijjā (true knowledge). Once this is reached he can be said to have attained freedom from misery, or Nirvāṇa.

presented as a fundamental principle of Buddhism—contain in reality no doctrine at all." Con. of N., p. 55.

¹ Kośa, VI. 4; see also Sogen, Sys. of B. Thought, pp. 69ff; Sūtrā., pp. 137-8; it supports the interpretation of the Kośa, see infra.

THE ARVASATVAS

The Arvasatyas, as commonly known, are dukkho (miserv). samudaya (origin of misery), nirodha (cessation of misery) and magga (means of the cessation of misery). The underlying teaching of these four truths is that they are to be treated as formulæ for application to everything perceived. That these four truths constitute merely a formula and not a doctrine has been brought out very clearly in many Buddhist texts. In the Majihima Nikāya 1 while giving an exposition of what the right view (sammāditthi) is according to the Buddhists, Sāriputta takes up, for instance, āhāra (food), dukkha (misery), jarāmarana (old age and death), tanhā (desire), nāmarūpa (name and form) and avijiā (ignorance) and applies to each of them the fourfold formula. examining it in this way: Take up for consideration a material or an immaterial thing. Ascertain its origin. Inquire how it decays. In pursuance of this method Sāriputta defines Sammāditthi through āhāra thus: One who knows āhāra (food), āhārasamudaya (how food originates). āhāranirodha (how food decays) and āhāranirodhagāminipatipadā (the way in which the decay of food happens) possesses Sammāditthi. The first truth relates to Ahāra which, in the Buddhist philosophy, is of four kinds.2 The second truth is āhārasamudaya, i.e., āhāra comes into existence on account of tanhā. The third truth is āhāranirodha, i.e., the ceasing of āhāra when the tanhā is extinct. The fourth truth is the way in which āhāra ceases; it happens by the practice of the eightfold path, viz., sammā ditthi, sankappa, vācā, etc. One who knows correctly these truths gets rid of hatred and attachment, rises above the belief in a self, drives out ignorance, and attains freedom from misery. So, we see that in these four truths there is nothing particularly Buddhistic. They are found in the Brahmanical systems of philosophy as well.3 For instance, the Yoga-sūtra of Patañjali (II, 15)

¹ Majjhima, I, p. 261. See also Lal. Vis., pp. 349, 416-7; Miu., II, p. 288; III, p. 53.

² Dīgha, III, pp. 228, 276; Dhs. 71-3; Vis. M., p. 341.

³ Prof. Stcherbatsky remarks; "These four topics—the four noble truths as the term has been very inadequately translated and re-

says: Yathā cikitsāśāstram caturvvūham, rogo rogahetur ārogyam blaisafvam iti evam idam api sāstram catur vyūham eva tad vathā samsārah samsārahetur mokso moksopāya iti (just as the science of medicine has four sections dealing with the diagnosis, cause and cure of diseases, and their remedies, so also this science of spiritual healing has four sections dealing with an examination of the nature of the things of the world, the cause of their origin, their removal, and the factors that bring about the removal). The Abhidharmakośa also follows up this interpretation by coalescing the four truths into two, viz., cause and effect, samsāra (world) and nirvāna (cessation). Duhkha and samudava relate to samsāra, while nirodha and mārga to Nirvāna. Samsāra (world) is the effect while samudava is its cause: so also Nirvana (cessation) is the effect while marga is its cause 1

This position of the Hīnayānists with regard to the Āryasatyas is logical, for their cardinal tenet is that a being suffers by wrongly assuming the existence of a self, and thus conceiving himself as a separate entity, standing in some form of relation to every other being or thing of the world, to which again he ascribes an individuality similar to his own. The chief aim of Hīnayāna teaching is to expel from one's mind all ideas of individuality, whether of himself or of any other being or thing of the world, and this can only be effected by an examination of the things of this world under the four aspects mentioned above. Scrutinizing everything in this way, a being gets rid of his wrong assumption and sees things as they really are. This is called sammādiṭthi (right view) or vijjā (true knowledge). Once this is reached he can be said to have attained freedom from misery, or Nirvāṇa.

presented as a fundamental principle of Buddhism—contain in reality no doctrine at all." Con. of N_{\bullet} , p. 55.

¹ Kośa, VI. 4; see also Sogen, Sys. of B. Thought, pp. 69ff; Sūtrā., pp. 137-8; it supports the interpretation of the Koša, see infra.

THE PRATITYASAMUTPĀDA

Of the four truths, the second and the third comprise the Pratītuasamutpāda. The chief object of this formala of causation is to establish that things of this world have only a dependent origination and hence are impermanent and productive of sufferings, and that there is nothing except Nirvāna and Ākāśa that does not depend upon cause and condition. This formula of causal law has been utilised by the Hinavanists to show that all constituted things have a preceding cause and condition and as such they are without any substantiality, while it has been used by the Mahavanists to establish that the world being relatively existent is unreal like the objects seen in a dream. The formula explains the fixed. unchangeable, and this-conditioned (idappaccayata) nature of things; hence it is a key to the eternal truth. The moment a being realises in his life the truth of this formula he sees the Reality. We find for this reason that the Buddhist texts identify the formula with Buddha and Dhamma.1 It was this solution of the problem of life and the world that appealed to Sāriputta and proved a fruitful source for Nāgārjuna's speculations.2

Many scholars, who have dealt with this formula, have attempted to elicit from it Buddha's theory of the origin of a being and some of them have actually drawn parallels between the links of the formula and the causal series of the Sāṃkhya.³ It is noteworthy that such attempts were also made in Buddhaghosa's time. Buddhaghosa has, however, pointed out that avijā, the first link of the chain, must not be regarded as similar to pakati (Prakṛti) of the Pakativādins (Sāṃkhya) because avijā is neither uncaused (akāraṇam) nor is it the primary cause (mūlakāraṇam) of the world. It owes its origin to āsavas (impurities). The reason adduced by Buddhaghosa for its being made the first link in the chain is that Buddha

¹ See ante, p. 51.

Nagarjuna devoted his first chapter to the explanation of only this aspect of the law of causation.

³ See Kern, Manual etc., p. 46f.; for other refs., see Poussin, Theorie des douze causes, p. vii, fn. 2.

used 'avijjā' or 'bhavatanhā' for commencing (sīsabhāvam) his discourses on topics which by their nature are without any beginning or end (vattakathā or anamatagga)1. It is apparent from Budhaghosa's remark that avijjā need not necessarily be the first link in the chain of causation but that it is one of the terms found suitable by the author of the formula to begin the chain. It could as well be commenced by bhavatanhā.2 In the Samyutta Nikāya³, the formula starts with $\bar{a}h\bar{a}ra$ as the first link. Hence, we see that the Pratītyasamutpāda is not meant to be an explanation of the origin of the world but just a chain of instances to illustrate the law of idappaccayatā (this-conditioned nature, i.e., dependent origination) of things. scholars, who expected to find in it a key to the origin of the world, have been disappointed and have condemned it as illogical and incongruous. The author of the formula could not anticipate that his arrangement of the illustrations in a series would give rise to confusion. That the chain was not meant to demonstrate a line of evolution is also apparent from the last two links, viz., jāti and jarāmarana, as the former cannot be the cause of the latter. The underlying idea is that if there be jāti, it is inevitably followed by jarāmaraņa. The author of the formula wanted us to take up any two links and realise from them the idappaccayata or the relative nature of worldly things. We may therefore say that the twelve-linked Pratītyasamutpāda like the Āryasatyas is more a general principle than a doctrine peculiar to Buddhism, though undoubtedly, it owes its enunciation to the ancient Buddhist savants. It cannot be stated how far Buddha was responsible for the selection of the links though it was perhaps to his penetrating eye that the relative existence of all worldly things became apparent for the first time.

As the links of the formula have been explained by Profs.

¹ Vis. M., p. 525.

² Ibid., p. 525: purimā, bhikkhave, koţi na paññāyati avijjāya (or bhavatanhāya), ito pubbe avijjā (or bhavatanhā) nāhosi atha pacehā sambhavī ti. Evañ c'etam, bhikkhave, vuccati, atha ca pana paññāyati idapaceayā avijjā (or bhavatanhā). Of. Samyutta, II, p. 178; III, p. 149.

³ Samyutta, II, pp. 101-3, Mahāniddesa, I, pp. 25-6.

La Vallée Poussin, Keith, Oldenberg and others we shall give here only a brief exposition of them ¹.

The formula runs as follows²: (1) avijjāpaccayā ³ snikhārā, (2) saikhārāpaccayā viññāṇam, (3) viññāṇap. nāmarūpam ⁴, (4) nāmarūpap. saļāyatanam, (5) saļāyatanap. phasso, (6) phassap. vedanā, (7) vedanāp. taṇhā, (8) taṇhāp. upādānam, (9) upādānap. bhavo, (10) bhavap. jāti, (11 & 12) jātip. jarāmaraṇam.

The first link, avijjā, usually refers to the deluded state of mind which debars a being from taking a true view of worldly things, e.g., mistaking impermanent things as permanent, misery as happiness, a being without a permanent self as possessed of a self and so forth.⁵ The second link in the chain is sankhārā (impressions or thought-constructions—cetanā) concerning merit (puñña), demerit (apuñāa), and qualities that are neither merit nor demerit (āneñja)⁶. This is followed by the third link viññāṇa ⁷ i.e., perceptions through the six organs of sense. Concomitantly (sahaja) with viññāṇa arise the four composites (khandhas) and form a complete being (nāmarūpa) in the fœtus.⁸ With its growth, the nāmarūpa (body) requires the six organs of

¹ Poussin, Theorie des douze causes; Keith, B. Phil., pp. 99ff.; Oldenberg's Buddha (Hoey's transl. 1882), pp. 223 f; Gokhale, Pratitya-samut-pādašāstra des Ullangha, Bonn, 1930.

² Dīgha, II, pp. 55ff; La Vallée Poussin, Theorie des douze causes, pp. 69 ff; Vis. M., pp. 518 ff, quoting Samyutta, II, pp. 25-7.

³ In the Samyutta (II, pp.101-3) avijjā is replaced by āhāra or any such other thing that gives rise to viññāṇa.

⁴ Dīgha (II, p. 56) omits the first two links and begins its formula thus:—Nāmarūpapaccayā viūnāṇaṃ, viūnāṇapaccayā nāmarūpam, i.e., viūnāṇa and nāma-rūpa are made interdependent. Sūlistambasūtra (p. 82) says that they are sahaja (concomitant).

⁵ Sālistambasūtra, p. 79; see also Vis. M., p. 526.

⁶ Sālistambasūtra, p. 82; to these three, the Vibhanga (p. 135) and Visuddhimagga (p. 530) add three other, viz., kāyasankhāro, vacis. and cittas. The Sālistambasūtra explains in another place (p. 79) that rāga, dvesa and moha in regard to worldly things arising through avidyā are called saṃskāras.

⁷ Sälistambasütra, p. 82; Vis. M. (p. 546) says that puññābhisankhāro produces twenty-one kinds of viññāna, apuññābhi° seven, and āneñjābhi° four.

⁸ In the Digha (II, p. 63) and Salistambasūtra (p. 82) viññāṇa and

sense for doing its work, and these organs in their turn produce six forms of contact (phassa). The nature of the contact produces its corresponding feeling (vedanā) and the feeling in its turn gives rise to desire (taṇhā). Taṇhā leads to upādāna² (grasping) of kāma (desire for objects of pleasure), diṭṭhi (wrong views like sassata, asassata, etc.), sīlabbata (religious practices like gosīla and govata) and attavāda (belief in a self). This upādāna, which may also be defined as a stronger taṇhā, produces a keen desire in a being for future existence in any one of the three worlds, and for this he performs kamma through words, mind and body. According to his kamma he is reborn in one of the various spheres of existence and becomes in due course old and passes away.

Reasons adduced by the Mahāyānists for including the Truths and the Causal $_6$ Law in their doctrines

The Mahāyānists highly appreciated the teaching conveyed by the formula of causation but were not interested in the significance of its links, as their cardinal tenet was dharma-sūnyatā or non-existence of everything worldly. Similarly for the āryasatyas, they appreciated the method of analysis of all worldly things as suggested by the four satyas but these in their view have existence similar to the objects in a dream or a mirage. Thus, if everything be non-existent, the examination of a non-existent thing is absurd; hence the Mahāyānists should by reasons justify the inclusion of the Āryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda in their doctrines. Nāgārjuna and Śāntideva, Asanga and Vasubandhu therefore have shown by forcible and illuminating arguments that they were justified in including the Truths and the twelve-linked Law of Causation in their doctrines.

nāmarūpa are shown as resting upon each other, i.e., one cannot remain without the other.

¹ Adhivacanasamphassa and patighasamphassa, Digha, II, p. 62.

² Dīgha, II, p. 58; Vis. M., p. 569.

NĀGĀRJUNA SUMMARISES THE POSITION OF THE HĪNAYĀNISTS

Nagarjuna has dealt with the Truths incidentally in his examination of Pratyaya, Karmaphala, Atman,1 etc., and at length in his treatment of the Aryasatyas 2. He first summarises the arguments of his opponents thus: If everything be non-existent (śūnya), there cannot arise any question about the origin and decay of a thing,—in this case, duhkha (misery). The five constituents of beings, which come into existence through pre-existing cause and condition, are called duhkha, because they produce suffering, being subject to change and transformation. That these constituents are a source of suffering is realised by the Aryas (i.e., Arhats) only, and not by the common people, for the latter labour under the four misconceptions (viparyāsas)3 of considering impure things as pure, impermanent as permanent, unhappy as happy, and egoless as having ego. The common people are like the sick, to whom sweet things appear bitter. A person who is not yet an arhat (anārya) does not know that the five upādānaskandhas are a source of suffering. It is for this reason that the Truths (satyas) are called truths for the perfect only. If everything be sunya (non-existent), there cannot be the first Aryasatya called duhkha and consequently there can be no samudaya (origin), nirodha (destruction), or marga (means of destruction of suffering). If the four Aryasatyas do not exist, there cannot exist true knowledge, exertion, or realisation, the four fruits of sanctification or their enjoyer, the Sangha, Dharma, or even Buddha. The assertion of sūnyatā (non-existence of everything) goes against the existence of the three ratuas, in fact, of all things, good or bad.

NAGARJUNA'S ARGUMENTS TO MEET THE ABOVE CHARGES

Nāgārjuna pities his opponents for their inability to grasp the true sense of śūnyatā, or the object of establishing śūnya-

¹ M. Vr., chs. I, XVII, XVIII. ² Ibid., ch. XXIV.

⁸ Bodhic., p. 375; M. Vr., pp. 464 and 607 referring to Netti, p. 114 and Index; Siksā., p. 198; Anguttara, II, p. 52; Pātanjala-Yogasūtra, II, 5; Sarvadaršana-sangraha (ed. of Mm. Vasudev Abhayankar), p. 361; see also infra.

ta, and for their false imagination. The object of teaching śūnyatā, e says, is to bring about a complete cessation of all prapanca (i.e., looking upon unity as manifold). The view held by his opponents that moksa (emancipation) is attained by the destruction of action (karma) and passion (kleśa) is incorrect. It is a known fact that ordinarily persons are ignorant of the real state of things. They conceive rupa (form), etc. and allow passion, hatred and delusion to come into existence. From this statement as also from the Śūtras, it is evident that sankalpa (imagination) is the source of all these, from which it follows that karma and kleśa are only products of imagination and have no real existence. Their origin is due to the prapanca (thoughtcreation) which takes hold of the mind of a worldly being, who from the time immemorial is used to a variety of actions and things such as gain and loss, happiness and misery, action and the actor, known and the knower, and so forth. All these worldly thought-creations cease to exist when a person realises the non-existence of the things which are commonly supposed to have real existence. Just as a person does not form any idea (prapañca) about the 'beauty of a barren woman's daughter' and consequently does not weave a net of fancies (kalpanā) around her, so also a Mahāyānist is not troubled with the conception of "I" and "Mine", the roots of a belief in self (satkāyadṛṣṭi), nor is he troubled by any cause for the origin of passions. If a person realises that passions (kleśas) do not originate, he cannot have any idea of good or bad action and consequently birth, old age, disease and death. Therefore the Yogins (ascetics) established in śūnyatā do not conceive any real skandha, dhātu, āyatana, etc. and consequently they have no prapañca, vikalpa, satkāvadrsti, kleśa, karma or mrtyu. Thus the realisation of sūnyatā brings about the complete cessation of all prapancas, and so it is said that the realisation of sūnyatā is the same as the realisation of Nirvāna.1

¹ M. Vr., pp. 350-1.

ŠŪNYATĀ IS NEITHER NĀSTITVA NOR ABHĀVA

Having dealt with the object of the teaching of śūnyatā, Nāgārjuna proceeds to an exposition of śūnyatā by stating its essentials (lakṣaṇas), which are as follows 1:—

(i) It is aparapratyaya, i.e., it cannot be imparted by one to another.² One is to realise the Truth within himself (pratyātmavedya), and not to understand it by listening to the instruction of Āryas (the Perfect), who can speak of the Truth only through superimpositions (samāropa).

(ii) It is santa, i.e., it has the nature of cessation,3 it is

undisturbed by origination or destruction.

(iii) It is prapañcairaprapañcitam, i.e., it is inexpressible.⁴ The first prapañca is taken as a synonym of speech (vāk),⁵ i.e. the sense of śūnyatā is not utterable by words.

(iv) It is nirvikalpa or unrealisable in concepts. Vikalpa is thought-construction; so śūnyatā is beyond (lit. devoid

of) thought-construction. And, lastly,

(v) It is anānārtha, i.e., devoid of different meanings.

Thus he points out that śūnyatā is not to be taken in the sense of nāstitva (nihilism) or abhāva (absence of something) as wrongly supposed by the Hinayānists. He continues his exposition of śūnyatā by equating it with the pratītyasamutpāda, saying

yah pratītyasamutpādah śūnyatām tam pracaksmahe, sā prajñaptir upādāya pratipat saiva madhyamā.

(We say that dependent origination is śūnyatā. It is in that sense that the path is middle.) All phenomenal

1 M. Vr., pp. 372-7.

² Prof. Stcherbatsky (Con. of N., p. 41) translates it as "uncognisable from without" but the commentary of Candrakīrti does

not seem to warrant the rendering.

⁸ See M. V_T ., p. 160 where it is shown why santam is taken in the sense of svabhāva-virahitam. The point is that anything having real existence cannot be subject to the causal law; so whatever is subject to causal law has no real existence like the seed and the sprout. Hence both of them can be described as santa or svabhāva-virahita. Prof. Stcherbatsky (op. cit.) uses the word "quiescent" for santa.

⁴ Prof. Stcherbatsky (op. cit.) translates it "undifferentiated in words." 5 M. Vr., p. 373.

things are relatively existent, e.g., sprout and seed, vijñānas with reference to cause and condition; hence, Nagarjuna says that things, which are only relatively existent, have in reality no origination, and the fact of this non-origination in reality is śūnyatā. So it is asserted by the Teacher in the Anavataptahradāpasankramanasūtra 1 that whatever is said to have come into existence through cause and condition (i.e. relatively) is really unborn; it cannot have real origination; and whatever is subject to cause and condition is śūnya. The statement made in the Lankāvatāra and elsewhere that all dharmas are śūnya (non-existent) refers to the non-origination of things in reality. It is in this sense that the connotation of sunyata has come into existence. Hence it is said that śūnyatā, which bears the sign of non-origination in reality, is the middle path. That which is really non-originated can neither be said to exist nor to vanish; hence is neither existent nor non-existent, and as such it is the Middle Path which keeps clear of the two extremes.2

We may consider this topic in another way. There is nothing which originates without cause and condition and therefore there is nothing which can be called as unya (non-relative). It is said in the Sataka and elsewhere that nothing is ever produced without cause and condition, or, in other words, there is nothing eternal. The ignorant only conceive of eternity, etc. in regard to Akāsa. The wise know that all things are caused and conditioned, and they never fall into the delusion of either of the two extremes. If it be admitted, as is done by some of the Hinayānists, that things (i.e., the elements that constitute a being) are uncaused and unconditioned, then the four Aryasatyas are contradicted, for how can there be duḥkha, the first truth, if things come into existence without cause and condition (apratītya)?

¹ M. Vr., p. 239.

² Cf. Bodhic., p. 359: na san nāsan na sadasan na cāpyanubhayātmakam, catuskotivinirmuktam tattvam mādhyamikā viduh.

³ Referring evidently to the Sarvāstivādins.

BUDDHA'S TEACHINGS WERE DELIVERED IN TWO WAYS:

Nāgārjuna, thus establishing that śūnyatā it neithernāstitva nor abhāva but a word signifying the relative existence of things, says that the Hīnayānists, too much engrossed in the studies of texts alone, have misunderstood the sense of śūnyatā and do not understand that the Teacher delivered his teachings in two ways, viz., conventional and real, or empirical and transcendental. So it is said by Nāgārjuna:

dve satye samupāśritya buddhānām dharmadeśanā, lokasamvrtisatyam ca satyam ca paramārthataḥ.¹

(The teachings of Buddhas are based on two kinds of truth, the truth of the world, and the truth in the highest sense).

(a) SAMVRTI

Nāgārjuna as well as Śāntideva points out that the words in common usage, e.g., skandha, ātman, loka, etc., being enveloped (sāṃvṛta) on all sides are called conventional. The expression Saṃvṛti has three different senses, which are as follows:—

(1) Samvṛti is the same as ignorance on account of its completely enveloping the reality, or, in other words, it is identical with ignorance (avidyā).² In elucidation of this, Prajūākaramati, the commentator of the Bodhicaryāvatāra, says that ignorance superimposes a form on a non-existent thing and thus creates an obstacle to the correct view of the reality. In support of his statement he quotes from the Śālistambasūtra a stanza, in which it is stated that ignor-

¹ M. Vr., p. 492; Bodhic., p. 361. The two kinds of Truth have been dealt with in the Madhyamakāvatāra (Chs. V, VI); see Le Muséon, 1907, N.S., vol. VIII for summary of Ch. V.

² Bodhic., p. 352; Samvriyate āvriyate yathābhūtaparijñānam svabhāvāvaraṇād āvṛta(≡abhūta)prakāśanāc ca nayeti samvṛtiḥ. Avidyā moho viparyāsa iti paryāyāḥ. It is called samvṛti because it envelopes the real knowledge and also because it helps to uncover that which is, as a matter of course, enveloped. It is synonymous with ignorance, delusion, or misconception. For Paramārtha being the same as Nirvāna, see infra.

ance (avidyā) is nothing but the non-realisation (apratipatti) of the truth, and faith in falsehood.

- (2) Sampriti implies a thing which depends on another for existence, *i.e.*, subject to cause and condition, for a really self-existent thing cannot have origin and decay, or any kind of transformation; so whatever is caused and conditioned is sāmvṛta (phenomenal).
- (3) Samvṛti refers to signs or words current in the world, i.e., accepted by the generality of the people and based on direct perception. Santideva desires to point out that rūpa (form), sabda (sound), etc. should not be supposed to be really existing on account of being directly perceived by all in the same way. Their existence is substantiated by proofs which are valid from the worldly, and not from the transcendental, standpoint. If all that is perceived by the senses be true, then a fool knows the truth, and there is no need of exerting for the acquisition of truth. In support of his statement, he cites the illustration that the body of a woman, though impure in the highest sense, is regarded as pure by a man whose mind is swayed by attachment; hence a fact cannot be established merely by experience.

It may be argued that as the expressions like dhātu, āyatana, etc. occur in the scriptures, they are real, and besides had they been non-existent, the Teacher would not have referred to them as momentary, subject to decay, etc. Śāntideva explains this away by saying that the Teacher used them only as artifices to lead men, having minds engrossed in thinking of object as existent, to the conception of śūnyatā, i.e., things as really non-existent. Whatever Buddha said about skandha, dhātu, āyatana or their transitoriness is conventional and not real; hence the existence of dhātus and āyatanas in reality is not established. If it be held that every object of experience is unreal, how can we account for the experience of kṣaṇikatva (transitoriness) of

¹ Bodhic., p. 352: pratītyasamutpannam vasturūpam samvṛtir ucyate.

² Ibid., pp. 374-5: pratyakṣyam api rūpādi prasiddhyā na pramānataḥ.

pudgala by the yogins (ascetics) who have perfected themselves in the meditation of pudgalanairātmya (essencelessness of constituted things)? Śāntideva's answer is very simple. He said that even the experiences of yogins are not above saṃvṛti, for saṃvṛti includes everything that falls within the scope of buddhi (intelligence), and the reality lies beyond it. The experience of the yogins that a woman's body is impure contradicts the experience of an ordinary man who considers it to be pure. Thus it is proved that the scriptural authority does not establish the reality of skandha, dhātu, āyatana, etc.

Two kinds of samveti-satyas

All that has been said above applies to loka-samvṛti only, i.e., truths valid in the world of convention, which are accepted as such by the generality of the people. There is however another kind of the so-called truth, which should be distinguished as Alokasamvṛti; i.e., truths not accepted by the generality of the people. The experiences of a man with diseased eyes or defective organs of sense are peculiar to the man and are not true for all. Such experiences should be called Alokasamvṛti (conventional truths but not general).

Śāntideva calls these two kinds of conventional truths Tathya-saṃvṛti and Mithyā-saṃvṛti, and distinguishes them thus: ¹ The Tathya-saṃvṛti (phenomenal truth) refers to things which originate out of a cause (kiñcit pratītyajātam) and are perceived in the same way by all persons with unimpaired organs of sense, e.g., the colour blue, etc. The Mithyā-saṃvṛti refers to those things or statements which are accepted only by individuals and not universally, though they may have originated through cause and condition, i.e., they are like things perceived by a person with a defective organ of sense.

(b) PARAMĀRTHASATYA

The truth of the Aryas who see things as they really are is quite different from the two so-called truths mentioned

¹ Bodhic., p. 353.

above. Nāgārjuna says that this truth, Paramārthasatva. is identical with Nirvana.1 It does not admit of any distinction as subject and object.2 It is un-originating and undecaying, and as such it is not an object to be grasped by the mind. It is indeterminable by speech and unknowable by knowledge.3 Hence the highest truth is inexpressible and can be realised only within one's own self.4 It cannot form the subject-matter of instruction, and hence it cannot be imparted by one to another. Santideva explains the truth (tattva or paramārthasatva) as beyond the range of buddhi (intellection or perception) while that which comes within the range of buddhi is conventional (samvrti).5 According to him, the truth is attainable by giving up all things which act as hindrances to knowledge, viz., impressions (vāsanā), connection (anusandhi) and passion (kleśa) through comprehension of the real nature of things. It is therefore the same as the non-existence of all dharmas and as such it may be taken as a synonym of śūnyatā (essencelessness), tathatā (thatness), bhūtakoti (true limit), and dharmadhātu (totality of things). All that is caused and conditioned is not really existent, because everything undergoes change with time, while in a really existent thing no change is possible; neither can the fact of coming and going be attributed to it. Things that are supposed to have existence are like an illusion or an echo, because they arise through cause and condition, and disappear when the cause and condition cease. So, in reality, there can be no origination through cause and condition, because real origination does not depend upon and is not subject to something else. All things arise subject to some preceding causes and condi-

¹ See ante. Samvṛti is identified with avidyā and buddhi. See Bodhic., pp. 352, 366, also Stcherbatsky, op. cit., p. 164 n.

² Cf. Bodhic., p. 366: Paramārthasatyam sarvavyavahārasamatikrāntam nirvišesam. Asamutpannam aniruddham. Abhidheyābhidhānajāeyajūānavigatam.

³ M. Vr., pp. 364, 493.

⁴ Bodhic., p. 367: āryāṇām eva svasamvidita-svabhāvatayā pratyātmavedyam.

⁵ Bodhic., p. 354.

tions; hence they are really non-existent. How, then, can an existent thing be expected to arise out of them? Can anybody ascertain whence the illusory things produced by causes come and where they go? In this connection Śāntideva comments elaborately on the famous stanza of Nāgārjuna:

na svato nāpi parato na dvābhyāṃ nāpyahetutaḥ, utpannā jātu vidyante bhāvāḥ kvacana kecana ¹.

(Nowhere and never does a really existent thing originate out of a self or non-self or both self and non-self or without any cause).

The aim of Śāntideva as also other writers on Mahāyāna is to assert that the real truth (paramārthasatya) is that things of this world have no more existence than the magic figures created by a magician. As these figures and their movements are taken as real by the ordinary people while the magician himself does not concern himself about their reality, so also in this world, the viparyastas i.e., those whose vision is obscured and subject to error run after, or weave their thoughts around, the various phenomenal things, while the yogin, who knows the highest reality, does not pay heed to them. In short, the Paramārthasatya is nothing but the realisation of the dreamlike or echo-like nature of Samvṛtisatyas.²

If Paramārthasatya be of an inexpressible nature and Saṃvṛtisatya be non-existing like an illusion or echo as urged by Nāgārjuna and Śāntideva, a Hīnayānist may enquire about the necessity of preaching on the topics like skandha, dhātu,

¹ Bodhic., p. 357; M. Vr., p. 12.

² Bodhic., pp. 368, 379. The Satyasiddhi school introduced the two kinds of truth, Vyavahārasatya and Paramārthasatya into the Buddhist metaphysics. In the Aksayamatinirdeśasūtra these two truths form the principal subject of discussion (Vaidya, Catuhśatikā, p. 19). In the Mahāyāna literature there are other expressions bearing the same sense as Paramārtha and Samvrti, e.g., Nītārtha and Neyyārtha, see M. Vr., p. 41; V. Sastri, I.H.Q., iv, 2 on Sandhyā-bhāṣā; M. Vr., pp. 41; Sūtrā., p. 51.

For Pāramārthika and Ābhiprāyikī, see M. Vr., pp. 42 ff; Sūtrā., p. 138; Keith, B. Phil., p. 235; Journal Asiatique, 1903, ii, p. 360 for comments on Saṃvṛti and Paramārtha.

āyatana, āryasatyas, pratītyasamutpāda etc., which are conventionally true and not true in the highest sense (atattva). The reply is

vyavaĀāram anāśritya paramārtho na deśyate, paramārtham anāgamya nirvāṇaṃ nādhigamyate 1.

(The highest truth cannot be imparted without having recourse to conventional truths; and Nirvāṇa cannot be attained without the realisation of the highest truth). In other words, the highest truth cannot be brought home directly to a mind, which normally does not rise above the conventional distinction of subject and object, knower and known; hence it must be imparted through conventional truths, and unless it is so imparted one cannot be expected to extricate himself from worldly limitations and arrive at Nirvāṇa. It is for this reason that the Mahāyānists cannot dispense with sāṃvṛta topics like dhātu, āyatana, āryasatya and pratītyasamutpāda; they are like vessels to the seeker of water.

The other reason 2 for which the Mahāyānists cannot dispense with samvrta topics is that the Paramarthasatya cannot be explained to another by signs or predicates, but yet it has to be explained. So the only alternative is to explain it by the negation of samvrta matters. As it is agocara (beyond the cognizance of buddhi-intellection), avisaya (beyond the scope of knowledge), sarvaprapañcavinirmukta (beyond the possibility of detailed descriptions), kalpanāsamatikrānta (beyond every possible form of imagination, e.g., existence or non-existence, true or untrue, eternal or non-eternal, permanent or impermanent, happy or unhappy, pure or impure, and so forth)3, the only way to explain it to the people is through common place terms and illustrations. A person with diseased eyes sees a net of hair; he is corrected by another whose eyes are healthy, the latter negating the afflicted man's statement that there (really) is a net of hair. The

¹ M. Vr., p. 494; Bodhic., p. 365; see also p. 372: Upāyabhūtam vyavahārasatyam upēyabhūtam paramārthasatyam (also in the Madhyamakāvatāra, vi, 80). Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.) leaf 56a: Na ca Subhūte samskṛtavyatirekena asamskṛtam śakyam prajūāpayitum.

² Bodhic., p. 363.

⁸ Ibid., pp. 366-7. These terms can be easily multiplied.

man with healthy eyes does not indicate by such a negation that he is either denying or affirming something. Similarly, persons whose right vision is obstructed by ignorance conceive of the existence of skandha, dhātu, āyatana, etc., which are in reality non-existent phenomenal forms. Buddhas like the persons with healthy eyes know this, and they cannot help saying that there are in reality no skandhas, dhātus, āyatanas, but thereby they neither deny nor affirm their existence. Therefore the highest truth cannot be preached without the help of the conventional truths. So it is said

anakṣarasya dharmasya śrutiḥ kā deśanā ca kā, śruyate deśyate cārthaḥ samāropād anakṣaraḥ¹.

[How can there be hearing and preaching of dharma which is un-utterable (lit. cannot be articulated); it is by the superimposition of ideas on the reality which is inexpressible that the latter can be preached or heard.]

If it be established that all mundane things are really non-existent, there is a probability of the Paramartha (the highest truth) being conceived as nihilism. sounds a note of warning against such a conception by saying that śūnyatā should not be identified with the extinction of a thing which existed before. The question of extinction or nihilism does not arise, because the existence of something preceding is not admitted. Neither should it be regarded as something existing by having recourse to superimpositions. Those, who do not realise the real distinction between these two kinds of truth, fall into the error of either conceiving śūnyatā as the non-existence of samskāras (constituents of a being) or of assuming the existence of something as the basis of śūnyatā. Both are wrong views, and people of limited knowledge misunderstand sunvata as the one or the other. The distinction was, in fact, so very subtle that even Buddha hesitated to preach the truth at first.2

¹ Bodhic., p. 365; M. Vr., p. 264, xv. 2; cf. Lanka., p. 194.

² Buddhaghosa also uses this argument, see ante.

THE HĪNAYĀNISTS MISTAKE ŚŪNYATĀ AS ABHĀVA

In concluding his argument, Nagarjuna says that the Hīnayānists, by attributing the sense of abhāva (absence or non-existence) after assuming the existence of something to śūnyatā, fall into error and fail to understand the standpoint of the Mahāyānists. The Mahāyānic conception of śūnyatā, i.e., that everything is non-existent fits in correctly with all dharmas and all statements; it is when śūnyatā is seen in this light that one can perceive the reasonableness of the formulæ of Causal Law and the Four Truths, the fruits of sanctification, sangha, dharma, buddha, things worldly and transcendental, deeds right and wrong, a good or bad condition and other conventional matters. Nāgārjuna having stated his position attacks the Hīnavānists for their inability to comprehend the correct sense of the Causal Law. He says that just as a rider while riding may forget his horse and revile another for stealing it, so also the Hinayanists, because of their distracted mind, fail to grasp the truth that sunyata is the true sense and the chief characteristic of the Causal Law, and attack the Mahāyānists, the Śūnyatāvādins, for misinterpreting it.

THE POSITION OF THE HINAYANISTS WITH REGARD TO THE TRUTHS AND THE CAUSAL LAW IS UNTENABLE

Nāgārjuna now proceeds to assail the position of his opponents. He says that those, who admit the reality of unconstitued things, cannot logically support the Aryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda.

It should be remembered that the Hinayanists apply the Causal Law to constituted things only. Nagarjuna attempts to make the position of the Hīnayānists untenable by asserting that the Law should be universally applicable, and that there cannot be anything in the world which was excepted by Buddha as beyond its range. He argues that if things exist by themselves, they are not subject to causes and conditions, and such being the case, there is no need to draw distinctions of external and internal, no need of causes and conditions, or the doer and the doing of an action. In short, the Hinayanic theory contradicts the origin and decay as well as the fruits of sanctification. Hence, the position of the Hīnayānists that things exist by themselves is untenable. It also contradicts the words of Buddha who said on many occasions: apratītyasamutpanno dharmaḥ kaścin na vidyate (there never exists anything which originated without cause and condition). This statement of Buddha, however, fits in with the definition of śūnyatā as given by the Mahāyānists.

If all things be existent (asūnya) and if it originates without cause and condition, there cannot be anything impermanent, and consequently no duhkha.

Again, if duhkha be taken as something existing, then the truths of samudaya and nirodha (origin and decay) of misery, and mārga (the eight-fold path leading to the decay of misery) are meaningless. Nāgārjuna thus pays back the Hīnayānists in their own coin.

Then, with reference to the parijñāna (detailed knowledge) of the Hīnayānists, Nāgārjuna shows that it is not logical to maintain that duḥkha, assuming it to be an existent thing, was unknown before, and that it is known subsequently because existent things remain always in the same condition (svabhāvaḥ samavasthitaḥ) and never undergo any change. If an existent thing be not subject to change, it cannot be maintained that duḥkha which was unknowable at first was known later on. From this it follows that there is no duḥkha-parijñāna (knowledge of suffering). Consequently, prahāṇa (abandonment), sākṣātkaraṇa (realisation), and bhāvanā (meditation) are meaningless.

As it is unreasonable to claim knowledge of duḥkha, which was formerly by nature unknowable, it is wrong to assume the existence of the fruit of Srotāpatti, which did not exist before but was realised later on; and so with the other fruits of sanctification. The same reasoning—that which was by nature unattainable cannot be attained later on—is applied to show that there can be no one who enjoys these fruits, and consequently no Sangha. If there be no Aryasatyas, there cannot be Dharma, and in the absence of Dharma and Sangha there cannot be a Buddha. If it be assumed that Buddha and Bodhi exist by themselves, then

one remains without any reference to the other. If Buddhahood be taken as already existing, a person, who by nature is a non-Buddha, can never attain Bodhi, however much he may practise the Bodhisattva duties, because a non-Buddha cannot be expected to change.

MAHĀYĀNIC DEFINITION OF ĀRYASATYAS

Nāgārjuna's point is that if a thing exists by itself then it is absurd to speak of it as created, having a creator, and so forth. Just as nobody speaks of uncovering the sky because the open sky exists by itself, so also nobody should say that a thing, existing by itself, has been made or attained. In fact, the theory of pratityasamutpanna (one existing with reference to another, i.e., relatively) must be admitted, as otherwise even the expressions of everyday usage such as go, do, cook, read, etc., become meaningless. If the world is supposed to exist by itself, the world would be unoriginating, undecaying and unchangeable as the selfexistent is changeless. The world, according to the Aśūnyavādins (i.e. the Realists who do not admit śūnyatā), would have no concern with the Causal Law and be beyond the possibility of diversity. Had the world been so, says the Pitāputrasamāgamasūtra, it would not have been dealt with by Buddha, and the Teacher would have, as the Hastikaksyasūtra says, gone there with all disciples.

Nāgārjuna concludes by saying that he who realises Pratītyasamutpāda can rightly know the four truths and quotes a passage from the Mañjuśrīparipṛcchā dealing with the Mahāyanic view of the four truths. It runs as follows,—he who realises that no dharmas have originated has known duḥkha; he who realises the non-existence of all dharmas has suppressed the source (samudaya) of misery; he who realises that all dharmas are completely extinct (parinirvṛta) has comprehended the truth of nirodha (cessation), and he who realises the means by which the absence of all things is known is said to have practised the path (mārga). This has been developed thus in the Dhyāyitamuṣṭisūtra: Unable to comprehend the four truths properly on account of being

troubled by the four viparyāsas (misconceptions),1 sentient beings cannot go beyond the world of transmigration. They conceive of atman (self) and atmiya (things relating to a self) and thus have karmābhisamskāra (actions).2 Not knowing that all things are completely extinct (parinirvrta) they imagine the existence of themselves and others, and become engrossed therein to the extent of having affection, infatuation and ultimately delusion. They now perform actions, physically, verbally, and mentally, and after making some superimpositions of existence on non-existing things, they think that they are subject to affection, infatuation, and delusion. In order to get rid of them, they take initiation into the doctrines of Buddha, observe the precepts and hope to pass beyond the world and attain Nirvana. They imagine that some things are good, some bad; some are to be rejected, some to be realised; that dulkha is to be known, the samudaya of duhkha to be given up, the nirodha of duhkha to be realised, and the marga to be practised. They also imagine that all constituted things are impermanent and endeavour to pass beyond them. Thus, they attain a mental state full of disgust (or contempt) for constituted things, having animitta (absence of sign or cause) as its preceding condition. They think that they have thus known duhkha, i.e., the transitoriness of constituted things, become terrified by them, and shun their causes. Having imagined something as source (samudaya) of duhkha, they conceive of cessation (nirodha) of duhkha and decide to follow the path (marga) to attain it. They retire to a secluded place with a mind full of disgust and attain quietude (samatha). Their minds are no longer moved by worldly things and they think that they have done all that is to be done, they are freed from all sufferings and have become arhats. But after death they find themselves reborn among the gods and in their minds exist

1 See ante, p. 212.

² Cf. Bodhic., p. 350; Viparyāsasamjñino 'satsattvasamāropābhinivešavašād ātmātmīyagrahapravrtter ayonišomanasikāraprasūto rāgādikleśaganah samupajāyate. Tasmāt karma, tato janma, etc.

doubts about Buddha and his knowledge. When they die again, they pass to hell because they doubt the existence of the Tanhāgata after forming some misconceptions about all dharmas which are unoriginated. The four truths are therefore to be seen in the light of the Mañjuśrīsūtra as pointed out above.

THE Prajñāpāramitā on the Āryasatyas

The new point of view from which the Āryasatyas are looked at by Nāgārjuna's school appears in the Prajnaparamitas in connection with the attempt to explain the conception of sūnyatā. The Pañcavimsati-sāhasrikā Prajnaparamita thus defines the Āryasatyas:

What is duhkhasatyāvavāda? A Bodhisattva while practising the prainaparamita should not consider himself to be attached or unattached (vukta or avukta) to anv one of the five skandhas, or to any organ of sense, or to their avatanas to the viinana produced by the contact of the organs of sense with their respective objects, or to any of the four truths, twelve links of the chain of causation. eighteen kinds of śūnyatā, and so forth. He should not look upon anything as rupa, vedana, etc., as connected or unconnected. This is called, according to the Prainaparamita, a sermon on the first truth, Duhkha. The underlying idea is that if a Bodhisattva thinks himself as connected or unconnected with anything, which, according to the Prajñāpāramitā, is non-existent or has only a conventional existence, then the Bodhisattva is subject to duhkha (suffering); even if a Bodhisattva considers himself as having realised the truths or the causal law or śūnyatā, he would be subject to duhkha, though, according to the Hinayanists, the Bodhisattva thereby attains sukha or nirvana.

What is samudayasatyāvavāda? A Bodhisattva while practising prajñāpāramitā does not consider whether rūpa or any other skandha is subject to origination or destruction (utpādadharmin or nirodhadharmin), or to contamination or purification (samkleśadharmin or vyāvadānadharmin). He knows

¹ Pañca., pp. 43 f.

that rūpa does not convert (samavasarati) into vedanā, or vedanā into saṃjñā, and so forth; a dharma, in fact, on account of its nature being unreal (prakṛti-śūnyatā), cannot be converted into another dharma. Neither that which is śūnyatā (non-existence) of rūpa is rūpa, nor does the sūnyatā of rūpa take a rūpa (form); therefore śūnyatā is neither different from, nor identical with, rūpa, and in this way the other skandhas are treated. This is called the sermon on samudaya. The object of this discourse is to establish that the so-called things of the world have really no existence and hence there can be no origination, transformation, or destruction, and so a Bodhisattva should remain unconcerned with the conception of samudaya of things.

What is nirodhasatyāvavāda? A Bodhisattva is to know that śūnyatā has no origin, decay, contamination, purification, decrease, increase, past, present, or future. In it, therefore, there can be no rūpa, vedanā etc., no duḥkha, samudaya, etc., not even srotāpanna, sakṛdāgāmi or Buddha. This is called nirodhasatyāvāvāda. This statement is meant to convey that nirodha is nothing but the realisation of the real nature of śūnyatā.

Arguing in this way the $Praj\tilde{n}aparamit\bar{a}$ shows that the truth is $\tilde{s}\bar{u}$ nyatā, i.e., the non-existence of the so-called things of the world, and this may be called the third truth, nirodha, while duḥkha consists in thinking oneself as related in some way or other to the conventional things, and samudaya in believing that the origination of things does really happen. As the mārga has no place in this interpretation of the āryasatyas, the $Praj\tilde{n}aparamit\bar{a}$ omits it.

MISCONCEPTION OF THE ARHATS

Nāgārjuna, as we have seen, establishes by quotations from the Mahāyānic texts that Hīnayānic Arhats labour under misconceptions. Of the four common misconceptions (viparyāsas), they are not free from the fourth, viz., seeing ego in egoless things, thinking non-existent things as existent.¹ But this statement of Nāgārjuna or of the Mahāyānic texts

¹ Cf. Bodhic., p. 350.

with reference to the Hīnayānists has in view the egolessness of things generally (dharmaśūnyatā) and not merely of constituted things with which the Hīnayānists are concerned. Nāgārjuna ends his discourse by asserting that the truth is that all things are like echo, mirage, or images in dreams. When one realises this, he has neither love nor hatred for any being and with a mind like the sky, he does not know of any distinctions as Buddha, Dharma, or Sangha and does not have doubts regarding anything. Being without doubt and without attachment, he attains parinirvāṇa without upādāna.

Śāntideva¹ also reasons in this way and says that a person's avidyā, the source of delusion, which comes about on account of the attribution of existence (sat) to non-existent things (asat), or ego (ātmā) to egoless things (anātmā), ceases to exist when he realises truly (paramārthataḥ) that things have only a dreamlike or echolike existence. On the cessation of avidyā, the other links of the chain of causation ² get no opportunity to arise and hence the person obtains Nirodha.

The Mahāyānists thus relegate the four Truths and the Causal Law to the domain of matters conventional and not real, and assert that they are necessary in the doctrines of Mahāyāna inasmuch as they serve as a means for the guidance of living beings, who, as individuals in this world, cannot but have their vision distorted or screened by ignorance.³

¹ Cf. Bodhic., pp. 350-1.

² Śāntideva speaks of the chain of causation as consisting of three parts, viz.,

⁽i) kleśakāṇḍa—avidyā, tṛṣṇā and upādāna;

⁽ii) karmakāṇḍa—saṃskāra and bhava; and

⁽iii) duḥkhakāṇḍa—all the remaining links of the chain. For such divisions, see also Gokhale, *Pratītyasamutpādasūtra* of Ullaṅgha.

³ The commentator of *Bodhic*. (p. 362), in order to show that the four Aryasatyas are really two, says that duḥkha, samudaya, and mārga should be classified under samvṛti, and nirodha under paramārtha.

Yogācāra treatment of the Āryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda

Nāgārjuna and Sāntideva explain the position of the Mādhyamikas with regard to the Four Truths and the Causal Law as shown above.

Asanga, Vasubandhu and other writers on the Yogācāra system deal with this topic incidentally. Asanga, for instance, refers to the four truths,1 saying that the first two relate to the origin of the world or the happening of repeated births and the cause thereof, while the second two relate to the disappearance of things and the causes thereof. The first two need suppression while the second two need realisation. In connection with the fourteen ways of practising the smrtyupasthanas (power of recollection) by Bodhisattvas, it is pointed out that one can enter, and also make others enter, into the four truths by means of the smrtvupasthānas. Other Yogācāra writings, viz., the Siddhi and the Lankāvatāra, do not specifically refer to the four truths but they deal with the doctrines of the Hīnayānists for the sake of comparison and contrast. For instance, they speak of the Hinayanists as those who maintain the overt sense of Buddha's teachings and not their deeper meaning; 2 being satisfied only with ascertaining the generic characteristics of things but never questioning about their essential unreality.3 They labour under the misconception (parikalpana) of taking the three worlds as real, of postulating distinctions as subject and object, of assuming the existence of skandhas (constituents of beings), dhātu (organs

¹ Sūtrā., pp. 137-8, 149-1.

² Lankā., p. 14: yathārutārthabhiniviṣtā. For a description of the rutārthagrāhi, see Lankā., pp. 154f, 160f, 197, 227. Lankā. (p. 77) says, "sūtrāntah sarvasattvāṣayadeśanārthavyabhicāraṇī na sā tattvapratyavasthānakathā (the discourses are not faithful expositions of the truth because they were preached according to the mental tendencies of beings). For a remark like this, see M. Vr., dealt with before; Sūtrā., p. 51; alpaśrutatvaṃ nītārthasūtrāntaśravaṇāt.

³ Lankā., pp. 51, 71, 63: Yaḥ skandhadhātvāyatanasvasāmānyalakṣaṇaparijñānādhigame deśyamāne romāncitatanur bhavati. Lakṣanaparicayajñāne cāsya buddhiḥ praskandati na pratītyasamutpādāvinirbhāgalakṣaṇaparicaye.

of sense), ayatana (spheres of the organs of sense), citta (mind), hetupratyaya (cause and condition), kriyāyoga (action), utpāda 1 (origin), sthiti (continuance), bhanga (dissolution), The Lankāvatāra,2 speaking of Pratītyasamutpāda, says that it is by comprehending that things originate through cause and condition that one can get rid of the misconception of taking non-existent things as existent, and of assuming gradual or simultaneous origin of things. Then it explains as usual that the dependent origination happens in two ways, externally and internally, e.g., an earthen pot, butter, sprout, etc., originate through an external cause (hetu)3 and condition (pratyaya), while ignorance (avidyā), desire (tṛṣṇā), action (karma), etc. originate through an internal cause and condition. The remarks of the Yogācāra writers indicate that the four truths and the causal law of the Hinayanists belong to the domain of imagination (parikalpanā) and not to that of reality.

THE YOGĀCĀRAS HAVE THREE TRUTHS FOR TWO OF THE MĀDHYAMIKAS

It should be remembered that though the Yogācārins are sharply criticised by the Mādhyamikas ⁴ for their conception of the eighth consciousness called Ālaya-vijñāna (or store-consciousness), both these schools of thought agree in holding that all things (dharmas) are non-existent, and are without origin and decay, ⁵ and that the highest truth is unutterable (anakṣara), ⁶ is identical with thatness and unchangeableness, possesses the signs of anāyūha and niryūha (non-taking and non-rejection) and is beyond every possible means of determination ⁷. Passages like this can be multiplied from the

¹ Lankā., pp. 42, 43, 225. 2 Ibid., pp. 82-3, 84, 140.

⁸ For six kinds of hetu, see Lanka., p. 83.

⁴ M. Vr., p. 523.

⁵ Triméikā, p. 41: sarvadharmā niḥsvabhāvā anutpannā aniruddhā iti nirdiéyante.

⁶ Buddhas are silent (mauna) and never preach a word. Lankā., pp. 16, 17, 144, 194.

⁷ Lankā., p. 196: Tathātvam ananyathātvam tattvam anāyūhaniryūhalakṣaṇam sarvaprapañcopaśamam; p. 73: śūnyatānutpādādvayaniḥsvabhāvalakṣaṇam.

Yogācāra works to show that their conception of the Reality, apart from Ālayavijñāna, is the same as that of the Mādhyamikas. They also hold with the Mādhyamikas¹ that from time immemorial, the mind has been under the đelusion of imputing existence (sat) to non-existent things (asat), and that the Hīnayānists were not able to rid their minds completely of the four viparyāsas (misconceptions)² inasmuch as they meditated on Pudgalanimitta (individuality as basis) only and not on sarvadharmanimitta (all things whatsoever as basis) and conceived of Nirvāṇa as something existent³, full of peace and beyond misery. Their conception is that the highest truth, which they usually call Parinispanna for the Paramārtha of the Mādhyamikas, is the realisation of the fact that all dharmas perceptible to our mind have no more existence than the images in a dream or the reflection of the moon in water.

From time immemorial, however, our minds are so deluded that we cannot help perceiving in the images or reflection something existent, or in other words, with our common knowledge we cannot rise above parikalpanā (imaginary existence), the saṃvṛti of the Mādhyamikas and others. The Yogācāras add a rider to the parikalpanā, saying that it depends for origination on something else, and hence it is always paratantra, the pratītyasamutpanna of the Mādhyamikas and others. It is not necessary that the basis of a parikalpanā need be anything existent or real, e.g., a person may be frightened by an echo. In short, Parikalpita and Paratantra relate to worldly matters only, to the anitya, anātman and duḥkha of the Hīnayānists, while, pariniṣpanna relates to the Nīrvāṇa, the Śānta 4, i.e., where all kleśas and vikalpas cease.

Asanga brings out the relation of the three forms of truth thus: The highest truth (paramārtha or parinispanna) is non-duality, which is shown in five ways. Two of these are

¹ M. Vr., Ch. XXIV quoting Dhyāyitamuştisūtra.

² Sūtrā., p. 169: Tatra caturviparyāsānugatam pudgalanimittam vibhāvayan yogī śrāvakabodhim pratyekabodhim vā labhate. Sarvadharmanimittam vibhāvayan mahābodhim.

³ Lankā., p. 72.

⁴ Sūtrā., p. 149; cf. M. Vr., Ch. XVIII.

that it is non-existing under the aspect of Parikalpita and Paratantra and not non-existing under the aspect of Parinispanna. It is not the same because the Parikalpita and Paratantra are not the same as Parinispanna. It is not different, because the former two are not different from the latter 1. In another connection Asanga says that a Bodhisattva can be truly called a śūnyajña (one who knows the real nature of non-existence) when he understands it under three aspects, viz., first, that the non-existence means the absence of signs which are commonly attributed to an imaginary object (parikalpita), secondly, that the non-existence is the absence of any particular form of existence that one imagines it to be (paratantra), and thirdly, that which is by nature non-existent (parinispanna)². The Vijnaptimātratāsiddhi³ elucidates this point by saying that the nature of non-existence is of three kinds, viz., (i) laksana-nihsvabhāvatā (non-existence of the signs commonly attributed to a thing and hence of the thing itself, i.e., parikalpita), (ii) utpattinihsvabhāvatā (non-existence of a thing when considered from the standpoint of its origin, i.e., paratantra); and (iii) paramārthanihsvabhāvatā (nonexistence of a thing in the highest sense, i.e., parinispanna).

A. PARIKALPITA

Sthiramati, in commenting on the Siddhi says that the first category, Parikalpita, refers to the non-existence of things by its characteristics or signs. A thing cannot be conceived to exist unless it is accompanied by some characteristics, the sign of form is attributed to an object, or the sign of pain, pleasure, etc. is attributed to a feeling. Endless things which people imagine, not excluding the dharmas attributed to a Buddha, have existence only in one's imagination; hence they are parikalpita i.e. have nothing corresponding to them in reality. The Lankūvatara says that the parikalpita existence is inferred from signs (nimitta) and explains it thus: All dependently originating things are known by their nimitta (signs) and

¹ Sūtrā., p. 22 : na san na cāsan na tathā na cānyathā, etc.

² Ibid., pp. 94-5.

⁸ Siddhi, pp. 39-42. ⁴ Lankā., p. 67.

⁵ Prof. Lévi translates nimitta by "signs of connotation".

lakṣaṇa (characteristics)¹. Now, things having nimitta and lakṣaṇa are of two kinds. Things known by nimitta only refer to things generally, internal and external, while things known by nimitta-lakṣaṇa refer to the knowledge of generic characteristics of things both internal and external². Asaṇga³ distinguishes parikalpita into three kinds: viz., (i) the basis (nimitta or ālambana) of one's thought-constructions, (ii) the unconscious impression (vāsanā) left by them upon one's mind, and (iii) the denominations (arthakhyāti) following the impressions are taken as real.

B. PARATANTRA

The second category, Paratantra, refers to the imaginary existence pointed out above regarded from the aspect of its origin, i.e., all objects or feelings, which have existence only in imagination, and depend for origination on something else (paratantra). Things as they appear are not the same as their origin or source; so it is said that the unreality of things is perceptible when they are viewed from the standpoint of their origin. Though the things, good, bad and indeterminate, or the three worlds (dhātu) or the mind and its various functions, have only imaginary existence, they arise, however, from causes and conditions, i.e. they depend for origin on others, and hence they cannot be said to exist really, because a real thing remains always the same and does not depend on cause and condition. The Lankavatara puts it very briefly thus: that which proceeds from a basis is dependently originated or paratantra (yadāśrayālambanāt

1 $Lank\bar{a}$., pp. 224-6: five natures of existent things: (i) nāma, (ii) nimitta, (iii) vikalpa, (iv) samyakjñāna, and (v) tathatā.

Nāma—samjnā, samketa. Ignorant persons, deluded by various signs (lakṣaṇa), become attached to things as self or mine, and thus weave a net of thought-constructions around themselves.

Nimitta—the reflection (ābhāsa) of eye-consciousness known as form; so also the reflections of ear-consciousness, nose-c., tongue-c., body-c., mind-c. known as sound, smell, taste, touch and things are called nimitta.

Nimitta is more or less a sign impressed upon consciousness and lakṣaṇa is definition, or features constituting a definition.

² Lankā., p. 67, 150, 163.

⁸ Sūtrā., p. 64.

pravartate tat paratantra). Asanga analyses the paratantra in this way: the mark of being paratantra is the false thought-construction (abhūtaparikalpaḥ) about subject (grāhaka) and its object (grāhaya).¹

C. PARINISPANNA

The third category, Parinispanna, refers to the Paramārtha² (the highest truth) or Tathatā (Thatness). Like ākāśa (space) it is homogeneous (lit. has one taste-ekarasa), pure, and changeless. The Parinispanna-svabhava (absolute reality) is called Paramartha because it is the highest aspect in which all dependently originated things are to be looked upon. In this sense, it can be called also dharmatā (the nature of things), or in other words, it is the Absolute, immanent in the phenomenal world. The Siddhi points out that the parinispanna (the Absolute) is so called because it is absolutely changeless. If it be compared with the Paratantra, it may be said to be that paratantra which is always and ever completely devoid of the differentiations as subject and object, which are nothing but the mere play of imagination, and hence absolutely non-existing. Thus, it follows that the parinispanna is the same as the paratantra minus the parikalpita.3

Two TRUTHS IN HINAYANA

It is clear from the summarised discussions that the Paramārtha of the Mādhyamikas and the Parinispanna of the Yogācāras indicate the Truth as conceived by them. Accepting that Truth as the only reality, they relegate everything else to the domain of unreality calling them conventional, saṃvṛti or parikalpita, with this reservation that the conventional things appear and disappear subject to causes and

grāhaka=manas, 5 vijñānas and vikalpa; grāhya=padābhāsa, arthābhāsa and dehābhāsa.

¹ Sūtrā., p. 65:

² For seven different kinds of Paramārtha, see Lankā., p. 39.

³ This exposition is based on the Siddhi, pp. 39-42. Masuda has utilised the Chinese version of this treatise, for which see his Der individualistische etc. pp. 40-43. For general discussion, see La Vallée Poussin, E.R.E., sv. Philosophy (Buddhist); L. D. Barnett, Path of Light (Wisdom of the East Series), p. 102; Keith, B. Phil., pp. 235-236; Sogen, Systems etc., pp. 145, 146; Stcherbatsky, Con. of N., p. 33.

conditions, or in other words, they conform to the law of causation, the Pratītyasamutpāda of the Buddhists in general, and the Paratantra of the Yogācāras.

The Hinayanists utilise these expressions just as much as the Mahāyānists and they also call their Truth the only reality. Paramattha, everything else being conventional. Sammuti, their truth, in one word, being anatta, non-existence of any substantiality in the so-called things of the world. with the corollary that everything being anatta is impermanent (anicca) and unhappy (dukkha). Buddhaghosa 1 draws the distinction, saying that Buddhas use two kinds of speech, conventional and real. The expressions, satta (being). puggala (person), deva (god), etc. are conventional, while those like anicca (impermanence), dukkha (misery), anattā (essencelessness), khandha (aggregates), dhātu (organs of sense), āyatana (objects of sense), satipatthāna (practices of self-possession) and sammappadhāna (right exertion) were used in their true sense. Nāgasena explains that when Buddha said "I shall lead the sangha or the sangha is dependent on me," 2 he used the expressions "I" and "me" in the conventional and not in the real sense. Ledi Sadaw 3 explains sammuti-sacca as those statements which are true by popular usage and are opposed to "inconsistency, and untruthfulness in speech" while paramattha-sacca are those which are established by the nature of the things and do not depend on opinion or usage. As an example he points out that when it is said "there is a soul," it is conventionally true but ultimately false,4 for the real ultimate truth is "there is no personal entity." The latter is true in all circumstances and conditions, and does not depend for its validity on usage or popular opinion.5 The contention of the Hinayanists is that a name is usually given to constituted things; that name is conventional, e.g.,

¹ Kvu. A., pp. 33, 84.

² Mil., pp. 28, 60. ⁸ J.P.T.S., 1914, pp. 129 f.

⁴ Cf. Stcherbatsky, Central Conception of Buddhism: "Buddhism never denied the existence of a personality, or a soul, in the empirical sense; it only maintained that it was no ultimate reality."

⁵ See also Prof. Poussin's article in the J.A., 1902, p. 250; Points of the Controversy, pp. 63 fn., 180.

when the wheels, frame, and other parts of a chariot are fitted up in a particular order, all the things taken together go by the name of a chariot. The term 'chariot' therefore depends on convention. If the constituted thing, e.g., the chariot is divided into various parts, it is no longer called a chariot when it is so divided. From this, it follows that the things, at which one ultimately arrives after repeated analysis, are the only real entities. They never undergo changes and bear the same name at all times and places and under all conditions. So, according to the Hīnayānists, all the various ultimate elements, which constitute a being or thing, are real, and when reference is made to them they may be called ultimate truths or paramattha-sacca; hence the dhātus or āyatanas, satipaṭṭhānas or sammappadhānas are expressions used in the ultimate sense.

The Kosa 1 explains the two truths in a slightly different manner. It says that the things like jug and clothes, after they are destroyed, do no longer bear the same name; so also things like water and fire when examined analytically dissolve into some elements and are no longer called water or fire. Hence the things, which on analysis are found to be changing, are given names by convention. Such expressions, which convey ideas temporarily and not permanently, are called Samvrtisatyas. The Paramarthasatyas are those expressions, which convey ideas, which remain unchanged whether the things are dissolved, analysed or not, e.g., rupa; one may reduce the rupa into atoms, or withdraw from it taste and other qualities, the idea of the real nature of rupa In the same way one can speak of feeling (vedanā); therefore such expressions are Paramārthasatyas (ultimate truths).

But these ultimate truths of the Hīnayānists, we have seen, are relegated by the Mahāyānists to the domain of convention. Hence, what are real according to the Hīnayānists, namely the Āryasatyas and the Pratītyasamutpāda, are unreal and matters of convention according to the Mahāyānists.

¹ Kośa, VI. 4.

CHAPTER IV

The Stages of Spiritual Progress

The difference between Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna, as we have already seen, centres round the conception of the highest truth, which, according to the Hīnayānists, is Pudgalaśūnyatā only, while, according to the Mahāyānists, it is both Pudgala- and Dharma-śūnyatā. This difference is also evident in the various stages of progress chalked out by the two schools. The Hīnayānists recognize four stages called Sotāpatti, Sakadāgāmi, Anāgāmi, and Arahatta, and mention specifically the attainments of an adept as he passes from one stage to another, obtaining in the last stage complete knowledge, which, according to them, is the same as that attained by Buddhas.¹ The Mahāyānists likewise recognize ten (according to the Bodhisattvabhūmi twelve) stages of progress, through which a Bodhisattva passes in order to have complete emancipation and become a Buddha.

As the Mahāyānists hold that an insight into dharmaśūnyatā is the only means of attainment of the highest knowledge, and that an insight into pudgalaśūnyatā equips an adept for proceeding higher up and realising dharmaśūnyatā, they divide their stages of progress into two sections. The first, comprising the first six bhūmis, leads an adept to the realisation of Pudgalaśūnyatā, while the second, comprising the last four bhūmis, gives him the real knowledge, Dharmaśūnyatā or Dharmasamatā. Thus, the first satisfies the aspiration of the Hīnayānists and hence corresponds to their four stages, while the second lies beyond their reach, as they do not admit Dharmasamatā.

Though this is essentially the relative position of the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists with regard to the stages of spiritual progress, one must, however, add to it the various other features, which are so often repeated by the

See ante, p. 83

Mahāyānists about their chief aim being not so much to attain happiness and emancipation for their own selves as to enable the suffering millions of the world to attain happiness and escape from the misery of the world, even at the cost of the adepts' lives and religious merits. So while detailing the attainments necessary for each bhumi, the texts point out the progress made by a Bodhisattva in regard to the Asaya, Upadesa, Prayoga, Upastambha and Kāla, as also the Ākāra, Linga and Nimitta. If these additional features of the Mahāyānic account of the first six bhūmis be left out, one may reasonably say that the description of the six bhūmis is simply a Sanskritised form of the Pāli passages, which deal with the stages of sanctification. Hence, the real addition of the Mahāyānists is the last four bhūmis, viz., Dūrangamā, Acalā, Sādhumatī, and Dharmameghā.

THE LITERATURE ON THE TOPIC

Regarding the literature on the subject, we may state that in Pāli there are no works dealing exclusively with the stages of sanctification. The accounts are found scattered in almost all the Pāli canonical works as well as in the few available Sanskrit works of the Sarvāstivādins. Buddhaghosa follows the scheme of spiritual progress in his Visuddhimagga. He divides it into three sections, of which the first deals with Sila (moral precepts), the full observance of which results in the attainment of the first two stages, sotāpatti and sakadāgāmi; the second deals with Citta or Samādhi, which results in the attainment of the third stage Anāgāmi; and the third treats of Paññā (knowledge), perfection in which leads the adept to the final stage, Arahatta or complete emancipation.3 Vasubandhu has dealt with the 'stages' in various places in his Abhidharmakośa,4 supporting mostly, as we shall see later on, the accounts in the Pāli works.

In the Mahāyāna literature, there are a few treatises

¹ For the explanation of the terms, see supra, Ch. II, pp. 76 ff.

² Bodhisattvabhūmi, p. 2.

³ Vis. M., p. 6.

⁴ Kośa, VI. 34 ff.

dwelling exclusively on the stages of progress while there are many which deal with them incidentally. Of the works treating mainly of the Bhūmis, the most important and at the same time comprehensive is the Dasabhūmikasūtra.1 one of the nine recognised scriptural texts of the Nepalese The next in importance are the Bodhisattva-Buddhists. bhūmi² and the Madhyamakāvatāra,3 both following the Daśabhūmikasūtra with minor variations. For works containing an incidental treatment of the Bhumis, we may refer to the Lankavatara, Sūtrālankara and other similar works. The Prajnaparamitas (Śatasāhasrikā and Pancavimsatisāhasrika) devote a chapter exclusively to the treatment of the Bhumis, though they do not omit to state that from the standpoint of the highest truth, they are devoid of any reality and are mere matters of convention.4 The Pañcavimsatisāhasrikā again has a peculiar feature of its own. While speaking of the various practices followed by the Bodhisattvas in connection with their progress in the Prajñāpāramitā, it indicates many of the attainments by using expressions which are current among the Hinayanists, e.g, Kulankula, Ekavīcika, Sotāpanna.⁵ The Śatasāhasrikā ⁶ also gives us a list of ten Hīnayānic bhūmis, which are not in use in the Pāli texts. They are Śuklavipaśyanā (or vidarśanā) bhūmi,

1 Edited by Dr. J. Rahder, 1926.

² A portion of the *Bodhisattvabhūmi* [Cambridge ms.—Vihāra-Paṭala] has been published by Dr. Rahder as an Appendix to his *Daśa*. Dr. Rahder has very recently published an article '*La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique*' in the *Bulletin de la Maison Franco-Japonaise*, Tome II, no. 1—Tokyo 1929. In it he has presented us with some new materials from the Chinese sources.

⁸ The Tibetan version of this work has been edited by Prof. Poussin in the Bibl. Bud. Series, and a French translation of the first six chapters of the same has also been published by him in *Le Muséon*, vols. VIII, XI, and XII. A reconstruction of its Sanskrit text is now being published in the *Journal of Oriental Research*, 1929, 1930, Madras.

⁴ S'ata., ch. X; Pañca., Paris ms. fol. 122-8.

⁵ This is the peculiar feature of the *Pañca*., the Sanskrit original of which is available at present. It is a recast of the original *Pañca*. of which the Sanskrit original is lost. See *Appendix* and my Intro. to *Pañca*, for details.

⁶ Sata., pp. 1476, 1520=Mvyut. 50=Das's Tib. Dict., p. 475.

Gotrabhūmi, Astamakabhūmi, Darsanabhūmi, Tanubhūmi, Vītarāgabhūmi, Krtāvībhūmi, Pratvekabuddhabhūmi, Bodhisattvabhūmi and Buddhabhūmi. The names clearly indicate the stages which they are intended to signify. first two refer to the pre-sotapanna stages, the third and the fourth to the sotapattimagga and sotapanna stages, i.e., so long as the adept is in the darśanamārga, the fifth to sakadāgāmi, in which stage rāga, dveṣa and moha reach their minimum (tanutva), the sixth to the anagami stage when the above three are completely eradicated, the seventh to the arahatta stage, when the adept completes all that is to be done, for which reason an Arahat is often called krtakrtya (having done what is to be done). The eighth, ninth and tenth are self-explanatory and need no comment. It should be noted that the treatment of the Bhūmis in the Prajñāpāramitās is much simpler than that of the Dašabhūmikasūtra, and very likely it represents a stage in the evolution of the Bhūmi conception, standing midway between the $Mah\bar{a}vastu^{1}$ and the $Daśabh\bar{u}mikas\bar{u}tra$. The account of Bhumis in the Mahavastu appears to be the earliest. The names used are not the standard ones. From the name used in the Bodhisattvabhūmi, it seems that the writers on Bhūmis considered it a piece of literary skill to devise names indicative of the qualities attained by a Bodhisattva in a particular stage.2 The description of

¹ The names in the Mtu. are: (i) Durārohā, (ii) Baddhamānā, (iii) Puṣpamaṇditā, (iv) Rucirā, (v) Cittavistarā, (vi) Rūpavatī, (vii) Durjayā, (viii) Janmanideśa, (ix) Yauvarājya and (x) Abhiṣeka.

² Dr. Rahder says in his paper on La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique that the Chinese Avatamsaka-sūtra devotes a large section to the discussion of the career of a bodhisattva. He says that it speaks of 52 stages (or degrees), viz., "10 especes de Foi + 10 Résidences (adhimukti) + 10 Conduites (ācāra) + 10 Déflexions + 10 Terres (Bhūmi) + Eveil égal + Eveil merveilleux." These, it seems from their details, are only a form of classification of the bodhisattvas according to their qualities and do not indicate the gradual stages of spiritual progress. It is in the fifth item that we find mention of the Bhūmis (stages of progress). They are as given by Dr. Rahder in French, (i) Joyeuse; (ii) Immaculée; (iii) Clarifiante; (iv) Radieuse; (v) Dure-à-gagner; (vi) Droit-en-face; (vii) Va-loin; (viii) Immobile; (ix) Bon-Espirit; (x) Nuage d'Essence. These are exactly the same bhūmis as mentioned in the Daéa. and other works.

the bhumis in the Mahavastu is very scanty and does not contain the details which are important and even essential from the Mahāyānic standpoint. On the other hand, it mentions some disciplinary (vinaya) rules which, a Bodhisattva is expected to observe, and the non-observance of which not only impeded his progress but brought about his fall to the next lower stage. In the accounts of the first three bhumis, some traces of the description contained in the Dasabhūmikasūtra are found, but in the next seven, and specially in the last four, there is hardly anything more than a mere mention of the names of Buddhas and Bodhisattvas who attained them. It is apparent that the conception of bhumis was very hazy to the author of the Mahāvastu, who tried to supply the gaps by recounting some legendary lives of Bodhisattvas and fictitious names of Buddhas.

For our present purpose of comparison between the Hīna-yānic and Mahāyānic stages, we shall follow the account of the Daśabhūmikasūtra, indicating at places its agreements and disagreements with the Bodhisattvabhūmi and the Madhyamakāvatāra, and referring in the footnotes to the accounts of the Mahāvastu and the Prajñāpāramitās; while for the Hīnayānic stages, we shall depend mainly on the Pāli works, supplementing them where necessary by the information supplied by the Kośa.

Pre-Bhūmi stages

Pre-Bodhisattva or Pre-Sotāpanna stage, (i.e. Prthagjanahood to Ārvahood)

The most difficult task of an adept both in Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna is the fulfilment of the conditions laid down for passing from the state of a pṛthagjana (ordinary man of the world) to that of an Ārya (a man capable of attaining the highest knowledge). The Mahāyānists demand that one must develop Bodhicitta before he can be entitled to commence the practices of bhūmis,¹ while the Hīnayānists hold that one must understand the Four Truths and

¹ Bodhic., pp. 86 f.

have faith in the teachings of Buddha, or in other words, he must complete the fifteen kṣaṇas of the Darśanamārga to be able to drift himself along the stream (sota) of sancti fication—the eightfold path.¹

About the pre-Bodhisattva stage we come across very often in the Prajñāpāramitās and other Mahāyāna works a general remark that a being who has performed meritorious acts (avaropitakuśalamūla), served many previous Buddhas (pūrvajinakṛtādhikāra), and has had many kalyāṇamitras (spiritual guides) is destined to attain Bodhi.² In a slightly different manner the Sūtrālankāra³ says that a being who has developed Adhimukti⁴ (aspiration) through innumerable æons, filled himself with merits as the sea is by water, gone through the preliminary purification by the observance of the Bodhisattva discipline, becomes wise by learning śāstras, and makes his mind soft and pliable,⁵ is entitled to exert himself in bhāvanā (i.e. repeated darśana) and benefit by the teachings of Buddha.

ADHIMUKTICARYĀBHŪMI

It is in the Madhyamakāvatāra that we find mention of a pre-Bodhisattva stage called the Adhimukticaryābhūmi. The Madhyamakāvatāra, quoting the Ratnamegha-sūtra, says that the bhūmi of the Bhavisyad (future) Bodhisattva is placed just before the first bhūmi and consists essentially of excessive (adhimātra-adhimātra) practices of the adhimukti (aspiration). He is a future Bodhisattva because he has not

¹ Samyutta, V, 347: soto soto ti ha Sāriputta vuccati; katamo nu kho Sāriputta soto ti? Ayam eva hi bhante ariyo atthangiko maggo soto seyyathīdam sammāditthi pe. sammāsamādhī ti.

² Pañca. (A.S.B. ms.), leaves 204b, 223b, 232a. Cf. Mtu., I, p. 57.

³ Sūtrā., xiv. 1-3, p. 90. The Sūtrā is mainly a treatise on the Bodhisattvacaryā. Its treatment is general and comprehensive. As we are here concerned mainly with the Bhūmis, we shall pass over the minor details.

⁴ For a note on Adhimukti, see Lévi, *Translation* of the *Sūtrā.*, p. 13 fn.

⁵ For kalpacitta read kalyacitta, see Lévi, *Transl.* of the *Sūtrā.*, p. 16 n.

⁶ Le Muséon, VIII, p. 262.

yet developed Bodhicitta. He is therefore said to be in the Adhimukticaryābhūmi, i.e., he has been aspiring to become a Buddha by following the doctrines of Mahāyāna. After hearing a religious discourse, or praises and accounts of the powers of a Buddha, he has only passing thoughts that he would become a Buddha, but unless and until this thought stays permanently in his mind, he cannot be said to possess Bodhicitta and become an Ārya, a Bodhisattva.¹

The Bodhisattvabhūmi is more explicit with regard to the pre-bodhisattva stage; the technical name given by it is Prakṛticaryā.² It divides this stage into two, Gotravihāra ³ and Adhimukticaryāvihāra.⁴ These two preparatory stages cannot be strictly called bhūmis. The Daŝabhūmikasūtra and other treatises dealing with bhūmis do not therefore mention them in their list of bhūmis. They deal with or refer to the qualities needed in the pre-bodhisattva stage but do not reckon them as additional bhūmis as the Bodhisattvabhūmi does.

The Gotravihāra is thus described in the Bodhisattvabhūmi: A person who is gotrastha, i.e., belongs by nature to a noble class of beings, is endowed with the qualities, high aims, and good dharmas of a Bodhisattva. They are apparent

¹ Cf. E.R.E., II, p. 745.

² This is mentioned also in the Mtu. as the first of the four caryas.
3 Vibare hbūmi. The corresponding the first of the four caryas.

³ Vihāra-bhūmi. The corresponding Hīnayāna term is Gotrabhū, which is reckoned as a pre-sotāpanna stage. See Anguttara, IV, p. 373. The first two bhūmis, Śuklavipaśyanā and Gotra, mentioned in the Sata. (see ante, p. 240), also correspond to this.

⁴ It is the same as the Adhimukticaryābhūmi of the M. Ava. The Lankā. (p. 65) speaks of the preparatory stage as Parikarmabhūmi. See E.R.E., II, p. 744 for Parikarma and Upacāra bhūmis. In the S'ata. (ch. x), Parikarma refers to the duties to be performed by a bodhisattva in a bhūmi.

The Mtu. (I, 46 f.) calls the corresponding bhūmis Prakṛticaryā and Praṇidhānacaryā. The former refers to the worldly virtues of being respectful to parents, śramaṇas and brāhmaṇas, performance of the ten kuśalakarmapathas, worship of Buddhas, etc. The latter (praṇidhānacaryā) refers to the aspiration felt by a bodhisattva to become Buddha and to achieve the same at any cost. The Mtu. gives also the legends about the present Buddha as to when and in what circumstances, he made the resolution (praṇidhāna).

in his natural demeanour. He sets himself to perform good deeds naturally, and does not require persuasion; he does the same with a certain amount of wisdom and feeling of charity. He possesses the seeds of Buddhadharmas and is incapable of committing evil deeds, not to speak of the deadly (ānantarya) sins. The gotravihāra forms the rootcause (hetumātra) of the other eleven vihāras. It only makes it possible for one to exert himself for the attainment of the other bhūmis but does not carry him further.

The Adhimukticaryāvihāra is the name given to the first attempts made by a Bodhisattva to develop Bodhicitta, the noble aspiration. In this bhūmi the Bodhisattva actually starts on his march to the Tathagatavihara, while in the Gotravihāra he gives only an indication of same.2 When he completes the duties of the adhimukticarva, he can be said to have done the work preliminary to the first bhūmi, the Pramuditā. In the Adhimukticaryāvihāra, a bodhisattva practises bhāvanās in a limited degree, and is incapable of retaining what is acquired. He makes only an attempt for nirnimitta-bhāvanā (i.e., meditation of the Absolute devoid of all signs).3 He is possessed of pratisamkhyānabala (power of discriminating knowledge) and applies himself to the duties of a bodhisattva with pratisamkhyāna-prajñā and not by natural tanmayatā (absorption). He cannot yet have the Bodhisattva-bhāvanās, which make one steadfast and non-receding. He is not above the five fears, viz., of livelihood, dispraise, death, evil destiny (durgati) and censure by the assembly.4 With pratisamkhyā he exerts himself for the good of beings and not out of natural love and compassion. Sometimes, he explains things wrongly and sometimes he interests himself in improper spheres or in the material requisites of life. He may have reverential faith (śraddhā) but no innate knowledge of truth. He possesses only limited

¹ For anantarya sins, see Kośa, IV. 96; Vibhanga, p. 378.

² These two vihāras have a parallel in the two kinds of Bodhicitta, mentioned in the *Bodhic.*, viz., Bodhipraṇidhi and Bodhiprasthāna. The *Bodhic.* puts these two after the development of Bodhicitta, see *infra.* p. 247.

³ B. Bh., p. 3. 4 Cf. Anguttara, IV, p. 364.

śrutamavi and cintāmavi prajñā (knowledge derived from hearing and reflection). which again sometimes gets bewildered. He follows the bodhisattva-path with great difficulty and sluggish knowledge (dhandha-abhifñā) and does not develop a very strong desire for bodhi. Now and then he forgets the right means in which beings should be trained and even the Buddhavacana. Occasionally he imparts teaching incautiously and fails to produce the desired result. At times he takes away his mind from bodhi and loses energy for the observance of Bodhisattva-samvaras (disciplines) or for rendering service to beings. Sometimes he also seeks his own happiness, though after reflection he seeks the happiness of others as well. Not unoften he notices his own failings but lacks sufficient energy to correct them. He likes instruction in the Bodhisattva-dharmas but sometimes he gets frightened by the magnitude of the task. He is not endowed with all the bodhipaksika-dharmas. These are the chief indications by which it can be ascertained whether or not a person is in the Adhimukticaryābhūmi.

The idea underlying the preparatory stage is that there are beings who possess to their credit such kuśalamūlas that they are destined to become Buddhas. These beings are called gotrasthas.² Just as a king's sons are different from those of a commoner by their inherent nature, demeanour, and aspiration, so also those beings who possess the germs of Buddhahood are known by their inherent superior qualities.

The Daśabhūmikasūtra³ furnishes us with the details of the pre-bodhisattva stage which are on many points different from the account of the Bodhisattvabhūmi. Some of these details are as follows: They develop bodhicitta after having accumulated enough merits, followed the prescribed practices, worshipped many Buddhas, possessed pure and sublime intention and aspiration, and held compassion always in the

¹ See Netti, pp. 8, 60; Kośa, VI. 5c. Cf. Rahder, La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique, p. 5.

² See Sūtrā., p. 11 for gotrāgratva. The B. Bh. devotes about six leaves to the details of the gotra; see Camb. Ms., leaves 1-6. For gotra, see also ante, pp. 84 ff.

³ Daśa., p. 11.

front of his mind. They are desirous of attaining the Buddha knowledge, the ten powers, the four great Vaisāradyaš, realising the sameness of all dharmas (things), rescuing all beings from misery, acquiring every form of knowledge, and purifying all Buddha-ksetras.

These accounts depict the wavering mind of a person who is endeavouring to develop Bodhicitta. It is by the actual development of Bodhicitta 1 that a person gets rid of his prthagjanahood and becomes an Arya or the Elect to proceed along the stream of sanctification.2 Bodhicitta, in short, means the vow or aspiration of a being to become a Buddha and obtain all the qualities and powers of a Buddha. The Bodhicaryāvatāra divides it into two parts, Bodhipranidhicitta and Bodhiprasthanacitta. The former is simply an aspiration to become a Buddha for saving worldly beings from misery without seriously thinking of the duties of making the highest gifts, and such other virtues. The latter refers to the resolution to observe the Bodhisattvasamvaras (disciplines) and to strive for the acquisition of merits. The former is compared to a traveller who is thinking of going to another country, while the latter to one who has actually set out on his journey in order to reach the destination.3 As soon as one develops bodhicitta, he is entitled to perform the duties connected with the first Bhūmi.4

HINAYANIC TREATMENT OF THE PRE-SOTAPANNA STAGE

We have in the Hinayanic works also an elaborate description of the qualities necessary for a person to pass from the puthujjana stage to the Ariya. Like the general state-

¹ The topic of Bodhicitta is of all-absorbing interest in most of the Mahāyāna works. The Bodhic. devotes to it its first three chapters, and its commentary quotes many sūtras throwing light on the same.

² See E.R.E., II, p. 744; M. Ava. in the Le Muséon, VIII, p. 11: yena cittotpādena sahotpannena bodhisattvo 'tikrānto bhavati pṛthagjanabhūmim avakrānto bhavati bodhisattva-niyāmam, etc.

⁸ Bodhic., pp. 23-5.

⁴ According to the *Mtu*. (I, 78) a bodhisattva in the first bhūmi is still a prthagiana but he is prāptaphala and dakṣiṇeya.

śrutamayi and cintāmayi prajñā (knowledge derived from hearing and reflection),1 which again sometimes gets bewildered. He follows the bodhisattva-path with great difficulty and sluggish knowledge (dhandha-abhifñā) and does not develop a very strong desire for bodhi. Now and then he forgets the right means in which beings should be trained and even the Buddhavacana. Occasionally he imparts teaching incantiously and fails to produce the desired result. At times he takes away his mind from bodhi and loses energy for the observance of Bodhisattva-samvaras (disciplines) or for rendering service to beings. Sometimes he also seeks his own happiness, though after reflection he seeks the happiness of others as well. Not unoften he notices his own failings but lacks sufficient energy to correct them. He likes instruction in the Bodhisattva-dharmas but sometimes he gets frightened by the magnitude of the task. He is not endowed with all the bodhipaksika-dharmas. These are the chief indications by which it can be ascertained whether or not a person is in the Adhimukticarvābhūmi.

The idea underlying the preparatory stage is that there are beings who possess to their credit such kuśalamūlas that they are destined to become Buddhas. These beings are called gotrasthas.² Just as a king's sons are different from those of a commoner by their inherent nature, demeanour, and aspiration, so also those beings who possess the germs of Buddhahood are known by their inherent superior qualities.

The Daśabhūmikasūtra³ furnishes us with the details of the pre-bodhisattva stage which are on many points different from the account of the Bodhisattvabhūmi. Some of these details are as follows: They develop bodhicitta after having accumulated enough merits, followed the prescribed practices, worshipped many Buddhas, possessed pure and sublime intention and aspiration, and held compassion always in the

¹ See Netti, pp. 8, 60; Kośa, VI. 5c. Cf. Rahder, La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique, p. 5.

² See Sūtrā., p. 11 for gotrāgratva. The B. Bh. devotes about six leaves to the details of the gotra; see Camb. Ms., leaves 1-6. For gotra, see also ante, pp. 84 ff.

⁸ Daśa., p. 11.

front of his mind. They are desirous of attaining the Buddha knowledge, the ten powers, the four great Vaisāradyaš, realising the sameness of all dharmas (things), rescuing all beings from misery, acquiring every form of knowledge, and purifying all Buddha-kṣetras.

These accounts depict the wavering mind of a person who is endeavouring to develop Bodhicitta. It is by the actual development of Bodhicitta 1 that a person gets rid of his prthagjanahood and becomes an Arva or the Elect to proceed along the stream of sanctification.2 Bodhicitta, in short, means the vow or aspiration of a being to become a Buddha and obtain all the qualities and powers of a Buddha. The Bodhicaryāvatāra divides it into two parts, Bodhipranidhicitta and Bodhiprasthanacitta. The former is simply an aspiration to become a Buddha for saving worldly beings from misery without seriously thinking of the duties of making the highest gifts, and such other virtues. The latter refers to the resolution to observe the Bodhisattvasamvaras (disciplines) and to strive for the acquisition of merits. The former is compared to a traveller who is thinking of going to another country, while the latter to one who has actually set out on his journey in order to reach the destination.3 As soon as one develops bodhicitta, he is entitled to perform the duties connected with the first Bhūmi.4

HINAVANIC TREATMENT OF THE PRE-SOTAPANNA STAGE

We have in the Hinayanic works also an elaborate description of the qualities necessary for a person to pass from the puthujjana stage to the Ariya. Like the general state-

¹ The topic of Bodhicitta is of all-absorbing interest in most of the Mahāyāna works. The Bodhic. devotes to it its first three chapters, and its commentary quotes many sūtras throwing light on the same.

² See E.R.E., II, p. 744; M. Ava. in the Le Muséon, VIII, p. 11: yena cittotpādena sahotpannena bodhisattvo 'tikrānto bhavati pṛthagjanabhūmim avakrānto bhavati bodhisattva-niyāmam, etc.

³ Bodhic., pp. 23-5.

⁴ According to the Mtu. (I, 78) a bodhisattva in the first bhūmi is still a pṛthagiana but he is pṛsptaphala and dakṣiṇeya.

śrutamayi and cintāmayi prajñā (knowledge derived from hearing and reflection),1 which again sometimes gets bewildered. He follows the bodhisattva-path with great difficulty and sluggish knowledge (dhandha-abhijñā) and does not develop a very strong desire for bodhi. Now and then he forgets the right means in which beings should be trained and even the Buddhavacana. Occasionally he imparts teaching incautiously and fails to produce the desired result. At times he takes away his mind from bodhi and loses energy for the observance of Bodhisattva-samvaras (disciplines) or for rendering service to beings. Sometimes he also seeks his own happiness, though after reflection he seeks the happiness of others as well. Not unoften he notices his own failings but lacks sufficient energy to correct them. He likes instruction in the Bodhisattva-dharmas but sometimes he gets frightened by the magnitude of the task. He is not endowed with all the bodhipaksika-dharmas. These are the chief indications by which it can be ascertained whether or not a person is in the Adhimukticarvābhūmi.

The idea underlying the preparatory stage is that there are beings who possess to their credit such kuśalamūlas that they are destined to become Buddhas. These beings are called gotrasthas.² Just as a king's sons are different from those of a commoner by their inherent nature, demeanour, and aspiration, so also those beings who possess the germs of Buddhahood are known by their inherent superior qualities.

The $Da\$abh\bar{u}mikas\bar{u}tra^3$ furnishes us with the details of the pre-bodhisattva stage which are on many points different from the account of the $Bodhisattvabh\bar{u}mi$. Some of these details are as follows: They develop bodhicitta after having accumulated enough merits, followed the prescribed practices, worshipped many Buddhas, possessed pure and sublime intention and aspiration, and held compassion always in the

¹ See Netti, pp. 8, 60; Kośα, VI. 5c. Cf. Rahder, La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique, p. 5.

² See Sūtrā., p. 11 for gotrāgratva. The B. Bh. devotes about six leaves to the details of the gotra; see Camb. Ms., leaves 1-6. For gotra, see also ante, pp. 84 ff.

⁸ Daśa., p. 11.

front of his mind. They are desirous of attaining the Buddha knowledge, the ten powers, the four great Vaisāradyaš, realising the sameness of all dharmas (things), rescuing all beings from misery, acquiring every form of knowledge, and purifying all Buddha-ksetras.

These accounts depict the wavering mind of a person who is endeavouring to develop Bodhicitta. It is by the actual development of Bodhicitta 1 that a person gets rid of his prthagjanahood and becomes an Arya or the Elect to proceed along the stream of sanctification.2 Bodhicitta, in short, means the vow or aspiration of a being to become a Buddha and obtain all the qualities and powers of a Buddha. The Bodhicaryāvatāra divides it into two parts, Bodhipranidhicitta and Bodhiprasthānacitta. The former is simply an aspiration to become a Buddha for saving worldly beings from misery without seriously thinking of the duties of making the highest gifts, and such other virtues. The latter refers to the resolution to observe the Bodhisattvasamvaras (disciplines) and to strive for the acquisition of merits. The former is compared to a traveller who is thinking of going to another country, while the latter to one who has actually set out on his journey in order to reach the destination.3 As soon as one develops bodhicitta, he is entitled to perform the duties connected with the first Bhūmi.4

Hinayanic treatment of the pre-sotapanna stage

We have in the Hinayanic works also an elaborate description of the qualities necessary for a person to pass from the puthujjana stage to the Ariya. Like the general state-

¹ The topic of Bodhicitta is of all-absorbing interest in most of the Mahāyāna works. The *Bodhic*, devotes to it its first three chapters, and its commentary quotes many sūtras throwing light on the same.

² See E.R.E., II, p. 744; M. Ava. in the Le Muséon, VIII, p. 11: yena cittotpādena sahotpannena bodhisattvo 'tikrānto bhavati pṛthagjanabhūmim avakrānto bhavati bodhisattva-niyāmam, etc.

³ Bodhic., pp. 23-5.

⁴ According to the *Mtu*. (I, 78) a bodhisattva in the first bhūmi is still a pṛthagiana but he is pṛāpṭaphala and dakṣiṇeya.

śrutamayī and cintāmayī prajīiā (knowledge derived from hearing and reflection),1 which again sometimes gets bewildered. He follows the bodhisattva-path with great difficulty and sluggish knowledge (dhandha-abhijñā) and does not develop a very strong desire for bodhi. Now and then he forgets the right means in which beings should be trained and even the Buddhavacana. Occasionally he imparts teaching incautiously and fails to produce the desired result. At times he takes away his mind from bodhi and loses energy for the observance of Bodhisattva-samvaras (disciplines) or for rendering service to beings. Sometimes he also seeks his own happiness, though after reflection he seeks the happiness of others as well. Not unoften he notices his own failings but lacks sufficient energy to correct them. He likes instruction in the Bodhisattva-dharmas but sometimes he gets frightened by the magnitude of the task. He is not endowed with all the bodhipaksika-dharmas. These are the chief indications by which it can be ascertained whether or not a person is in the Adhimukticaryabhūmi.

The idea underlying the preparatory stage is that there are beings who possess to their credit such kuśalamūlas that they are destined to become Buddhas. These beings are called gotrasthas.² Just as a king's sons are different from those of a commoner by their inherent nature, demeanour, and aspiration, so also those beings who possess the germs of Buddhahood are known by their inherent superior qualities.

The Dasabhūmikasūtra³ furnishes us with the details of the pre-bodhisattva stage which are on many points different from the account of the Bodhisattvabhūmi. Some of these details are as follows: They develop bodhicitta after having accumulated enough merits, followed the prescribed practices, worshipped many Buddhas, possessed pure and sublime intention and aspiration, and held compassion always in the

¹ See Netti, pp. 8, 60; Kośa, VI. 5c. Cf. Rahder, La Carrière du Saint Bouddhique, p. 5.

² See Sūtrā., p. 11 for gotrāgratva. The B. Bh. devotes about six leaves to the details of the gotra; see Camb. Ms., leaves 1-6. For gotra, see also ante, pp. 84 ff.

⁸ Daśa., p. 11.

front of his mind. They are desirous of attaining the Buddha knowledge, the ten powers, the four great Vai-sāradyaš, realising the sameness of all dharmas (things), rescuing all beings from misery, acquiring every form of knowledge, and purifying all Buddha-kṣetras.

These accounts depict the wavering mind of a person who is endeavouring to develop Bodhicitta. It is by the actual development of Bodhicitta 1 that a person gets rid of his prthagjanahood and becomes an Arya or the Elect to proceed along the stream of sanctification.2 Bodhicitta, in short, means the vow or aspiration of a being to become a Buddha and obtain all the qualities and powers of a Buddha. The Bodhicaryavatara divides it into two parts, Bodhipranidhicitta and Bodhiprasthanacitta. The former is simply an aspiration to become a Buddha for saving worldly beings from misery without seriously thinking of the duties of making the highest gifts, and such other virtues. The latter refers to the resolution to observe the Bodhisattvasamvaras (disciplines) and to strive for the acquisition of merits. The former is compared to a traveller who is thinking of going to another country, while the latter to one who has actually set out on his journey in order to reach the destination. As soon as one develops bodhicitta, he is entitled to perform the duties connected with the first Bhūmi.4

Hīnayānic treatment of the pre-sotāpanna stage

We have in the Hīnayānic works also an elaborate description of the qualities necessary for a person to pass from the puthujjana stage to the Ariya. Like the general state-

¹ The topic of Bodhicitta is of all-absorbing interest in most of the Mahāyāna works. The Bodhic. devotes to it its first three chapters, and its commentary quotes many sūtras throwing light on the same.

² See E.R.E., II, p. 744; M. Ava. in the Le Muséon, VIII, p. 11: yena cittotpādena sahotpannena bodhisattvo 'tikrānto bhavati pṛthagjanabhūmim avakrānto bhavati bodhisattva-niyāmam, etc.

³ Bodhic., pp. 23-5.

⁴ According to the Mtu. (I, 78) a bodhisattva in the first bhūmi is still a pṛthagjana but he is pṛāptaphala and dakṣiṇeya.

ments in the Prajnaparamitas about the previous kuśalamulas of the bodhisattvas, we have also in the Pali texts references to the previous merits (upanissaya) of a person seeking ordination or spiritual progress. It is often said in connection with the conversions made by Buddha that he delivered discourses after ascertaining the kusalamillas (merit-roots or previous merits) of persons whose conversion he had in view. The usual passage is "sattha paccusakale lokam volokento imassa kulaputtassa upanissayam addasa" 1 Ithe teacher at dawn looked round the world and saw the previous merits (lit. bases) of the man]. This implies that the real benefits of discourses cannot be derived by every body. It is only those, whose previous actions have raised them to a certain height, that derive benefits from the discourses. There are many instances in the Pali works showing that a person had to have to his credit sufficient merits entitling him to become a sotapanna after hearing only one discourse; there are also cases of persons becoming sakadāgāmi, anāgāmi, arahat or paccekabuddha by virtue of their stores of previous merits. The implication in such cases is that the persons in their previous lives had died after attaining the stage of sanctification, or its corresponding qualities, just preceding the one obtained by them in this life. The Hīnayānists hold that a prthagjana must have some kuśalamūlas before he can expect to be an ārya, i.e., a srotāpanna.2

A puthujjana is defined in the *Majjhima Nikāya* as one who labours under the delusion of "I-ness" and "Mine-ness" and thinks that he has rūpa, vedanā, etc. Not knowing the

¹ Jāt., VI, p. 70; Petavatthu Cy., p. 38. For references, see Childers' Pāli Dictionary, sv. upanissaya., also P.T.S. Dictionary.

² These kuśalamūlas are called mokṣabhāgiyas in the Kośa. They must be acquired in an existence prior to the attempt to acquire the nirvedhabhāgiyas (Pāli: nibbedhabhāgiya dhammas). See Κοέα, IV, 125 fn.; VI, 24 fn.; Dīgha, III, p. 251 for Cha nibbedhabhāgiya saññā, or Samyutta, V, p. 345 for Cha vijjābhāgiya saññā, which are enumerated as follows: anicca saññā, anicce dukkhasaññā, dukkhe anattasaññā, pahāṇasaññā, virāgasaññā, nirodhasaññā. See infra, pp. 253-4.

true law, he develops attachment to things which he should avoid, and thereby produces and increases the āsavas (inflowing impurities) of kāma (desire), bhava (desire for existence) and avijjā (ignorance). The Puggala Paññatti² simply says that a puthujjana is one who has neither got rid of the three saṃyojanas nor applied himself to get rid of them. The Paṭisambhidāmagga³ tells us that the puthujjanas, who are striving to be ariyas, try to be indifferent to the saṅkhārās by looking upon them as anicca, dukkha and anattā but this indifference of theirs does not stay permanently in their minds and sometimes even appears distasteful to them.

The stage next to Puthujjana is Gotrabhū, corresponding in some respects to the Gotravihāra of the Bodhisattvabhūmi.4 The Gotrabhū represents the last state of a puthujjana, for a person becomes gotrabhū when he is just fit to commence the works which make a person an ariya. The Patisambhidāmagga⁵ takes gotrabhū not only as a stage prior to sotāpanna but also as indicating a class of persons who are on the way to arhathood and may be in possession of one of the eight maggas and phalas. Likewise the Abhidhammatthasangaha blaces the Gotrabhu stage after Patipada-ñanadassana-visuddhi (the purity of insight with regard to the path)7 and Vutthanagaminivipassana-ñanam (discernment leading to uplift) and makes the Gotrabhū an ariya, i.e. a sotāpattimaggattha. In the two works mentioned last, Gotrabhū denotes those persons, who are on the path and are entitled to become Arhats, and hence persons in any

¹ Majjhina, I, pp. 7, 239. It will be observed that the fourth asava is not mentioned here. An arahat in contrast to puthujjana is called a khīnāsava. See also Paţis. M., pp. 117-S.

² Pug. P., p. 12. See Comp. of Phil., pp. 49-50 for the four classes of Puthujjanas.

³ Patis. M., I, pp. 63, 64, 94.

⁴ See ante, pp. 244-5.

⁵ Patis. M., I, pp. 66-8.

⁶ Comp. of Phil., pp. 67-71, 129, 215 (treated in detail by Mrs. Rhys Davids in the Introduction).

⁷ Buddhaghosa also supports this. See Vis. M., p. 672: Ito (Patipadāñāṇadassanavisuddhi) param gotrabhūñāṇam hoti.

one of the three stages, sotāpatti, sakadāgāmi, and anāgāmi.¹ The Anguttara Nikāya² and the Puggala Pañnatti,³ however, do not consider the Gotrabhū an ariya and hence they distinguish Gotrabhū as a stage preceding the Sotāpattimagga.

Those who are between Gotrabhū and Sotāpanna (i.e. sotāpattiphalapatipanna) are divided into two classes, called Saddhānusārī and Dhammānusārī.4 They still practise the Darśanamārga. According to the Kośa, the former are of mild (mrdu) and the latter of sharp (tīksna) faculties. The Śraddhānusārīs are those who follow the dharma through faith in their spiritual guide, or in other words, they take to the practice of smrtyupasthana, etc., and work for the realisation of the Truth by being incited by others (parapratyayena), while the Dharmanusaris are those who set themselves to practise the Bodhipaksika dharmas through the study of the scriptures (dvādaśānga).5 The Puggala Pañnatti simply says that, of the persons who are working for the realisation of sotapattiphala, those who have saddhindriyam (faculty of faith) in a great measure (adhimattam) are called Saddhānusārī, while those who have paññindriyam (faculty of paññā) in a great measure are called Dhammānusārī. The persons of the former class, when established in the sotapattiphala, are called Saddhavimutta and those of the latter class are called Ditthippatta. The only difference between these two classes is this that the former destroys some of his asavas but not as much as the latter.6 For progressing along the path to Nibbana, there are (i) two dhuras (courses)—saddhā (faith) and paññā (knowledge), (ii) two abhinivesas (adherences)—samatha (quietude) 7 and

¹ Comp. of Phil., p. 68. ² Anguttara, IV, p. 378.

³ Pug. P., p. 14: Attha ariyapuggalā ariyā, avasesā puggalā anariyā. Cf. Infra, p. 255.

⁴ Pug. P., p. 15; Kośa, VI, 29, 63; Dīgha, III, p. 105; Samyutta, V, pp. 200, 205; Vis. M., p. 659.

⁵ Kośa, VI, 29. Prof. Poussin has kindly drawn my attention to the fact that the Dvādaśānga is mentioned only in the Vyākhyā in explanation of the term 'Dharma' of the Kośa.

⁶ Pug. P., 15: paññāya c'assa disvā ekacce āsavā parikkhīņā honti na ca kho yathā ditthippattassa. See also Κοέα, VI, 63.

⁷ Cf. Geiger, Samyutta Transl., II, p. 172. See also DhP., A., I, p. 7:

vipassanā (introspection), and (iii) two sīsas (heads)—ubhatobhāgavimutta (one who is free in both ways) and paññāvimutta (free by reason of paññā).¹ The followers of Paññādhura and Samathābhinivesa are called Dhammānusārī in the sotāpattimagga stage, Kāyasakkhī² in the next six, and Ubhatobhāgavimutta in the arhat stage; the followers of Paññādhura but Vipassanābhinivesa are called Dhammānusārī in the sotāpattimagga stage, Ditthippatta³ in the next six, and Paññāvimutta⁴ in the arhat stage. The followers of Saddhādhura and Samathābhinivesa⁵ are called Saddhānusārī in the sotāpattimagga stage, Kāyasakkhī in the next six, and Ubhatobhāgavimutta⁶ in the arhat stage; the followers of Saddhādhura but Vipassanābhinivesa are called Saddhānusārī in the sotapāttimagga stage, Saddhāvimutta⁶ in the next six, and Paññāvimutta in the arhat stage.⁵

Those who are either Saddhānusārī or Dhammānusārī reach the second stage of the ariyamagga called sotāpattiphala, also called sattakhattuparama (i.e., they are to have seven more births). Mention is made of specific qualities, which an adept must possess in order to become a sotāpanna. In the Samyutta Nikāya, Sāriputta asks Ānanda, "How many are the dhammas which one must give up as well as one must acquire for being a sotāpanno avinipātadhammo

granthadhura (way of study) and vipassanadhura (way of contemplation).

1 Pug. P. Cy., p. 194; Dīgha, II, p. 71.

2 Kāyasakkhi is defined in the Anguttara (IV, pp. 451-2) as implying those who realise within their own body (kāyena phassitvā) the eight jhānas (or vimokkhas) and also destroys āsavas by pañā.

3 Ditthippatta is described in the Pug. P., (p. 15) as referring to those who know truly the four truths, and put an end to assavas by comprehending the dharma of the Tathagata by pañña.

4 See infra.

5 Pug. P. Cy. reads samādhi for samatha. 6 See infra

7 Saddhāvimutta (Pug. P., p. 15) are similar to Ditthipatta; only the pañña of the former is not as much as that of the latter.

8 Pug. P. Cy., pp. 194-5. See also Kośa, VI, 63, 64.

9 The first stage being sotāpattimagga comprised the two classes called Saddhānusārī and Dhammānusārī.

10 There is a chapter called Sotāpatti-samyutta in the Samyutta, V, pp. 264, 362-3, 388=Dīgha, III, p. 227.

niyato sambodhiparāyano (a sotāpanna gone beyond the possibility of retrogression and destined to attain the highest knowledge)." The reply of Ananda was that one must have firm faith (pasāda) in Buddha, Dhamma, and Sangha 1 and must be endowed with all the silas liked and praised by the wise. They are called the Sotapattiyangas.2 One who has the four Sotapattiyangas is considered free of five sins, viz., killing, stealing, misconduct, lying, and drinking.3 Samyutta Nikāya also tells us that when an ariyasāvaka knows the taste, the dangers and the way out of the indrivas. viz., sukha, dukkha, somanassa, domanassa and upekkhā. he is a sotapanna.4 In a discourse in connection with the illness of Anathapindika, it is said that the puthujjana was expected also to comply as far as possible with the eight conditions of the atthangikamagga plus the sammanana and sammāvimutti, besides the four sotāppattiyangas. The sotāpattiyangas, in fact, are merely preliminaries, though essential, to the actual commencement of practices for attaining the sotāppatti stage. The duties entailed upon a candidate just after the sotāpattiyangas are a further increase in pīti (pleasure), pāmojja (joy), passaddhi (calmness), samādhi (concentration), and the practice of the cha vijjā- (or nibbedha-) bhāgiya dhammas (six dharmas leading to knowledge), viz., the

¹ There is a formula for announcing the faith, see Digha, III, p. 227. The faith is called Saddhindriya, Samyutta, V, p. 196. Patis. M., p. 161: Ye keci mayi aveccapasannā sabbe te sotāpannā. See Kośa, VI, 73b; 34, p. 205 fn: La pureté de la conduite (prayoga): règles de moralité (śīlāni) chères aux Āryas; pureté des sentiments (āśaya): avetyaprasāda.

² The other four sotāpattiyangas, very rarely found, are: (i) sappurisasamsevā, (ii) saddhammasavanam, (iii) yoniso manasikāro, and (iv) dhammānudhammapatipatti, Saṃyutta, V, pp. 345, 411; Dīgha, III, p. 227; Paṭis. M., II, p. 17 shows the connection between these and the indrivas.

³ Samyutta, II, pp. 68-71.

⁴ Ibid., V, p. 207; Patis. M., I, pp. 115-6 It says "Anannātannās-sāmītindriyam ekam thānam gacchati, sotāpattimaggam and then tells of the position of the indriyas. It adds that in the sotāpattimagga-kkhana, except the things already existing, all thoughts that arise are pure, transcendental, and lead to Nibbāna.

⁵ Samyutta, V, pp. 381-4.

realisation (anupassanā) of (i) transitoriness (anicca) of constituted things, (ii) unhappiness (dukkha) due to transitoriness. (iii) essencelessness (anatta) of things; (iv) giving up (pahāṇa), (v) virāga (detachment), and (vi) nirodha (cessation).1 The Nikāyas do not go into details about the attempts of a candidate in the sotapanna stage to comprehend the anicca, anattā and dukkha or the four āryasatyas. In the Digha Nikāva there is only a bare mention of the four ñānas viz.. dukkhe ñānam, nirodhe ñānam, samudaye ñānam, and magge nan.2 An exposition of these has been given in the Patisambhidāmagga,3 which says that when one has "understanding, search, research, discernment, discrimination, etc. of each of the four truths, he is said to have comprehended the four truths." This topic has received special treatment in the Kośa,4 which may be briefly stated. There are two mārgas, darśana and bhāvanā,5 the latter commencing at the last stage of darśanamārga. The darśanamārga has sixteen ksanas or moments of comprehension of the truths,6 which are as follows:-

¹ Samyutta, V, p. 345; Dīgha, III, p. 251; Kośa, Intro. to ehs. V and VI, p. iv, as Prof. Poussin shows, puts the order of progress in the pre-sotāpanna stage as follows:—

(i) Acquisition of the Mokṣabhāgiya-kuśalamūlas;

- (ii) Acquisition of the Ariyavamsas (Kośa, VI, 7c-d; 8a-b; Anguttara, II, p. 27; Dīgha, III, p. 224-rules relating to the requisites of a monk);
- (iii) Aśubhabhāvanā, Ānāpānasmṛti;

(iv) Practice of Smrtyupasthanas;

(v) Acquisition of the Nirvedhabhagiyadharmas;

(vi) Satyābhisamaya (15 kṣaṇas)—darśanamārga.

There are many details which should be mentioned in an exposition of the path of spiritual progress, but as we are concerned here mainly with the comparison of the Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna stages, the details have been passed over.

² Dīgha, III, p. 227.

³ Paiis. M., I, p. 119. See for translation of this stock passage, Mrs. Rhys Davids' Buddhist Psychology, p. 18.

⁴ Prof. Poussin has given a summary of it in the Intro. to his transl. of the Kośa, chs. V and VI; M. V_{I} , p. 479, n. 4.

⁵ Bhāvanāmārga is seeing the Truths again and again. See Kośa Intro. to chs. V and VI, p. vi.

6 See Kośa, VI, 261; VII, 4.

1) Duḥkhe dharmajñāna-kṣānti			(faith producing the knowl-
	Samudaye		edge that things of the
9)	Nirodhe	do.	Kāmadhātu are full of
10)	Märge	do.	duḥkha, are subject to samudaya and nirodha, and that there is also the mārga to the origin and cessation
			of things).
2) Duḥkhe dharmajñāna			(actual realisation of the
6)	Samudaye	do.	fact that things of the
10)	Nirodhe	do.	Kāmadhātu are full of
14)	Märge	do.	duhkha, are subject to samu- daya and nirodha, and that there is also the mārga lead- ing to their origin and cess- ation).
3)	Duḥkhe a	nvayajñāna-kṣānti	(faith producing the knowl-
	Samudaye	do.	edge that things of the
11)	Nirodhe	do.	Rūpa and Arūpa dhātus
15)	Mārge	do.	are full of duhkha, are subject to samudaya and nirodha, and that there is also a marga leading to their origin and cessation).
4)	Duḥkhe anvayajñāna ((actual realisation of the
8)	Samudaye		fact that things of the Rupa
12)	Nirodhe	do.	and Arūpa dhātus are full
16)	Mārge	do.	of duhkha, are subject to samudaya and nirodha, and that there is also a mārga leading to their origin and cessation) ¹ .

The $Kath\bar{a}vatthu$ shows the stages of gradual progress of a srotāpattiphalapratipannaka while he is in the darśanamārga thus:

¹ The order of the kṣaṇas is to be made out from the number prefixed to each of the sixteen kṣaṇas. For a list, see *Mvyut.* 56; and for detailed exposition, see *Kośa*, VII, 8, p. 13n.

By Dukkhadassana, he gives up partially and not completely sakkāyadiṭṭhi, vicikicchā and sīlabbataparāmāsa and the kilesas involved in them.

By Samudayadassana, he gives up sakkāyadiṭṭḥi completely, and the other two partially, and so also the kilesas.

By Nirodhadassana, he gives up vicikicchā completely and sīlabbataparāmāsa partially, and so also the kilesas.

By Maggadassana, he gives up sīlabbataparāmāsa completely and the kilesas partially. $\left. \right.$ He is panna 1.

He is not yet quite Sotāpanna or Sattakhattuparama or Kolamkola or Ekabījī.

Do.

Do.

He is now a Sotāanna ¹.

The Kośa tells us that a candidate while progressing along these kṣaṇas is called Śraddhānusārī, Dharmānusāri or Srotāpattiphalapratipannaka up to the fifteenth kṣaṇa. It is in the sixteenth moment that he is considered established (sthita) in the sotāpattiphala and he may now be said to have obtained the catuḥsatyābhisamaya. This attainment, or in other words, the completion of the Darśanamārga frees him from the avastuka kleśas, viz., satkāyadṛṣṭi, etc., and makes him an Ārya, i.e., a person entitled to let himself flow along the stream of sanctification—the eightfold path. He is no more to be called Śraddhānusārī or Dharmānusārī. He is now a Srotāpanna².

The pre-Ārya stage, in fact, decides the path which a candidate is to follow. If one aspires only to mokṣa or nirvāṇa and accumulates kuśalamūlas of not a very high excellence as the Hīnayānists do, he is a Śrāvaka and if he aspires to Buddhahood in order to become the rescuer of the world, i.e., develops Bodhicitta and accumulates kuśala-

¹ Kvu., I, p. 164 leaves this point doubtful, but all the passages mentioned there support the inference drawn above.

² Kośa, VI, ²5fn., ⁵3c-d; *Paţis. M.*, I, p. 69 adds that the adept gives up all micchādiṭṭhi, micchāsaṅkappa, etc., and takes sammādiṭṭhi, sammāsaṅkappa, etc.

mūlas which only an exceedingly rare person can, he is a Bodhisattva.

I. PRAMUDITA

An adept as soon as he brings his mind up to the pitch described above 1 goes beyond the prthagjanabhūmi (plane of an ordinary being) and becomes definitely a bodhisattva. He can now be regarded as a member of the Tathāgata family, becomes irreproachable (anavadva) by any taint relating to birth (sarvajātivādena), ceases from worldly existences, proceeds on in the transcendental exist. ences, becomes established in the bodhisattvadharmatā and well established in the rank of a bodhisattva, comprehends sameness, and is destined to be included in the family of Tathagatas of all times (past, present and future) and ultimately attains Sambodhi. Such bodhisattvas while in this bhūmi have prāmodya (joy), prasāda (faith), prīti (pleasure), utplāvanā (elation), udagrī (exaltation), usī (fragrance). utsāha (energy), and become asamrambha (devoid of pride). avihimsā (devoid of malice) and akrodha (devoid of anger). The Jinaputras become joyous on remembering the Buddhas, their dharmas, the Bodhisattva practices, the paramita purifications, etc.3 They are pleased also because they know that they are out of worldly matters, nearing the Buddhabhūmi, the Jñānabhūmi, and cut off from births in hell or any lower form of existence. They are the refuge of all beings, and are always within the close view of the Tathagatas. They are devoid of all sorts of fear 4 because they have no love for self or for things. They do not expect any service from others; on the other hand, they are prepared to render service to all beings. As they have no conception of self, they canot have any fear of death, as they know that when they are dead, they will always be with Buddhas and Bodhisattvas.

¹ Kośa, VI. 31a-b: He is now either a kāyasākṣi or dṛṣṭiprāpta or śraddhāvimukta, see ante, pp. 250, 251.

² See infra.

 $^{^{8}}$ Cf. B. Bh., p. 7; 'Abhisamayālankārāloka' in the Kośa, VI. 26, p. 181 fn.

⁴ Cf. Ibid., p. 7.

Then the Bodhisattvas having sublime aspiration and mahākaruṇā as their forethought engage themselves in the attainment of further merits. On account of their having in a greater degree śraddhā, prasāda, adhimukti, avakalpanā, kṛpākaruṇā, mahāmaitrī and having a firm mind endowed with hrī, apatrāpya, kṣānti, sauratya, and admiration for the doctrines, and being helped by spiritual guides (kalyāṇamitras) they become well-established in the first bhūmi. They now take the following mahāpraṇidhānas (resolutions) 1—

- (i) to perform the worship of Buddhas in every possible manner and as completely as possible;
 - (ii) to preserve and protect the doctrines of Tathagatas;
- (iii) to watch the Buddhotpādas of all the worlds and to accompany the Bodhisattvas in their last existence from their descent from the Tuşita heaven up to their mahāparinirvāṇa;
 - (iv) to practise all the bhumis along with the paramitas;
- (v) to ripen all beings and help them in attaining omniscience;
 - (vi) to purify all Buddhaksetras by paying them visits;
- (vii) to comprehend the endless distinctions that exist in the things of all lokadhātus;
- (viii) to persuade all bodhisattvas to develop the one aspiration and collect merits therefor, and to realise the one and the same basis of all bodhisattvas, to attend upon all Buddhas, to see Buddhotpādas whenever wished for, to pass through the various forms of existence with his own body, to be accomplished in the doctrines of Mahāyāna and to propagate Mahāyāna;
- (ix) to perform the duties of a bodhisattva, to do righteous acts by body, speech, and mind, to realise the Buddhadharma all at once, to remove afflictions by faith, to obtain a body like that of the Mahābhaiṣajyarāja or be like the wish-fulfilling gem and to obtain speech which will never be fruitless; and
 - (x) to attain Sambodhi in all lokadhātus, to take without

¹ See Siksā., pp. 291-5=Daśa., p. 14=B. Bh., p. 8; Sūtrā. (Fr. Transl.), p. 36n; Suzuki, Outlines etc., pp. 308-310; E.R.E., sv. Bodhisattva (based on the Bodhisattvabhūmi) and is not the same as Daśa.; Dharmasangraha, exii: Praṇidhānam trividham.

moving a hairbreadth from the right path his birth as an ordinary human being, to retire from the world, perform miracles, attain bodhi under the bodhi-tree, preach the dhammacakra and attain ultimately the mahāparinirvāṇa. 1

While in the Pramuditā bhūmi, the Bodhisattvas take innumerable pranidhānas, of which the ten mentioned are the chief. They now pity the countless beings, who are led by wrong views and blinded by ignorance, desire and so forth, repeatedly born in the three worlds and, according to the chain of causation, increase their stores of misery. They try to establish themselves in Nirvāṇa, the extreme happiness (atyantasukha).²

While in the first bhumi they develop compassion and love and apply themselves to mahātyāga (i.e. giving up everything) of ordinary wealth, sons, wives, etc. They seek again and again the worldly and transcendental things and thus become versed in all śāstras and are consequently able to judge what is good and what is evil for beings. They become lokajña 3. By constant worship and observance of sasana (doctrines), they possess the ten qualities needed for the purification of the ten bhūmis,4 viz., faith (śraddhā), compassion (karunā), love (maitrī), sacrifice (tyāga), patience to withstand distress (khedasahiṣṇutā), knowledge of scriptures (śāstrajñatā), knowledge of the world (lokajñatā), modesty, bashfulness, steadiness and the ability of performing the worship of the Tathagatas.5 They now see many Buddhas and worship them with all the necessary requisites, show respect to their Sanghas and transfer the merit thus acquired to the attainment of Sambodhi.6

¹ Cf. Mtu., I, pp. 47 ff.

² Daśa., p. 18; B. Bh., p. 9. 3 Cf. B. Bh., p. 9.

⁴ Mtu., I, p. 78 has tyāga, karuņā, aparikheda, amāna, sarvašāstrā dhyāyitā, vikrama, lokānujňā, and dhṛti. Sūta. (p. 1454) has adhyāśa-ya, sarvasattvasamacittatē, tyāga, kalyāṇamitrasevanā, dharmaparyeṣṭi, abhīkṣṇanaiṣkramya, buddhakāyaspṛhā, dharmavivarana, mānastambhananirghātana, satyavacana. For an explanation of these terms, see Sūta., pp. 1458-1460. It will be observed that all the attainments mentioned in the Mtu. and Sūta. appear in the account of the Daśa. Cf. B. Bh., p. 9: daśa vihārapariśodhakā dharmā.

⁵ Daśa., p. 19; B. Bh., p. 9. Mtu., I, p. 78 mentions these eight qualities in connection with the first bhūmi.

⁶ Cf. B. Bh., pp. 9-10.

They gain the power to ripen beings through gifts (dāna) and affable words (priyavadya) and adhimukti (strong desire). Over and above these, they gain the other two samgrahavastus ¹ (elements of popularity) but not yet the insight into the unlimited knowledge. Of the ten pāramitās, ² their dānapāramitā is of an extraordinary nature. A bodhisattva who has attained the first bhūmi is entitled to become a king of Jambudvīpa and be a righteous ruler with mind always turned towards Buddha, Dharma and Sangha, and the bodhisattva practices and omniscience. Wishing to become a leader of men, he renounces the world, takes ordination ³ and in a moment enters into a hundred samādhis, sees a hundred Buddhas, traverses over a hundred lokadhātus and performs other extraordinary things.

CORRESPONDENCE OF BHUMIS WITH MAGGAS AND PHALAS

The Hinayāna system does not offer any parallel to the first bhūmi of the Mahāyānists, for it has no concern with Bodhicitta, Praṇidhānas, Maitrī, Karuṇā, and the ten qualities needed by a bodhisattva for fortifying himself to march along the ten bhūmis. It is from the second bhūmi that the Hīnayāna system offers a parallel to the Mahāyānic stages of progress. The Bodhisattvabhūmi ⁴ and the Madhyamakāvatāra ⁵ notice this fact in their treatment of the bhūmis.

In the Hinayāna system a very common way of speaking about the various stages of progress is that an adept by complying with the rules of Adhisīla⁶ (entire moral precepts) becomes a Sotāpanna and Sakadāgāmi, by complying with the rules of

2 Mvyut. 34 gives a list of ten. This is common in Pāli works.

4 See Rahder's edition in the App. to Daśa., p. 1.

⁵ M. Ava., ch. I (Le Muséon, VIII).

Sīla = Sammāvācā, °kammanta, and °ājiva.

Citta or Samādhi — Sammāsankappa, "vāyāma, "sati, "samādhi. Pannā — Sammāditthi. See, e.g., Vis. M., pp. 4, 510; Dīgha, III, p. 219

¹ Mvyut. 35: dānam priyavāditā arthacaryā samānārthatā; see also Lal. Vis., p. 38; Daśa., p. 22; B. Bh., p. 10.

³ Cf. Sata., p. 1459: Tathāgata-śāsane pravrajati. See infra, p. 270.

⁶ The Atthangika Magga is arranged thus:

Adhicitta, an Anagami, and by those of Adhipañña, an Arhat. So we can name the Hinayana stages also as (1) Puthujjana but Gotrabhū, (2) Adhisīla, (3) Adhicitta, and (4) Adhipaññā.1 If we now compare with these the Mahayanic bhumis as named in the Bodhisattvabhūmi, the relation of the Hinavanic to Mahāvānic bhūmis becomes apparent. They are as follows: (1) Gotra-Vihāra, (2) Adhimukticaryā-Vihāra, (3) Pramuditā-Vihāra, (4) Adhisīla-Vihāra, 2 (5) Adhicitta-Vihāra, (6), (7) and (8) Adhiprajñā-Vihāra, (9) Sābhisamskāra-sābhoga-nirnimitta-Vihāra, (10) Anābhoga-nirnimitta-Vihāra, (11) Pratisamvid-Vihāra, and (12) Parama-Vihāra. Of these twelve Vihāras, we have already dealt with the first two, the preparatory Bhūmis,3 which are, as a rule, not included in the usual list of bhūmis, and correspond to the Hinayānic Puthujjana or pre-Sotāpanna stage. Hence, if they be left out, we have the usual ten bhūmis. Evidently the five bhūmis (4-8 of the Bodhisattvabhūmi, and 2-6 of the Daśabhūmikasūtra) correspond to the four Hinavanic stages. The higher knowledge and attainments, which the Bodhisattvas claim and which, according to the Mahāyānists, are beyond the capacity of the Hīnayānists, are to be attained in the last four bhūmis.

II. VIMALĀ OR ADHIŚĪLA

A Bodhisattva who has well practised the first bhūmi and seeks the second develops ten cittāśayas, viz., rju (plain), mṛdu (soft), karmaṇya (pliable), dama (submissive), śama (tranquil), kalyāṇa (beneficial), asaṃṣṣṭa (unclogged), anapekṣa (indifferent), udāra (noble) and māhātmya (magnanimous).

¹ Three samanakaraniyas in the Anguttara, I, p. 229.

² B. Bh., p. 12 tells us that the Adhisıla-V. is the same as Vimalā-bhūmi of the Daśa.

⁸ See ante, pp. 243 ff.

⁴ B. Bh., p. 11 mentions ten samyagāšayas but does not enumerate them. The Mtu., I, pp. 85-9 mentions twenty adhyāšayas and amplifies each of them by a stanza. This is followed by an enumeration of the evil consequences that follow their non-observance, making the Bodhisattva go downwards. It is in connection with the third bhūmi (Mtu., I, p. 101) that the Mtu. tells us daša karmapathān kušalān sevanti purusottamā.

When these āśayas are developed he is established in the second bhūmi, Vimalā. He then quite naturally refrains from prāṇātipāta (taking life), adattādāna (stealing), kāmamithyācāra (mæconduct), anṛtavacana (telling lies), piśunavacana (malignant speech), paruṣavacana (harsh speech), saṃbhinna-pralāpa (frivolous talks) and becomes anabhidyā (nonavaricious), avyāpannacitta (devoid of malevolence), and comes to possess samyagdṛṣṭi (right view). He then thinks that all beings suffer on account of not avoiding the said ten akuśalakarmapathas. He therefore must persuade them to follow the right conduct, and with that object in view, he must himself first observe them.

He ponders over the fact that persons are graded according to their kuśalakarmapathas (good deeds performed) and other practices, by virtue of which they become men, gods, etc., and also Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, Bodhisattvas and Buddhas. He also ponders over the fact that by committing evil deeds (akuśalakarmapathas) beings are born in hell, the animal world or the Yama world, or as human beings with a short life and many diseases. So he decides that he will observe the ten kuśalakarmapathas and persuade others to do so.³ He therefore becomes loving and compassionate towards all beings and takes upon himself the duty of being a teacher and a guide, bringing them from the wrong to the right view. He observes that beings suffer on account of anger, avarice, desire, hatred, delusion, mental darkness, lack of energy and so forth, that they are tossed up and

¹ Daśa., pp. 23-5; on p. 26 the sufferings that follow each of the misdeeds are mentioned.

² B. Bh., pp. 11-12 refers briefly to the acquisition of kuśalakarmapathas and remarks that just as gold is purified by heating and other processes, so a Bodhisattva is purified by the practice of these karmapathas. The Mtu., however, makes no reference to the kuśalakarmapathas in the second bhūmi. M. Ava. (ch. II) enumerates the kuśalakarmapathas in all their details, and also dilates on the purity acquired by the bodhisattva in this bhūmi, which is for this reason named Vimalā.

³ Sata., p. 1455 refers to sīlas, but its account agrees to a great extent with that of Dasa. Sata. enumerates eight duties, sīlaparisuddhi, krtajūatā, etc. For comments on them, see Sata., pp. 1460-1. The Miu. gives us very little information in regard to this bhūmi.

down by the waves of desire, love of existence, ignorance, that they are tied up by love and hatred, likes and dislikes, and labour under the misconception of 'I-ness' and 'Mineness', etc. Out of compassion he resolves to rescae those beings and lead them to a suitable haven of peace.

While in this bhūmi he can see many Buddhas, worship them and transfer the merit thus acquired to the attainment of Bodhi. He receives the kuśalakarmapathas from these Buddhas and fulfils them in many kalpas. He gets rid of mātsarya (covetousness) and carries out fully the precept of liberality. Of the four samgrahavastus, he increases priyavadya (affability) in a great measure, and of the ten pāramitās he improves the śilapāramitā in a great degree but not so the other pāramitās.

Should a bodhisattva after the attainment of the second bhūmi desire material prosperity, he can become a righteous cakravartin with seven ratnas and so forth.¹

This account of the second bhūmi leaves us little doubt as to its similarity to the Adhiśila practices of the Hīnayānists, without, of course, taking into account the adhyāśayas developed by the Bodhisattvas. In the Visuddhimagga it is stated that the sīla practices lead to the purification of all impurities relating to conduct,² and serve as the basis for the attainment of sotāpanna and sakadāgāmi stages. In the first chapter of the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa dilates on the various sīlas to be observed by the householders, laydevotees, monks and nuns, supplementing it by the second chapter on the thirteen dhutangas, which he considers necessary for the ascetics (yogī) to bring their sīlas to perfection.³ The Nikāyas usually mean by the sīlas the commonly known ten sīlas and the 250 pātimokkha rules.⁴ By the complete performance of sīlas and a little of samādhi and paññā,⁵ an

¹ Cf. B. Bh., p. 12. The Mtu. adds in every bhūmi the qualities which make a bodhisattva retrogress from a higher to a lower bhūmi but passes over the other details.

² Vis. M.: sīlena ca duccarita-sankilesavisodhanam pakāsitam hoti.

³ Ibid., p. 59. ⁴ See, e.g., Anguttara, I, pp. 229, 235.

⁵ It will be observed that an adept commences practising all the three, sila, samādhi, and paññā, but he fulfils only one in one stage.

adept becomes a sotāpanna and a sakadāgāmi. We know that a sotāpanna is free from the three samyojanas and the two anusayas, viz., ditthi and vicikicchā.1 By bringing the three hindrances, raga (attachment), dosa2 (hatred), and moha (delusion) to their minimum (tanutta), and by getting rid of anusayas, kāmarāga and patigha and by practising a little more of samādhi, and paññā, he becomes a sakadāgāmi. In the Patisambhidāmagga,3 it is stated that an adept in sotāpattiphala, sakadāgāmimagga, etc., obtains aññindriya (the faculty of perfect knowledge), and the dhammas that were already existing in him become unmanifest (avyākata), and the new thoughts that arise in his mind are pure, transcendental and conducive to Nibbāna.4 A sotāpanna also gets rid of ditthasava completely and the other three asavas so far as they lead to hell, while a sakadāgāmi of olārika (gross) kāmāsava, and partially of bhavāsava and avijjāsava.5 In addition to the attainments required in the sotapattimagga, the adept must also think of the transitoriness and essencelessness of the five upādāna khandhas.6

There are two sub-stages between sotāpatti (or sattak-khattuparama) and sakadāgāmi. They are called kolamkola (kulankula) and ekabījī (ekavīcika). Any one who has got rid of the three saṃyojanas, completed the sīlas and practised a little (mattaso) of samādhi and paññā is usually called sotāpanna. He is also called sattakkhattuparama because he will be re-born seven times more among men and the gods before he can attain Nibbāna. He will never fall back into hell and is destined to attain Nibbāna after getting rid of

¹ Patis. M., II, p. 96.

² Ibid., I, pp. 72-3; II, p. 96.

³ Ibid., II, p. 96.

⁴ Ibid., I, p. 116.

⁵ Ibid., I, p. 24.

6 Samyutta, III, p. 168.

7 Anguttara, I, p. 233; IV, pp. 380-1; Samyutta, V, p. 205; Pug. P.,

p. 16; Netti., p. 189; Vis. M., p. 709; Paţis. M., I, p. 161; Kośa, VI, 34. For the two stages prior to sotāpanna, viz., Dhammānusārī and Saddhānusārī, see ante, pp. 250 ff.

⁸ There are disagreements among the schools as to the number of existences; some interpret seven existences among men and seven among the gods, and some even more, though the texts cited by each clearly show that seven existences in all were meant. See, for details, Kośa, VI, 34, pp. 200-2.

two more avarabhāgīya (orambhāgiya = lower) fetters, viz., kāmacchanda and vyāpāda, and five ūrdhvabhāgīya (uddhambhāgiya=higher) samyojanas (fetters), viz., rūparāga, aruparāga, auddhatya, māna and moha.

A srotāpanna becomes a kulankula by getting rid of the third and fourth categories of passions of the Kāmadhātu and by the acquisition of purer indrivas as opposed to the passions. He will be reborn twice or thrice either among the gods when he is called Devakulankula or among men when he is called Manusyakulankula.1 The Nikāyas did not draw any clear difference between sotapanna and kolamkola. The Visuddhimagga distinguishes them by saying that the Kolamkolas have vipassanā and indrivas of the medium order,2 while the sotapannas have those of mild (mrdu) order.

The next stage Ekabījī (Ekavīcika) is put in the Pāli texts after Kolamkola and before Sakadāgāmi, but in the Kośa it is put after Sakadāgāmi.3 The superiority of Ekabījīs as shown in the Pāli texts is that they develop samādhi and paññā still more but cannot complete them. 4 The Visuddhimagga adds that they have sharp faculties (tikkhindriya). In consequence of this, they are reborn once more among men (mānusakam bhavam) for attaining Nibbāna. Quite similar is the description of a Sakadagami; only in this case, it is not mentioned whether the one more rebirth will be among the gods or among men; the texts simply say "imam lokam āgantvā", i.e., they will be reborn in the Kāmadhātu, which includes both men and the gods. In any case, the Sakadāgāmis reduce rāga, dosa, and moha to their minimum (tanutta).

The Kośa tells us that a Sakṛdāgāmi destroys passions (kleśas) up to the sixth category. Having been born among the gods, he will be reborn once more among men. In him rāga, dvesa, and moha are brought to the minimum, and there remain only the three lower categories of passion, viz., mrdvadhimātra, mrdumadhya and mrdumrdu. The

¹ Kośa, II, 34.

² Vis. M., p. 709 following Kośa. 8 Kośa, VI. 35, 36.

^{4 &#}x27;Na paripūrakārī' is used instead of 'mattasokārī'.

Ekavicikas are distinguished from them by the fact that they destroy seven or eight categories of passions and acquire the faculties opposed to these passions.¹

The divisions of srotāpannas into three classes are mentioned also in the Lankāvatāra. It says that the srotāpannas are of ordinary (hīna), medium (madhya), and excellent (visiṣṭa) classes ². The hīna class will undergo seven more rebirths, the madhya (i.e. kulankula) three or five and the visiṣṭa (i.e. ekavīcika ³) only one. The saṃyojanas, viz., satkāyadṛṣṭi, vicikitsā and sīlavrataparāmarsa are mild, medium or sharp according to the class of srotāpannas. A srotāpanna by getting rid of the three saṃyojanas does not have rāga, dveṣa and moha.⁴ While speaking of the sakṛdāgāmi, the Lankāvatāra siṃply mentions that they require one more birth to put an end to duḥkha.⁵ The stage next to sakṛdāgami is anāgāmi corresponding to the third bhūmi of the Mahāyānists.

III. PRABHĀKARĪ OR ADHICITTAVIHĀRA

A Bodhisattva who has completed the second bhūmi and seeks the third should develop the following ten cittāśayas: ⁶ śuddha (pure), sthira (firm), nirvid (disgustful), avirāga (non-detached), avinivṛta (non-returning), dṛḍha (strong), uttapta (energetic), atṛpta (never satisfied), udāra (noble) and māhātmya (magnanimous).

While in the third bhumi the bodhisattva realises that the constituted things are impermanent, full of sufferings,

¹ Kośa, VI. 36 says on the etymology of the word thus: vīci = interval, separation, i.e., they are separated from Nirvāṇa by one more birth. Quite different, however, is the etymology given in the Pāli texts, where bīja = seed.

² Lankā., p. 117.

³ Ibid., pp. 117-9 explains Satkāyadrṣṭi as of two kinds, sahaja (natural) and parikalpita (imaginary), and then interprets Vicikitsā and Sīlavrataparāmarśa as a Yogācāra text would do.

⁴ Lankā., p. 119; on this point Lankā. differs from all Hīnayāna texts, which say that Sakṛdāgāmis bring rāga, dveṣa and moha to the minimum.

⁵ Ibid , p. 120.

⁶ Cf. B. Bh., p. 12; Mtu., I, pp. 89-90 mentions 28 qualities which send back a Bodhisattva from the 3rd to the 2nd bhūmi.

have momentary origin and decay, are without beginning and end, and are subject to the causal law. He understands the misery and despair as issuing from attachment to saṃskāras, and so he applies his mind to the attainment of Tathāgatajñāna, which he finds as unthinkable, immeasurable and above all misery and despair, and where there is neither fear nor trouble, and by attaining which one can save beings. He then develops ten more cittāśayas.

Realising this state of things, the bodhisattva again resolves to rescue beings and strive for them. He then thinks over the means by which he can rescue them and finds that it is possible only by anavaranavimoksajnana (the unscreened knowledge of emancipation). He observes that it is attainable only by hearing and practising the dharma. So he turns his mind to perfecting himself in the dharma and resolves to sacrifice all earthly wealth and enjoyment, and undergo all sorts of suffering.2 He now sees that mere purification in speech and action would not be sufficient and that he must observe the dharmas and anudharmas.3 With that end in view, he practises the dhyanas, the four brahmavihāras, viz., maitrī, karuņā, muditā, and upekṣā, and acquires the abhijñās, viz., rddhividha (power of performing miracles), divyaśrota (supernatural power of hearing), paracittajñāna (power of reading the thoughts of others), pūrvanivāsānusmarana (power of remembering former births), and divyacaksu (supernatural power of vision 4).

He sees many Buddhas, hears their discourses, and follows their directions. He comprehends that all dharmas are non-transmigrating, non-decaying and are only subject to cause and condition. The fetters of Kāma, Rūpa, Bhava

¹ Cf. B. Bh., pp. 12-3.

² Cf. Mtu., I, pp. 91-5 for ekā gāthā subhāṣitā a Bodhisattva is prepared to sacrifice everything, even his own life. This is followed by an enumeration of the evils for which a Bodhisattva may retrogress.

² Cf. B. Bh., p. 13; Mtu., I, pp. 91-2; M. Ava. (Le Muséon, VIII, pp. 301 ff.)

⁴ Sata., p. 1455 mentions only five dharmas in connection with the third bhūmi. Except the first there is very little agreement among the three works Miu. Sata., and Daśa.

and Avidyā become weak, those due to wrong views (micchādiṭṭhi) having been already destroyed. He gets rid of rāga, dveṣa and moha, and the following āśayas are purified: kṣāntisauratya (forbearance with gentleness), akhilyamādhurya (sweetness without hindrance), akopya (non-anger), akṣubhita (non-agitation), alubhita (non-covetousness) anunnāmāvanāma (non-elation and non-depression), sarvakṛtapratikṛtānāṃ niṣkāṅkṣā (non-desire for remuneration for works done), aśāṭhyamāyāvitā (non-deceit) and agahanatā (non-mysteriousness). Of the four saṃgrahavastus, he increases arthacaryā in a great measure, and of the ten pāramitās he improves kṣāntipāramitā, but not the rest.

In this description of the third bhūmi it will be noticed that the bodhisattvas apart from the extraordinary qualities peculiar to them commence practising the eight dhyānas (jhānas), the four brahmavihāras, and the six abhijnās. Their fetters relating to Kāma, Rūpa, Bhava, and Avidyā become weak, and those due to dṛṣṭi are destroyed. Their rāga, dvesa, and moha are completely destroyed.

In the Hinayana system also, an adept after completing the sīlas attempts to rise higher and higher in the training of mind through samādhi.1 The Visuddhimagga 2 treats in detail the practices that are classed under samādhi. They are the four jhanas with the help of forty kammatthanas (bases of meditation), ten anussatis (objects of remembrance), four brahmavihāras, the four āruppa (higher) jhānas, two bhāvanās, ten iddhis, and six abhiññās, all of which, it will be observed, are included in the third bhumi. The Visuddhimagga also tells us that an adept after completing the citta practices becomes an Anāgāmi, i.e., he will not be reborn any more in the Kāmadhātu.3 He gets rid of the five orambhāgiyas (lower), viz., sakkāyaditthi, vicikicchā, sīlabbataparāmāsa, kāmacchanda and vyāpāda,4 completely destroys rāga, dosa and moha, and removes

¹ Vis. M., p. 84. 2 Ibid., ch. II.

³ Pug. P. Cy., p. 198; oram vuccati kāmadhātu.

⁴ The first three are destroyed by the Sotāpattis and Sakadāgāmis; so in this stage only the last two are destroyed. See ante, pp. 264, 265.

kāmāsava, and partially bhavāsava and avijjāsava.¹ He comes into existence as an upapātika (self-born ²) and attains Nibbāna.

The Anagamis are divided into five sub-classes 3 called:

- (1) Antarāparinibbāyi, i.e., those who practise the path to destroy the five higher (uddhambhāgiya) saṃyojanas just after coming into being and before reaching the middle of their lives.⁴
- (2) Upahacca (=Upapadya of Kośa)-parinibbāyi, i.e., those who practise the path to destroy the five higher samyojanas after the middle and a little before the end of their lives.⁵
- (3) Asankhāraparinibbāyi, i.e., those who attain parinibbāna by putting an end to kilesas with a little trouble and without great effort (appadukkhena adhimattam payogam akatvā).³ The Kośa explains it as those who attain Nirvāṇa without effort because they are not energetic.⁷ The Anguttara Nikāya gives us a different interpretation. It says that those who complete the fourth Jhāna, develop the five balas and five indriyas, and attain parinibbāna in this life are called Asankhāraparinibbāyi.⁸
- (4) Sasankhāraparinibbāyi, i.e., those who attain parinibbāna by putting an end to kilesas with great trouble and great effort (dukkhena kasirena adhimattam payogam katvā). The Kośa explains it as those who attain Nirvāṇa without relaxing the exercises because they are energetic. The Anguttara Nikāya explains it as those who look upon the body as evil (asubha), food as loathsome and all constituted things

¹ Patis. M., p. 118.

² In the Suddhāvāsalokas (Pug. P. Cy., p. 198).

³ Vis. M., p. 710. The Kośa adds five more to this list. See fn. infra. Pug. P. Cy., p. 200 calculates 48 clasess of Anāgāmis out of these five.

⁴ Pug. P., p. 16. Kośa, VI. 37 explains it differently.

⁵ Pug. P. Cy., p. 199: āyukkhayassa āsanne thatvā. It may be remarked in this connection that the length of lives in these existences is counted by thousands of kalpas. Kośa, VI, p. 211 explains it as those who attain sopādiśeṣanirvāṇa-dhātu immediately after birth.

⁶ Pug. P. Cy., p. 199.

⁷ Kośa, VI, p. 211.

⁸ Anguttara, II, p. 156.

⁹ Pug. P. Cy., p. 199; see Vis. M., p. 453 sasankhāra-pubbapayoga.

as disgusting. They cogitate on the transitoriness of things and death, and make their minds steady. They develop greatly the five balas and five indrivas.¹

(5) Uddhamsota Akanitthagāmi, i.e., those Anāgāmis who do not attain parinibbāna while they are in the Aviha heaven but rise higher and higher until they reach the Akanittha heaven where they attain Nibbāna.²

Thus we see that the Hinayanic Anagami stage is parallel to the Mahayanic third bhumi.

The practices of the fourth, fifth and sixth bhūmis correspond to the Adhipaññā practices of the Hīnayānists. In the Bodhisattvabhūmi, three bhūmis are put under Adhiprajñāvihāra, the reason being that the Bodhisattva acquires Prajñā by three different means (tribhir mukhaiḥ), viz., bodhipakṣika dharmas, the four truths, and the causal law. So it subdivides this Vihāra into three:

- (i) Bodhipakṣyapratisaṃyuktādhiprajñāvihāra (practice of Prajñā with reference to the Bodhipakṣika dharmas);
- (ii) Satyapratisaṃyuktādhiprajñāvihāra (practice of Prajñā with reference to the Truths); and
- (iii) Pratītyasamutpādapratisamyuktādhiprajñāvihāra (practice of Prajñā with reference to the law of causation).
- 1 Anguttara, II, p. 156. Cf. Kośa, VI, p. 212 fn. The Anagamis (1) and (4) are of sharp faculties, (2) and (3) of mild faculties. (3) and (4) practise the dhyanas while (1) and (2) are described without any mention of dhyanas. About the precedence of (3) to (4), see Kośa, VI, p. 212.
- ² See Kośa, VI. 37, p. 213 for two kinds of Urdhvasrotas: (i) Akanişthagā and (ii) Naivasamjñānāsamjñāyatanagā.
 - The Akanisthagā are divided again into three sub-classes:
- (a) Pluta (one who soars high); on account of dhyānas practised by him, he is born in the Brahmakāyika heaven and lastly he is born in the Akaniṣṭha heaven where he attains Nirvāṇa;
- (b) Ardhapluta (one who soars only half-way); on account of dhyānas practised by him, he is born in the Brahmakāyika heaven, from which he passes to Suddhāvāsa and thence to Akaniṣtha to attain Nirvāṇa there; and
- (c) Sarvacyuta; before entering into Akaniştha heaven, he passes across all the heavens except Mahābrahma. An Anāgāmi cannot have two existences in one heaven because he always rises higher and higher.

IV. ARCIŞMATÎ OR BODHIPAKŞYAPRATISAMYUKTĀ-DHIPBAJÑĀVIHĀRA

A Bodhisattva passes from the third to the fourth bhūmi after acquiring the ten dharmālokas¹, i.e., after obtaining insight into sattvadhātu (world of sentient beings), lokadhātu (various worlds), dharmadhātu (universe), ākāsadhātu (space), vijñānadhātu (world of consciousness), kāmadhātu (world of desires), rūpadhātu (world of forms), ārūpyadhātu (world of formlessness), udārādhyāsayādhimuktidhātu (spheres of noble intention and aspiration) and māhātmyādhyāsayādhimuktidhātu (spheres of magnanimous intention and aspiration).

He becomes an accomplished member of the Tathāgata family by acquiring the following ripeners of knowledge,—unbending aspiration, implicit faith in the three ratnas, clear perception of the origin and decay of saṃskāras, of the non-origination of things in reality, of the incoming and outgoing of the world, of saṃskāra (worldly existences) and nirvāṇa (cessation), and of the actions of beings of the various spheres.

He practises the four smṛṭyupasthānas (earnest thoughts) and exerts to acquire further merits and preserve the merits already acquired and not to commit evil actions any more. He practises the ṛddhipādas, the five indriyas² and balas, the seven bojjhangas and the eight mārgas.³

In this bhumi he gets rid of satkayadrsti and its relevant factors and performs actions leading only to sambodhi.

As he acquires the various qualities of this bhūmi, his mind becomes softer, aspiration stronger, compassion for the sentient beings greater, and consequently he becomes more and more energetic.⁴ His doubts are removed and his cittāśaya becomes immeasurable.

He now takes ordination.⁵ His kuśalamūlas become of the purest kind. Of the four samgrahavastus he develops samānārthatā (feeling of equality) and practises the vīryapāramitā of the ten pāramitās.

¹ Cf. B. Bh., pp. 14-5.

² Viz., Śraddhā, Vîrya, Smṛti, Samādhi and Prajñā.

⁸ Of. B. Bh., p. 15.

⁴ Cf. B. Bh., pp. 15, 16.

⁵ See ante, 1st bhūmi, p. 259.

V. Sudurjayā or Satyapratisamyuktā-Dhiprajñāvihāra

A Bodhisattva passes from the fourth to the fifth bhūmi by developing the cittāśayaviśuddhisamatā¹ (uniformity and purity of intention) relating to the following ten matters: doctrines of the past, present and future Buddhas, moral precepts, mental discipline, removal of wrong views and doubts, knowledge of the right and wrong path, practice of the Bodhipakṣika dharmas, and the duty of elevating beings morally.

In this bhūmi, on account of the repeated practice of the various Bodhipakṣika dharmas, the possession of a still more purified intention,² the comprehension of tathātva (thatness) of all dharmas, and the further increase of his aspiration, compassion, love, etc., he understands the four Āryasatyas.³ He becomes proficient in understanding the

- (a) Conventional truth (samvṛti) on account of catering to the wishes of other beings;
- (b) Transcendental truth (paramārtha) on account of following only one path;
- (c) Truth of signs (lakṣaṇa) by realising the generic and particular characteristics of things (svasāmānyalakṣaṇa);
- (d) Truth of analysis (vibhāga) by knowing the various divisions of dharmas;
- (e) Truth of overcoming (nistīraņa) on account of knowing the real condition of skandhas, dhātus, āyatanas, etc;

1 The fourth bhūmi in the *Mtu*. is not very clearly described. It mentions some evils which retard the progress of a Bodhisattva and speaks about the avaivartika qualities attained or to be attained. See *Sata.*, pp. 1455, 1462-3, which gives a slightly different list.

2 Cf. B. Bh., p. 16. The Mtv. (p. 110) says that the citta of a bodhisattva when passing from the fourth to the fifth bhūmi realises "ādīptam sarvabhavam rāgadveṣamohebhyaḥ". But this is mentioned in the Daśa. in connection with the 3rd. bhūmi (see ante, p. 267). The account of the Sata. is also different and speaks only of some disciplinary rules. It says that in this bhūmi a bodhisattva avoids grhisamstava, bhiksuṇī-samstava, kulamātsarya, samgaṇikāsthāna, ātmotkarṣaṇa, vyāpāda, parapaṃsana, daśākuśalakarmapathā, māna, stambha, viparyāsa, rāga, dveṣa and moha. (Sata., pp. 1456, 1463-5).

3 B. Bh., p. 16.

- (f) Truth of things (vastu) by subjecting his body and mind to afflictions;
 - (g) Truth of origin (prabhava) on account of births;
- (h) Truth of decay and non-origin (kṣayānutpāda) on account of the complete suppression of all sufferings;
- (i) Truth of the knowledge of the path (mārgajñānāva-tāra); and
- (j) Truth of the origin of Tathāgata knowledge (tathāgatajñānasamudaya) on account of attaining knowledge in all its details and for following the bodhisattvabhūmis.

Having known the truths he realises that all the constituted things are essenceless, false. He pities the ignorant beings who undergo repeated births and the consequent sufferings for not knowing the truth and wishes that all his merits be transferred to them for their happiness, training, and ultimate emancipation.

In this bhumi he becomes smrtiman, i.e., does not get bewildered, matimān for having clear knowledge, gatimān for knowing the sense in which a sūtra is uttered, hrīmān for preserving himself as well as others, dhrtiman for practising the disciplinary rules, and buddhiman for being proficient in ascertaining what is proper and improper and such other things.1 His desire and energy for acquiring further merits and rendering service to beings become greater and greater. He pleases the beings by means of all the four samgrahavastus, by showing his rūpakāya, by giving discourses on the doctrines, on the Bodhisattva practices, on the greatness of Tathagatas, on the evils of the world, on the virtue of acquiring Buddhajñāna, and by performing miracles. For establishing the Buddha dharma he also acquires the secular sciences, viz., mathematics, medicine. poetry, drama, metallurgy, astronomy, etc.2

He sees the Buddhas, and hears the dharma from them. He renounces the world, becomes a dharmabhāṇaka. Of the ten pāramitās, he likes dhyānapāramitā.

VI. ABHIMUKHĪ OR PRATĪTYASAMUTPĀDAPRATISAMYUKTĀ-DHIPRAJÑĀVIHĀRA

A Bodhisattva, on the completion of the mārgas, passes to the sixth bhūmi and realises the ten kinds of sameness, viz., the sameness of all dharmas on account of their being (i) animitta (baseless), (ii) alakṣaṇa (signless), (iii) anutpāda (originless), (iv) ajāta (unborn), (v) vivikta (detached), (vi) ādiviśuddha (pure in the very beginning), (vii) niṣprapañca (inexpressible), (viii) anāyūha-niryūha (non-taken and non-rejected), (ix) māyāsvapnapratibhāsapratiśrutkopama (similar to dream, illusion, or echo), and (x) bhāvābhāvādvaya (identity of existence and non-existence).

Looking upon all things in this manner, the bodhisattva through his deep faith reaches the sixth bhūmi but does not yet attain the anutpattikadharmakṣānti (faith in the nonorigination of things by nature). As mahākaruņā predominates in his mind, he pities the beings who, on account of their ignorance, think of the things of the world as originating, decaying and possessing a soul (ātman). Not knowing the truth, they walk along the wrong path, are moved by merits and demerits, and thus have some abhisamskāras (thoughtconstructions). The thought-seed (citta-bijam) thus produced by the abhisamskāras becomes contaminated (sāsrava), being full of upādāna (attachment to existence) and productive of birth, old age, death and rebirth. Then by the thoughtcreation of karma-ksetra (fields of action), ignorance and desire, a net of views is woven, from which come name and form (nama-rupa); from them arise in succession the five organs of sense, contact, feeling (vedanā), abhinandana (enjoyment) combined with trsnā (desire), attachment (upadana), desire for existence (bhava), and five skandhas distributed into five classes of beings (gatipañcaka). These beings fade into old age, despair, etc. The bodhisattva comprehends that there is really no doer of these, which, being by nature uncreated by any power (anābhoga, śāntilaksaṇa), dis-

¹ Cf. B. Bh., p. 18. The Mtu. (I, p. 120) does not speak of anything particular in this bhūmi. It simply says that a bodhisattva by associating with the meditating ascetics (yogācāras) and by developing samatha and vipasyanā passes from the 5th to the 6th bhūmi.

appear and there is no destroyer of them. The bodhisattva further realises that the non-comprehension of the highest Truth is avidyā (ignorance) and avidyā is the source of saṃskāras, which produce the first citta-vijñāna with its concomitant (sahaja) the four upādāna-skandhas, from which arise name and form and gradually the mass of sufferings. The tree of suffering grows without any doer, or feeler (kārakavedakarahita). So he realises that these three worlds are all mere thought-constructions (cittamātraṃ yad idaṃ traidhātukam).

Through his comprehension of the law of causation from the ten different standpoints and on account of his being convinced of the fact that there is no doer or feeler, and no creator (asvāmika), and that all things are subject to cause and condition, and devoid of any essence, detached from everything else, and essentially non-existing, the bodhisattva realises the śūnyatā-vimokṣamukha (release of essencelessness).2 Then by comprehending that the bhavangas (the links in the chain of causation) are by nature extinct (svabhava-nirodha), he does not notice any dharmanimitta (basis of dharmas) and thus he attains animitta vimoksamukha (release of baselessness). Lastly, on account of his understanding the sunyata and animittatā of all blavāngas, he does not really seek any vimoksa, though he keeps up the appearance of doing so out of compassion for the innumerable beings; hence he obtains apranihita-vimokamukha (release of desirelessness). Keeping mahākarunā before him, he completes the bodhyangas which are still incomplete, and being convinced of the fact that the samskaras proceed from the assemblage of, or connection with, materials that are by nature non-originating and non-decaying, he turns his mind to asangajñana (knowledge free from attachment) called Prajñāpāramitāvihāra 3 and develops it greatly. He now practises all the sunyata, animitta and apranihita samādhis and develops ten āśayas for rising higher and higher in the spiritual attainments and goes beyond every possible charce of fall to Śrāvaka or Pratyeka-

² Cf. B. Bh., p. 18. Cf. B. Bh., p. 19.

¹ The Pratityasamutpāds is explained here from ten different standpoints, see Daśa., pp. 48-51, % ante, pp. 210-1.

buddha stages. Of the ten pāramitās he greatly develops the prajūāpāramitā.¹

A bodhisattva by passing through these bhūmis attains all the qualities of an arhat besides those which are indispensable to a bodhisattva. He is now an arhat because, as the Lankāvatāra says, he is now free from the thought-constructions (vikalpa) of dhyāna (meditation), dheya (objects of meditation), samādhi (concentration), vimokṣa (release), bala (powers) abhijñā (higher knowledge), kleśa (afflictions) and duḥkha (misery).

We have seen that, according to the Hinavanists, an adept on completion of the pañña practices becomes an arhat. Buddhaghosa devotes the last twenty chapters of the Visuddhimagga to the elucidation of the various matters which comprise the Paññābhūmi. In this bhūmi 3 the adept is expected to examine analytically the five skandhas (constituents of the body), the twelve ayatanas (fields of the organs of sense), twenty kinds of indrivas (faculties), four truths, and the twelvelinked chain of causation. These are only the preliminary practices of the Paññābhūmi. These help the adepts to complete the bhavanamarga. We have seen 4 that the bhavanamarga commences in the sixteenth moment, i.e., the last moment of the darsana-marga when the adept becomes srotāpanna. So the adepts while progressing along the stages of sanctification complete the sīla- and citta-visuddhis and partially the visuddhi relating to paññā. These visuddhis, as classified in the Visuddhimagga 5 and the Abhidhammatthasangaha are "(i) ditthivisuddhi (purity of views), kankhāvitarana-visuddhi (purity by which all the sixteen classes of doubts with reference to the past, present and future are transcended); maggāmaggañānadassanavisuddhi (purity consisting in the dis-

¹ Sata., p. 1456 says that a Bodhisattva in this bhūmi completes the six pāramitās and avoids the following six thoughts: śrāvakacittam, pratyekabuddhacittam, paritarṣaṇacittam, anabalīnacittam, durmanas-kacittam and vikṣepacittam.

² Lankā., p. 120.

³ Vis. M., p. 443.

⁴ See ante, pp. 253 ff. 5 Vis. M., pp. 443, 587ff.

⁶ Mrs. Rhys Davids has lucidly explained these visuddhis in her Intro. to the Compendium; her English rendering has been adopted here; for further details, see Comp. of Phil., pp. 65ff.

tinguishing of the actual path from that which is not the path); patipadāñānadassanavisuddhi (purity of insight during the progress of the practice of discernment), and ñānadassanavisuddhi 1 (purity-insight or path-insight). 2 In the arhat stage, the adept gets rid of the five remaining samyojanas (uddhambhāgiyas), all kilesas (afflictions), āsavas (impurities) and comprehends finally the real sense of the four truths, i.e., he obtains perfect knowledge and his mind is completely freed. He will have no more rebirth and will attain Nibbana. This is also borne out by the description of the arhats that we find in the Prajnaparamitas and other Mahayana texts. It generally runs thus: An arhat is ksīnāsrava (devoid of the four āsravas). niskleśa (free from afflictions), vasībhūta (with a well-controlled self), suvimuktacitta (with the mind completely freed), suvimuktaprajña (with knowledge cleared up), ājāneya (wellbred), krtakrtya (doer of all that is to be done); apahrtabhāra (relieved of the burden of five skandhas), anuprāpta. svakārtha (successful in achieving the object of life) and pariksinabhavasamyojana (free from the fetters of rebirth).

Corresponding to the two classes of sotāpannas called Saddhānusārī and Dhammānusārī, the arhats are also divided into two classes: Ubhatobhāgavimutta and Paññāvimutta. The former comprises those who realise the eight vimokkhas (releases) and destroys their āsavas (impurities) by paññā (knowledge) while the latter comprises those who do not realise the eight vimokkhas but destroy their āsavas by paññā.

All the arhats, it seems, did not possess the patisambhidas, which a bodhisattva acquires among others in the ninth

¹ Vis. M., p. 672: sotāpattimaggo sakadāgāmimaggo anāgāmimaggo arahattamaggo ti imesu pana catusu maggesu ñāņam ñāņadassanavisuddhināma.

² Buddhaghosa calls these five visuddhis 'sarīra' while the sīla- and citta-visuddhis 'mūla.' See *Vis. M.*, p. 443.

³ See ante, p. 251.

⁴ Dīgha, II, pp. 70-1 (up to saññavedayitanirodha).

⁵ Ibid., II, p. 71; Pug. P., p. 14; Anguttara, IV, p. 453; Kośa, VI. 63. The Anguttara, IV, pp. 452-3, however, says that the Paňňävimutta attains the eight vimokkhas, and omits the words "käyena phassitvä" which are mentioned in connection with the Käyasakkhins and Ubhato-bhāgavimuttas.

bhūmi. It is often found that an arhat who possessed paṭi-sambhidā also was specially described as sahapaṭisambhidā arahattaṃ pāpuṇi (i.e., attained arahathood with paṭisambhidā).¹ം

With the sixth bhūmi, our comparison of the Hīnayānic and Mahāyānic stages ends. The accounts of the remaining four bhūmis have nothing to do with the Hīnayānic practices, and besides, the attainments for which a bodhisattva performs the tasks of these bhūmis were unknown to the Hīnayānists. From the seventh bhūmi really commence the attempts of the bodhisattva to realise the dharmaśūnyatā, the nirnimittatā of things cognised by us, and the four bhūmis only indicate the gradual development of this knowledge of bodhisattvas until the Tathāgatabhūmi, in which he becomes a perfect Tathāgata and one with all the other Tathāgatas. The Hīnayānists, of course, accord a very high position to Buddha with the extraordinary powers and attributes, some of which are found mentioned in connection with the last four bhūmis.

VII. Dūrangamā or Sābhisamskāra-sābhoganirnimitta-vihāba

A Bodhisattva after completing the bodhisattvamārga enters into the seventh bhūmi. He now commences practising a different and superior path aided by the ten kinds of knowledge of expedients (upāyaprajñājñāna)². The ten kinds are as follows: He

- i. (a) possesses a mind well-trained by the meditations of sūnyatā, animitta and apraņihita; (b) appears as if acquiring a collection of great merits and knowledge;
 - ii. (a) comprehends the essencelessness (nairātmya-niḥsattva)

1 Mil., p. 18; DhP. A., II, pp. 58, 78, 93; Anguttara, II, p. 160: Sāriputta attained it within a fortnight after his ordination; Mahāvaṃsa, pp. 3-6: pabinnatthādiñāṇānam pitakattayadhāriṇaṃ...arhantānaṃ; p. 54: chalabhiññe tepitake pabhinnapaṭisambhide, etc.

² B. Bh., p. 19. It should be noted that there are two sections in each of the ten kinds of knowledge or activities of the bodhisattva, the first section being indicated as (a) representing his actual, and the second as (b) the expedients (upāyakauśalya) adopted by him for the sake of ordinary human beings.

of all dharmas; (b) does not give up the four apramanaviharas, viz., karuņā, maitrī, muditā and upekṣā;

iii. (a) collects the best of all merits; (b) does not cling to

any dharma;

various kalpas.

iv. (a) remains detached from the three dhatus; (b) shows also his doings in the three dhatus;

v. (a) frees himself absolutely from all afflictions (kleśas); (b) performs actions needed for eradicating raga, dvesa etc. of beings;

vi. (a) realises the non-duality (advaya) of all things which are like mirage, echo, etc.; (b) shows also his various actions,

discriminations, and immeasurable aspirations;

vii. develops a mind well aware of the sameness of all Buddhaksetras;

viii. (a) merges himself in the dharmakāya of all Buddhas; (b) shows also his rupa-kaya with its major and minor lakṣaṇas1;

ix. acquires the voice of the Tathagata; and

x. (a) comprehends the time distinguished as past, present and future as one moment (ekakṣaṇatryadhvānubodham); (b) shows also for the sake of the world his existence in the

For even a moment he does not remain dissociated from mārga-abhinirhāra (activities relating to the path), and jñānābhirhāra (activities relating to jñāna). He completes all the ten pāramitās² and the four samgrahavastus, four adhisthanas and thirty-seven bodhipaksika dharmas.3 He is now endowed with kāyakarma and vākkarma, pure according to the aspiration of the bodhisattva, the ten kuśalakarmapathas practised by Samyaksambuddhas and performs spontaneously the functions connected with the worldly arts and crafts (silpasthanakarmasthana) which were mastered

1 Lankā., p. 192, tells us that the bodhisattvas in this bhūmi cannot see the manomayadharmakāya of the Tathāgata.

2 Daśa., pp. 56-7. It will be observed that the paramitas are counted here as ten, i.e., adding to the usual six (7) Upāyakauśalya, (8) Pranidhāna, (9) Bala and (10) Jñāna. See ante, p. 12.

3 Daśa., pp. 57-8 gives briefly a comparative statement of the previous six bhumis and the seventh bhumi. All the attainments acquired hitherto up to the seventh bhūmi are completed spontaneously (anābhogena) by the bodhisattvas in the later bhūmis.

by him in the fifth bhūmi,¹ and is now the teacher of beings of the three thousand worlds² and has no equal in āśaya (appiration) and exertion (prayoga) excepting, of course, those bodhisattvas who are in the higher bhūmis. He has now in front of his mind all dhyānas, samādhis, samāpattis, abhijnās and vimokṣas, which will be completed in the following bhūmis. He now practises many samādhis and goes beyond the Śrāvaka and Pratyekabuddha bhūmi and approaches the Prajūājūānavicāranabhūmi.³

He attained nirodha in the sixth bhūmi, and in the seventh, he entered into and arose out of it but it should not be thought that he is subject to nirodha because he is above the delusion (vitarkadoṣa) of the Śrāvakas, viz., that nirodha is saṃskṛtātyanta vyupaśama (the ultimate cessation of the constituted things).⁴ It is one of the excellences of bodhisattvas that they rise up to, and remain in, the bhūtakoṭi-vihāra (i.e., ultimate possible state of sentient existence) but are never subject to nirodha.

Armed with great powers, meditation, and knowledge of expedients, he manifests himself in the world, shows his aspiration for Nirvāṇa, and surrounds himself with a large number of followers, but he remains mentally detached from everything. According to his praṇidhāna he appears in the tridhātu to rescue beings from misery, but he is not contaminated by the worldly impurities. Though he has the Buddhajñāna he shows himself as belonging to the class of Śrāvakas or Pratyekabuddhas, or even as subject to the snares of Māra and the influences of heretical teachers, going even so far as to sever himself from the Buddhadharma, take to worldly rites, or the enjoyments of the worlds and heavens.

¹ See ante, p. 272. 2 Cf. B. Bh., p. 20.

³ Daśa., p. 60 accounts for the reasons of Bodhisattva's repeating the performances of the first or other bhūmis. Cf. B. Bh., p. 20.

⁴ In fact this shows the line of demarcation between the Śrāvakas and the Bodhisattvas.

⁵ Cf. Bhavāgra or Bhavāgraparama=Nevasaññānāsaññāyatana. Kośa, VI, 37 fn. Cf. also Dīgha, II, p. 156: When Buddha was attaining parinibbāna it was said that he "nevasaññānāsaññāyatana-samāpattiyā vuṭṭhahitvā saññā-vedayita-nirodham samāpajji." Then he comes down from there and attains parinibbāna in the fourth jhāna.

He sees many Buddhas, hears from them the law, and acts according to their directions. His faith in the abstruse dharma (gambhīradharmakṣānti) is purified. He greatly develops the upāyakauśalya-pāramitā.

VIII. ACALA OR ANABHOGA-NIRNIMITTA-VIHARA

A Bodhisattva after completing the seven bhumis and purifying the marga by means of knowledge and expedients. collecting merits, forming the great resolutions (mahapranidhānas), establishing himself in the four adhisthānas (viz.. satya, tyāga, upaśama and prajñā), and so forth, he comprehends that all things are without origin, growth, sign, decay, change and are by nature non-existent, and that their beginning, middle and end are all the same; in short, he comprehends the tathatā (thatness) of all things.2 He goes beyond the thought-constructions due to citta and manovijnāna and knows that all dharmas are same like ākāsa and thus he establishes himself in the anutpattikadharmaksanti (the faith that things have no origination)3. As soon as he acquires kṣānti he is established in the eighth bhūmi (Acalā 4) and is above all enjoyments. He is possessed of dharmas which are spontaneous (anabhoga), and hence, has no anxiety for matters relating to kāya, vāk and citta, is free from all thought-constructions produced by the movements of thought and is established in the vipāka-dharmas (completion). He does not, in fact, practise the rules of conduct (samudācāras) of Buddhas, Bodhisattvas and Śrāvakas.

¹ The *Mtu.* (I, p. 127) says nothing in particular about this bhūmi except that a bodhisattva practises self-control for doing good to beings.

The Sata. (p. 1457) speaks of forty dharmas relating to the non-existence of soul and other worldly things, and the realisation of sunyata and allied matters. Hence, it gives the gist of the practices mentioned in the Dasa.

² Cf. B. Bh., p. 21. The Mtu. (I, p. 136) simply tells us that the Bodhisattva develops mahākaruṇāsamprayuktam cittam for going from the seventh to the eighth bhūmi and completes the account of the eighth bhūmi by mere enumeration of some legendary names.

⁸ Cf. B. Bh., p. 22; see also pp. 49, 273.

⁴ Cf. Lankā., pp. 221-2, 226.

He is now asked by the Buddhas to exert for acquiring the ten balas and four vaiśāradyas which he up till now has not acquired, and also to take into consideration the ruffled, afflicted, deluded state of mind of the ignorant people. He is then reminded of one of his previous resolutions that dharmatā (i.e. dharmas being without origin, decay and continuity) is not for Tathagatas only but that the Śravakas and Pratyekabuddhas should also be made to realise it. He is then asked by Buddhas to exert for possessing like them immeasurable body, knowledge, worlds, refulgence, purity of voice and limbs, dharmālokas, ksetras, sattvas and the variety of dharmas of the ten corners of the universe. The possession of 'immeasurables' is of great value, far surpassing all the merits and knowledge acquired in the previous seven bhumis, because the merits and knowledge acquired hitherto were by means of exertion (sābhoga-karmanā) while in the present bhūmi the merits and knowledge are acquired spontaneously.

On account of his acquiring spontaneously the upāyakauśalyajñāna (knowledge of expedients) and as the result of his efforts to acquire omniscience, he comes to know how and when a world comes into being, continues to exist, and then disappears, and which karma is responsible for it. He understands the smallness, greatness, i.e., every minute detail of the four elements, of the various classes of sentient beings, and their fields of action. Such detailed knowledge is needed by a bodhisattva, because he must appear among those sentient beings just as one of them in order to make them feel that he is same as them and that it is possible for every sentient being to become a Buddha 1.

He develops ten vasitās 2 (control) over āyu (span of life cetas (mind), pariṣkāra (requisities), karma (action), upapatti (origin, i.e., birth), adhimukti (aspiration), praṇidhāna (resolution), rddhi (miracles), dharma (doctrines) and jñāna (knowledge).

The bodhisattva at this stage can be said to possess

¹ Daśa., pp. 67-70 refers to the minute details of this knowledge, which is called Sarvākārajñatā. The details are passed over here. See also Kārikā (Bibl. Buddhica), Ch. I.

² Cf. B. Bh., p. 22.

inconceivable, incomparable, immeasurable knowledge, and his actions are always faultless. He now possesses the pranidhānas, adhiṣṭhānas, pāramitās, mahāmaitrī, mahākaruṇā, dhāraṇī, pratibhāna, etc., in short, all dharmas which make a Buddha. Hence, this bhūmi is called Acalā and there is no possibility of his going back from this bhūmi (avivartyabhūmi). He is now a member of the Buddha family, and may be said to possess the Buddha gotra. He is henceforth constantly attended by all the gods and Vajrapāṇi.

IX. Sādhumatī or Pratisamvidvihāra

A Bodhisattva after acquiring and developing the apramana jñānas, dhāranīs, samādhis, abhijñās, minute knowledge of the lokadhātus, balas, and the vaiśāradyas of the Tathāgata mentioned in the previous bhumi, enters into the ninth bhumi.2 At this stage, he knows truly whether the dharmas are good, bad or indifferent, pure or impure, worldly or transcendental, conceivable or inconceivable, definite (nivata) or indefinite (anivata), constituted or unconstituted. He knows the duties of the Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas, the Bodhisattvas, and the Tathagatabhumi. By the intelligence thus derived, he knows correctly the habits or the nature of thoughts of beings, their afflictions (kleśa), actions (karma), faculties (indriya), aspiration (adhimukti), elements (dhātu), desire and intention (āśayānuśaya), birth according to desires (vāsanānusandhi) and the rāśis (i.e., gotras). He knows the multifarious nature (nanatva) of thoughts (citta), afflictions, karma, etc.

The bodhisattva in this bhūmi is in a position to have a very minute knowledge of the aims and qualities of every being and so he is now capable of deciding the way in which a being is to be guided to the goal. He therefore modifies his teachings according to his judgment.

He also takes the form of a dharmabhāṇaka³ (preacher of

¹ Sata., p. 1458 gives the attainments of this bhūmi. They are similar to those described in the Daśa. Cf. Lankā., p. 192.

² Mtu., I, p. 141 mentions only some legendary names in this bhūmi and speaks of nothing else. Cf. B. Bh., p. 23.

³ Cf. B. Bh., p. 23; see also ante, p. 272.

dharmas) in order to preserve the doctrines of the Teacher. On account of his immeasurable knowledge, he preaches the dharma in various ways, adopting the four pratisamvids (branches of logical analysis). By the practices of this pratisamvids and working as a dharma-preacher, he becomes a receptacle of dharma utterances. Possessed of dhāraṇīs and pratibhānas he preaches the dharma to beings of all lokadhātus and does the same in an infinite number of ways.

Even in this bhūmi he continues his own spiritual practices and never gets out of the sight of Buddhas. He greatly develops the bala-pāramitā. If he wishes, he can now become a Mahābrahmā.²

X. DHARMANEGHĀ OR PARAMA-VIHĀRA

A Bodhisattva on completion of the duties of the ninth bhūmi passes to the tenth.³ Now he masters countless samādhis, and as the result, a lotus of infinite splendour and size appears and he is found to be seated on it with an equally resplendent body and established in the samādhi of omniscience (sarvajňajňānaviseṣābhiṣeka)⁴ surrounded by countless bodhisattvas who are yet in any one of the nine bhūmis and all looking at him. The rays of light issue forth from his body and make all beings happy.⁵ While he is thus seated on the lotus, rays come forth from the Tathāgatas and consecrate him as a Samyaksambuddha possessed of omniscience, and hence this bhūmi is called Abhiṣekabhūmi.

 $^{^1}$ Viz., Dharma (nature or condition), Artha (analysis), Nirukti (etymological analysis) and Pratibhāna (context). It is difficult to find suitable expressions for the Pratisamvids. An idea, however, can be formed from the illustrative passages given in the Da&a, pp. 77-8.

² See Sata., p. 1458. It speaks of quite different matters, some of which appear in the Mtu., I, p. 142, in connection with the tenth bhūmi.

³ The Mtu., I, p. 142, has nothing corresponding to the account of the Daśa. It mentions something connected with the Bodhisattva's descent from the Tuşita heaven and birth in the world of mortal beings.

⁴ Cf. B. Bh., 24.

⁵ The wonders of rasmi are described here as well as in the Prajnāpāramitās and other Mahāyāna works.

He now knows thoroughly how the world and its dharmas appear and disappear, the innumerable functions of a Buddha, the countless bodhisattva-vimokṣamukhas, samādhis, dhāraṇīs, etc. He is now possessed of such smṛti-kauśalya (expedients of memory) that he can hold all dharmas showered on him (dharmameghā) by infinite Buddhas. He can perform any kind of miracle. In this bhūmi he greatly develops the jñāna-pāramitā.

It is after the tenth bhūmi that a bodhisattva becomes a Tathāgata, and so the $Lank\bar{a}vat\bar{a}ra$ calls this stage Tathāgatabhūmi.³ The $\dot{S}atas\bar{a}hasrik\bar{a}^4$ also remarks that a bodhisattva in the tenth bhūmi can be called a Tathāgata.

In the Hinayana literature one does not expect any account corresponding to that of the last four bhumis. The conception of Buddha among the Hinavanists is more or less hazy and that is due to the fact that the introduction of the Bodhisattva conception in their literature was only an after-thought, suggested undoubtedly by the Mahāyānic speculations. They carefully avoided all metaphysical conceptions introduced by the Mahāyānists in connection with the Bodhisattva and Buddha conceptions, though they could not offer a similar treatment to the devotion-inspiring stories of the lives of the bodhisattvas. The Hinayanists, consistent with their doctrinal principles, incorporated in their literature a life of Buddha preceded by a short account of the Bodhisattva lives under the headings, Dūrenidāna and Avidūrenidāna. These two Nidānas are nothing but the gist of stories current among the Mahayanists, and possess trace, though very slight, of borrowings. Apart from the expressions like Buddhabīja6 and Abhinirhāra,7 the passage in which Sumedha brāhmana says, "I have no need of nibbāna by destroying the kilesas, like Dīpankara Dasa-

¹ Cf., B. Bh., p. 24.

² Sata., p. 1472 says that the bodhisattva in this bhūmi obtains, besides the pāramitas, Tathāgatabalas, four vaisāradyas and four pratisamvids, eighteen āveņikadharmas, sarvākārajñatā, sarvavāsanāklešānusandhiprahāņa and sarvabuddhadharmaparipūraņa.

³ Lankā., p. 227.

⁴ S'ata., p. 1458.

⁵ Jāt., I, p. 2.

⁶ Ibid., I, p 16.

⁷ Ibid., I, p. 14.

bala, I shall attain the highest sambodhi and by means of the boat of dharma, I shall lead the men across the sea of transmigration and attain parinibbāna," hows clearly Mahāyānic, or at least, semi-Mahāyānic traces. But the Hīnayānists rejected not only the metaphysical speculations but also the stereotyped list of pāramis of the Mahāyānists. The Jātaka as well as the Mahābodhivaṃsa² states that the Buddhakāraka dharma is only ten pāramis, viz., dāna, sīla, nekkhamma, paññā, viriya, khanti, sacca, adhiṭṭhāna, mettā and upekkhā. This is a list of their own making and does not agree with the Mahāyānic list.³

Of the extraordinary spiritual powers attained by a Buddha, the Hinayanists say very little. We have in the Nikayas the remark that Buddhas (including Paccekabuddhas) attain perfect knowledge by themselves, and by following the dharma unheard before.4 A Samyaksambuddha preaches the dhamma and becomes the founder of a religion, and the leader of men and the gods. He is sabbaññu (omniscient)⁵ and his knowledge in any matter whatsoever does not require any āvajjanā (reflection); he possesses ten balas, and four vesāraijas. In the Kathāvatthu⁶ there is a discussion on this topic, viz., whether the powers of a Tathagata are the same as those of a Sāvaka—a point raised by the Andhakas on the basis of the Anuruddha-samyutta.7 Among the powers of Buddhas referred to, there is nothing very special except the few mentioned above, and the Theravadins were driven to an uncomfortable position by the question of the Andhakas. In their literature the Hinayanists tried to prove that a Buddha is a rare being and superior to the men and the gods, but they mention also that there is hardly any distinction between an Arhat and a Buddha except that the latter is a founder and teacher of a religion.8

¹ Jat. I, p. 14. 2 Ibid., p. 25; Mahabodhivamsa, p. 9.

³ See ante, pp. 12, 278. 4 Anguttara, III, p. 9; Pug., P., p. 14.

⁵ Majjhima, I, p. 482 sabbaññū sabbadassāvī aparisesam ñānadassanam patijānāti.

⁶ Kvu., III, 1. 2. 7 Samyutta, V, p. 304.

⁸ For a comparison of the Śrāvakas, Pratyekabuddhas and Buddhas see ch. II, pp. 80-4. Dial. of Buddha, II, 1-3; III. 6.

Tabular Statement showing the correspondence between Hinaxanic and Mahaxanic Bhūmis

Mahāvastu	A. Prakṛticaryā(see p. 244, n. 4).		B. Pranithanacarye (see p. 244, n. 4).	I. Durārohā (see p . 247, n. 4).
Sutasāhasrikā (p. 1473) = Mvyu. 50 (srāvakabhūmis) = Tib. Dici. (p. 475) of S. C. Das	sub- I. Śuklavipaśyanā- A. Prakrticaryā bliumi but see (see p. 244, n. 4). Rahder, Daśa., pp. xi, xvii.	П. Goбrabhümi	*	III. Astamaka-bhūmi [Tib. Dict. makes it the seventh bhūmi (?).
Bodhisattvabhūmi		(a) Gotravihāra and II. Gotrabhūmi	(b) Adhimukticaryävi- hāra or Šuddhāsaya- bhūmi	III. Pramuditā
Dašabhūmikasūtra, Sata- sākasrikā and other Mahāyāna works.	No name but there is a A. Prakrticarya description of the practices, see pp. 246-7.	•	Adhimukticaryābhūmi (in the Madhyamakā- vatāra). See pp. 243-4.	I. Pramuditā
Hinayānic Stages	Pre-sotāpanna or Puthujjana (up to completion of the 15 kṣaṇas of the darśanamārga, see pp. 254-5).	Gotrabhii (Aco. to Anguttara and Pug. P. it precedes Sotspattimagga had aco. to other works adeptis in one of the maggas and phalas are Gotrabhii).		Sotspattimagga:— (i) Saddhānusāri (ii) Dhammānusārī (see pp. 250, 255).

CH. IVI THE SI	ages of S	FIRITUAL PROGRESS 20
C. Anulomacarya comprixing II. Baddhamana	i	III. Puṣpamaṇḍitā
IV. Darsana. bhūmi	V. Tanubhūmi	VI. Vitarāga- bhūmi
B. Caryāpratipatti- bhūmi comprising IV. Adhisilavihāra	• •	V. Adhicittavihāra
II. Vimalā	:	III. Prabhakari
I. Sotāpanna (or Sattakkhattu- II. Vimalā parama):— (i) Saddhāvimutta (ii) Dithippatta (see pp. 250-1). (a) Kolamkola (i) Devakolamkola (ii) Manussakolamkola (ii) Bkavioika or Ekabijī Koša puts this after Sakadā- gāmi (see pp. 263-5).	II. Sakadāgāmi :— (i) Saddhāvimutta (ii) Diṭṭhippatta (see pp. 250-1).	III. Anāgāmi:— (i) Saddhāvimutta (ii) Diṭthippatta (see pp. 250-1). (a) Antarāparinibbāyi (b) Upahaccaparinibbāyi (c) Asaikhāraparinibbāyi (d) Sasaikhāraparinibbāyi (d) Sasaikhāraparinibbāyi (e) Uddhaṃsoto Akaniṭthagāmi. The last mentioned is again subdivided into (i) Akaniṣthagā (i) Pluta

yatanupagā (see pp. 268-9). IV. Arahatta:—

Hīnayānic stages

(see p. 276).

Pratyekabuddha

288

UH.	·TAl		THE S	STAG	ES ()F S	PIRI'	FUAI	PF
•		IX. Yauvarājya	X. Abhişeka	N.B.—The powers	tained in the vari- ous bhūmis accord-	ing to the Mahā. vastu do not tally	with those men- tioned in other	works. Ine differ- ences are pointed out in the foot.	notes,
•			X. Buddhabhūmi						
IX. Sabhisamskāra- sabhoga-nirnimitta-	Vinara X. Anābhoga-nirni- mittavihāra (or	Anyata) XI, Pratisamvidvihāra (or Niyatacaryā)	XII. Parama-vihāra (or X. Buddhabhūmi X. Abhiṣeka Niṣḥhāgamana) or	Tathāgata-bhūmi					
VII. Dūraṅgamā	VIII. Acalā or Avaivar- tika	IX. Sādhumatī	X. Dharmameghā (or Abhiṣeka-bhūmi)						
			•						
•		•	sambuddha						

The Vinaya of the Mahāyānists

(How far it is an Adaptation of the Hinayana Vinaya)

In the extensive literature of the Mahayanists in Chinese and Tibetan translations, we find some sutras, which can be classified under Vinaya, as has been done by Nanjio in his Tripitaka1, but in Catalogue of the Chinese Buddhist any case there remains the fact that the Mahāyānists lacked a well-codified Vinaya corresponding to that of the Hinayanists. I-tsing, who was chiefly interested in the Vinaya, remarks that the Mahāyānists had no Vinaya of their own and that theirs was the same as that of the Hīnayānists2. But at the same time, one cannot ignore the fact that the Mahāyānists had a large number of sūtras, which served the purpose of the Vinaya. Nanjio refers to some of them while the Śikṣāsamuccaya and the Bodhicaryāvatāra furnish us with many such names. Some of these sutras are:

(1) Bodhisattvacaryānirdeśa 3, a treatise apparently dealing with the duties of a bodhisattva; and probably a work on the lines of Śāntideva's Bodhicaryāvatāra.

(2) Bodhisattva-prātimokṣa-sūtra 4, containing many rules of

1 Nanjio, Catalogue, col. 239f.

2 I-Tsing, Takakusu's trans., pp. xix, xxii.

3 Nanjio mentions two works under this name but the literal translations of the Chinese titles are (i) Bodhisattva-kuśala-śīla Sūtra, and (ii) Bodhisattva Nimiṃdhara Sūtra. (Nanjio gives "bhadra" for "kusala"

and "bhumidhara" for "nimimdhara").

4 In the Cambridge University Library there is a Ms. entitled Bodhisattva Prātimokṣa Sūtra procured by Bendall from Nepal. Through the kind intervention of Dr. E. J. Thomas I have been able to secure a rotograph copy of the same. It is a small work covering ten leaves. The title of the Ms. suggests that it should correspond to the Chinese texts Nos. 1500, 1501 of the Taisho edition of the Tripitaka (Nanjio, Nos. 1096, 1098) but on collation I find that there is absolutely no agreement. It, however, agrees very closely with the Chinese text No. 1499 (of the Taisho ed. vol. 24-Nanjio, 1097). The Sanskrit restoration from the Chinese title 菩薩戒 半曷磨 the *Prātimokṣa* type mixed up with admonitions characteristic of the Mahāyāna texts; it contains, e.g., rules regarding the duties of a disciple towards his Ācārya, Upādhyāya, Sahadharmika, etc., as also sermons on dāna, kṣānti, self-preservation, the duties of gṛhi-bodhisattvas and so forth.

(3) Bhiksu Vinaya, which contains among other things some regulations governing the conduct of a monk, e.g., rules regarding the collection of alms, medicines 1, etc.

(4) $\bar{A}k\bar{a}sagarbha-s\bar{u}tra$, dealing with \bar{a} pattis and mulapattis along with the ceremonies connected with the worship of $\bar{A}k\bar{a}sagarbha$ bodhisattva for absolution from $\sin s^2$.

(5) $Up\bar{a}li$ -paripṛcch \bar{a} , wherein Up \bar{a} li is generally the interlocutor and like the previous s \bar{u} tra, it also deals with \bar{a} pattis and an \bar{a} pattis \bar{a} , p \bar{a} padeśan \bar{a} (confession), etc.

(6) Ugradattapariprcchā⁴, in which Ugradatta gṛhapati (householder) is the interlocutor. It contains mostly the rules to be followed by gṛhī-bodhisattvas, and refers incidentally to the life of monks in the forest and so forth.

(7) Ratnamegha sūtra⁵, dealing with the duties of a forest recluse, collection of alms, medicines and so forth.

(8) Ratnarāśi sūtra⁶, which contains among other things the duties and functions of a Vaiyāvṛtya monk (i.e., a bhikṣu who wishes to undertake the duty of a secretary to the saṅgha), the rules to be observed when the monks go on their rounds for alms, etc.

There are many other works of a like nature from which

is Bodhisattva-ŝīlakarma-paddhati (Nanjio renders it as "A composition or treatise on the Bodhisattva's sīlakarma"). So the Bodhisattva Prātimokṣa Sūtra, from which passages have been cited in the Sikṣūsamuccaya and Bodhicaryūvatūra, is not the one, of which we have found the Sanskrit Ms. but is very probably the original of the Chinese translations, Nos. 1500, 1501, entitled

¹ See, e.g., Bodhic., p. 141; Sikṣā., p. 135.

² Sīkṣā., pp. 59ff.; See Nanjio, 67, 68.

³ Bodhic., p. 139: Upāli-paripṛcchāyām āpattyanāpattivibhāgaḥ. See Nanjio, 1109. It is placed under the heading: Hīnayāna Vinaya.

⁴ Nanjio, 23 (19) under Ratnakūta Class; see also Nos. 33, 34.

⁵ Nanjio, 151, 152.

⁶ Nanjio, 23(44) places it in the Ratnakūta class.

quotations are to be found in the Śiksāsamuccaya and a list of which has been compiled by Bendall in his edition of the text. That the Mahayanists looked for the rules of conduct in these sūtras is evidenced by the remark in the Śiksāsamuccaya that "uktāni ca sūtrāntesu bodhisattva-śikṣāpadāni" (the duties of the bodhisattvas are mentioned in the Sūtrāntas 1). In the Ratnameghasūtra it is stated likewise that bodhisattvas should know that they cannot attain bodhi by merely observing the Prātimoksa rules and that they are to perform the duties prescribed by the Tathagata in the So also in the Caturdharmakasūtra it is said Sūtrāntas 2. that the bodhisattva duties are to be found in the Sūtrāntas if they are frequently examined. How a bodhisattva is to conduct himself, and what siksapadas are to be observed are all described in the Sūtrāntas 3. Thus we clearly see that the Mahāyānists depended upon the rules scattered in the Mahavana texts and did not possess a code of the Vinava rules.

From the remarks quoted above it is evident that the Mahāyānists adopted the $Pr\bar{a}timokṣa$ rules of the Hīnayānists, though they pointed out their inadequacy for the attainment of Bodhi. The references in the Śikṣāsamuccaya to 5 or 10 sīkṣāpadas, to 250 sīkṣāpadas for bhikṣuṇs distinctly show that they were using some sort of a code, which was similar to, or had much in common with, the Hīnayānic $Pr\bar{a}timokṣa$. The name of one of their texts, viz., the Bodhisattva $Pr\bar{a}timokṣa$ sūtra may lead one to think that it is an adaptation of the Hīnayānic $Pr\bar{a}timokṣa$ sūtra, but from the few quotations that we have in the Śikṣāsamu-

¹ Siksā., pp. 17, 41; Bodhic., pp. 91, 159.

² Siksā., p. 17; Bodhic., p. 92: "kim tarhi yānīmāni tathāgatena teşu teşu sūtrānteşu bodhisattvasamudācārā bodhisattva-sikṣāpadāni prajūaptāni teşu teşu mayā sikṣitavyam iti".

³ Siksā., p. 41: sūtrāṇām ca sadekṣaṇād bodhisattvasikṣāpadāni hi prāyaḥ sūtresv eva dṛṣyante, teṣu teṣu sūtrānteṣu bodhisattva-samudā-cārā bodhisattvasikṣāpadāni prajūaptāni ti vacanāt".

⁴ Sikṣā., pp. 174-5 (Bhaiṣajyaguru-vaidūryaprabharājasūtra). About the number of the Prātimokṣa rules in the Vinayas of various schools, see E. Waldschmidt, Bruchstücke des Bhikṣunī-prātimokṣa, pp. 2, 3.

ccaya it may be said that it is not a code of monastic rules like the $Pr\bar{a}timok\bar{s}a$ $s\bar{u}tra$ but a mixture of monastic rules with those about the general conduct of the bodhisattvas both lay and ordained 1. The $\dot{S}ik\bar{s}\bar{a}samuccaya$ further hints that it is a compilation made from the $Ratnar\bar{a}\dot{s}i$ and other $s\bar{u}tras^2$.

The Mahayanists, however, give only a secondary place to the observance of the Pratimoksa rules. They say that a bodhisattva would be guilty of mulapatti (grave offence) if he says to anybody "What will you do by following the Prātimoksa-Vinaya? Develop your mind for samyaksambodhi, read the Mahāyāna texts. If there be any evil already done by you in word, thought, or body it will be purified by your reading the texts 3". But again it is also enjoined that a bodhisattva should not wholly depend upon the Prātimokṣa-Vinaya, for if a bodhisattva observes the Prātimoksa rules for many kalpas, living on roots and fruits of trees but with the mind attached to śrāvakayāna, he is guilty of a grave offence 4. Besides these remarks, one can also perceive from the customs of the Dhyana school about the ordination of monks, how the prātimoksa is relegated to a secondary position. De Groot tells us that the Dhyana school recognised the 250 Pratimoksa rules as the code of their clergy 5. The monks are first ordained according to the Pratimoksa rules, and after two or three days, they pass through a second ordination according to the Brahmajāla sūtra, the accredited Vinaya of the later Mahāyanists, in order to attain to the dignity of a bodhisattva. we see that the Mahāyānists could not or did not do away with the Prātimoksa rules.

The only Mahāyānic works accessible to us that can be called a code of disciplinary rules are the Chinese Brahmajāla sūtra and the two works of Śāntideva, viz., Śikṣāsamuccaya and Bodhicaryāvatāra. Śāntideva is a well-known figure in the Buddhist world of the seventh century, and these two works of his are collections of excerpts from a large number of Mahāyāna sūtras, gathered with a view to present a picture of

¹ See e.g. Sikṣā., pp. 37, 55, 144, 188.

² Siksā., p. 55. ³ Ibid., p. 61. ⁴ Ibid., p. 66.

De Groot, Le code du Mahāyāna en Chine, p. 8.

the duties and functions of a bodhisattva 1. As regards the Brahmajāla sūtra, De Groot informs us that though it had existed from the first century A.D., "it was not thought much of before 730 A.D."2 This book was translated by Kumārajiva and formed part of the great work Bodhisattva-hrdayabhūmi3. The fact that Śāntideva had no occasion to refer to this work shows that it was not very popular in his times, or probably, it was not known to him as the other works on Bodhisattva duties were. Like other Mahāvānic sūtras on disciplinary rules, it also attempted to combine the ideal life of a bodhisattva, who might be a monk or a layman with that of a monk as a member of the sangha. As the preliminary practices of a bodhisattva, it speaks of the twenty cittāśayas ("sentiers du debut"4) so many of which are found in the Dašabhūmikasūtra⁵, and it says that a bodhisattva must develop these before he can seriously think of attaining bodhi. These cittāśayas are followed by the mention of ten other qualities, called Vajras, which make the bodhisattva firm in his zeal and path. After acquiring these thirty qualities, the bodhisattva is to progress along the ten bhūmis.

The Prātimokṣa rules are enumerated in detail after these forty acquirements. The first part of the Prātimokṣa rules deals with the ten serious offences, making a bodhisattva guilty of Pārājikā. The first four of them are identical with the four Pārājikā offences of the Pātimokkha sutta in Pāli. They are abrahmacarya (misconduct), adattādāna (stealing), vadha (killing), and uttaramanuṣyadharmālāpa (laying claim to powers and knowledge not usually possessed by human beings). The additional six are:—

- (1) trading in intoxicating drinks or inducing others to do the same;
- (2) divulging the offences committed, or the way in which they were committed by a gṛhī, bhikṣu-bodhisattva, monk, or nun;

¹ Bendall's *Intro. to Sikṣā.*, p. v.

⁸ Nanjio, Catalogue, No. 1087.

⁴ De Groot, op. cit., p. 20.

⁵ See ante, ch. iv.

² De Groot, op. cit., p. 12.

- (3) vaunting one's own qualities and disparaging others 1;
- (4) giving nothing to the destitute, and even injuring them;
- (5) not forgiving a person who has injured the bodhisattva but asked for pardon; and
 - (10) speaking ill of the Triratna.

The second part deals with forty-eight other rules, which are considered secondary². Most of them are found in the $P\bar{a}timokkha$ sutta or the $\acute{S}ik_{\bar{s}}\bar{a}samuccaya$. They deal with rules regulating eating and drinking, confessing, treatment to be accorded to friends, teachers, etc., means of livelihood, forming pranidhānas, and so forth³. The $S\bar{u}tra$ under consideration is like many other Mahāyāna s \bar{u} tras an attempt to synthesise the life and ideal of a bodhisattva with those of a Hīnayānic bhikṣu. It is also a compilation like the $\acute{S}ik_{\bar{s}}\bar{a}samuccaya$ but it has confined itself more to the actual rules than the $\acute{S}ik_{\bar{s}}\bar{a}samuccaya$ does.

The chief reasons for the inability of the Mahāyānists to depend solely on the Hīnayāna code are the following:—

- (1) The Mahāyānists kept in view the conduct not only of a bhikṣu- (or pravrajita-) bodhisattva but also that of a gṛhī-bodhisattva.
- (2) The development of bodhicitta and the completion of the Pāramitās played the chief rôle in the practices of a bodhisattva.
- (3) Too much stress was laid upon Karuṇā and Maitrī, which, in many cases, received approbation at the expense of the most fundamental rules of conduct 4.

GRHI-BODHISATTVAS

The early Hīnayānists, as we have pointed out elsewhere ⁵, gave very little attention to the spiritual needs of the laity. They adhered to the principle that the duties that should be performed by a person for the attainment of Nibbāna

¹ Cf. Sikṣā., p. 98: ātmānam utkarṣayema param vā pamsayema.

² De Groot, op. cit., p. 40.

³ Ibid., pp. 33ff. for details.

⁴ See, e.g., Sīkṣā., p. 167.

⁵ See supra, ch. I, p. 3.

cannot be adequately done by one living a family life and not retiring from the world 1. The discourses suitable for the householders were, according to them, the danakatham, sīlakatham, saggakatham, kāmānam ādīnavam okāram samkilesam, and nekkhamme anisamsam² (discourses on gifts, moral precepts, heaven, dangers and evil consequences of desires, and the good fruits of retirement). It is only when the mind of the householders has been suitably prepared by the discourses on the last two topics that the Ariyasaccas are explained to them. The questions may be asked, viz., how could there be lay-adherents like Anathapindika. Bimbisāra, Visākhā, who had a prominent place in the then Buddhist society, and how is it that there are a few discourses in the Nikāyas on the duties of a householder, on an ideal wife, and so forth 3? Without questioning the antiquity of some of these discourses, we may assert that they contain very little except some general advice for the spiritual uplift of a person. The monks used to approach the householders more with a view to persuade them to leave the household life and become recluses than to continue to be householders and perform duties conducive to Nibbana. Later on, of course, one finds the laity formally taking the vow of five sīlas, or temporarily eight sīlas4, but still thev are not expected to derive the full benefits of the religion without going through ordination. Anathapindika in spite of all his gifts and virtues was only a sotapanna at the time of his death 5. This state of things, of course, could not continue long, and among the Hinayanists, there arose a new movement, which could be called semi-Mahāyānic, for

¹ Sambādho gharāvāso rajāpatho, etc. See *Majjhima*, I, p. 179; *Anguttara*, II, p. 208.

² Early History, etc., pp. 36 f.

³ Ibid., pp. 118ff.; N. Law, Studies, etc., pp. 95 ff.

⁴ At present this is common at Chittagong, and in Burma and Ceylon. Wieger in his *Bouddhisme Chinois* (I, pp. 147, 148) also refers to the ceremony performed by a layman by confessing his past sins, accepting the faith and the five precepts, and temporarily the eight precepts.

⁵ Samyutta, V, p. 387.

creating an important place for the laity in the Buddhist system by the introduction of the practice of the Pāramitās¹.

The Mahāyānists developed these Pāramitā practices a good deal and tried to persuade both householders and monks to fulfil them. In the Śikṣāsamuccaya we get glimpses of the duties of a Bodhisattva apart from the completion of Pāramitās. Some of these passages may be summarized as follows:—

(1) Gifts result in the destruction of tṛṣṇā (desire), removal of fear, anxiety, and so forth; therefore householders should make gifts as much as possible.

If a householder feels an excessive affection for his son but for none others, he must correct himself by reflecting that Bodhi is attained by one (i) who is samacitta (even-minded), (ii) who is exerting himself rightly (samyak-prayukta) to attain bodhi, and (iii) who does not make distinctions (anānātvacārin). He is to regard his son as an enemy (lit. not friend), as he being the object of excessive affection, is the cause of detracting his father's mind from the doctrines of Buddha. He is to correct himself by thinking that "he himself comes from one place and his son from another; that all beings are his sons, and he is the son of all beings." Thus a gṛhī bodhisattva must not regard anything as his own².

This is followed by an interesting passage showing how a grhī bodhisattva is to absolve himself from his sins when he fails to give away the thing asked for. At first he must reflect within himself that the thing, whether he gives it up or not, must one day leave him. If he can dispose of it, he will be happy at the time of his death. But even if after this reflection, he fails to give away the article, he is to confess his weakness thus: "I am of weak mind; my kuśalamūlas are not ripe; I am only a beginner (ādikarmika) in Mahāyāna; my mind as far as the gifts are concerned is not yet under control; I am still attached to upādānas and to "I-ness" and "Mine-ness," excuse me, O good man, do

¹ See ante, pp. 11 ff.

² Siksā., pp. 18-19 (Ugradattaparipṛcchā).

not be sorry; I shall develop my power of self-denial, so that I may fulfil your desire." He should also see that neither he has aprasāda (displeasure) against the seeker of the gift nor the seeker against him. But in any case, such miserliness is condemned by Buddhas¹.

There are many admonitions with regard to the nature of gifts to be made by laymen and as to the time when and the place where they are most efficacious².

- (2) A grhī bodhisattva is to give up anunaya (supplication) and pratigha (repugnance), and remain unattached to eight lokadharmas ³. He should not be elated by the gain of a wife, son, wealth and property, or depressed by misfortunes, for he is always to think that all constituted things are illusory and have the sign of appearance and disappearance (viṭhapana-pratyupasthāna=rnam-par bsgrub-pa ñebar-gnas-paḥi mtshan ñid)⁴. It is only a matter of practice, and the bodhisattvas can avoid both elation and despondency by making the mind invincible ⁵ against passions.
- (3) A grhī bodhisattva seeks enjoyable things "rightly and not wrongly; he has right living and not wrong living" 6.
- (4) The four evils from which a layman should refrain are:
 - (a) to cause hindrance to persons desirous of renunciation, of seeking ordination, or of following the marga to Nirvana;
 - (b) not, to believe in the fruits of actions and stand in the way of ordination of one's own sons, wife or relatives out of affection or love of wealth;
 - (c) rejection of the saddharma; and
 - (d) hatred (pratigha) towards śramaņas and brāhmaņas.

² Ibid., pp. 87, 144, 147-8.

4 The English rendering is conjectural.

¹ Sikṣā., p. 20 (Ugradattaparipṛcchā).

⁸ Mvyut. 125: Läbha, Aläbha, Yasa, Ayasa, Nindā, Prasamsā, Sukha and Duhkha. See Dh. S. 61.

⁵ S'ikeā., p. 180. Cf. Gandavyūha: na cābhyāsasya duṣkaram nāma kiñcid asti.

⁶ Siksā., p. 267; Transl., p. 245.

- (5) Grhis should refrain from
 - (a) drinking spirits, etc.,
 - (b) visiting places of vulgar amusements,
 - (c) bad temper, fickleness, wavering, garrulousness, etc., and should always be self-possessed 1.
- (6) A grhī must refrain from adultery and be satisfied with his wife. Even when living with her, he should always reflect that she is a source of evil, full of impurities and so forth. He should also bear in mind that she is a companion for passion and dalliance and not for the next world, a companion at food and drink and not for the fruits of karma; and that she is a hindrance to śīla, dhyāna, prajñā, etc².
- (7) A grhī should be discreet about the enjoyment or giving away of wealth. He should also take into consideration whether the giving away or abstention from same would stand in the way of attaining bodhi by himself or his sons, wife, or employees³.
- (8) For the benefit of others, the grhī bodhisattva should renounce his own profit 4.
- (9) Bodhisattvas derive great merit and even develop bodhicitta by worshipping or honouring stūpas ⁵.
- (10) A kulaputra or kuladuhitr practises the eight silas for one year or three years with a view to be re-born in the Sukhāvatī-vvūha 6.
 - (11) Grhīs should practise the daśakuśalakarmapathas 7.
- (12) Grhastha-ādikarmika-bodhisattvas should study the Buddhist scriptures.

The *Ugradattapariprechā*, from which the above information is mostly collected, is apparently a book of conduct for use by the lay bodhisattvas §. The question—"kathamāśayasampannasyāpy *ugradattapariprechāyām* gṛham anujñātaṃ" (how is it that in the *Ugradattapariprechā* those who have aspiration for buddhahood are also allowed to continue the family life?)—makes it clear that laymen, unlike the early Hīnayānists,

¹ Sīkṣā., p. 120 = Bodhic., p. 123.

² Ibid., p. 78 (Ugradattaparipṛcchā).

⁸ Ibid., p. 144. 4 Ibid., p. 145.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. 93, 94.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 175.

⁷ Ibid., p. 87.

⁸ Ibid., p. 62.

had a place in the disciplinary code of the Mahāyānists, though, of course, preference was given to the life of a recluse in the forest rather than to that of a dweller in the town 1. With the Hīnayānists they also hold that 'na jātu kāmān pratisevamānah putreṣu dāreṣu janitvā tṛṣṇāṃ gṛhaṃ ca sevitvā jugupsanīyam anuttarāṃ prāpayati so'grabodhiṃ.' (Never will he obtain the supreme wisdom by living the detested life of a family man, by enjoying the pleasure of the world, and by hankering after wife and sons) 2. On the contrary, they extol life in a forest in extravagant terms 3.

ROYAL LAITY

These are a few of the rules of conduct laid down for the lay bodhisattvas and noticed incidentally in the Śiksāsamuccaya. There are also many rules for developing bodhicitta or practising the pāramitās applicable to both Grhī and Pravrajitabodhisattvas, to which we shall refer later on. It should be noted that the Mahāvānists were careful to consult the whims and conveniences of kings and princes by providing some special rules for them 4. In the Rājāvavādakasūtra, e.g., it is stated that kings have many important duties to perform, and so they cannot practise the paramitas fully. Therefore, when walking, sitting, lying, eating or drinking they should develop desire for sambodhi, cultivate faith in the possibility of its attainment and form resolutions accordingly. They should concentrate their minds upon qualities of all buddhas, bodhisattvas, pratyekabuddhas and śrāvakas, and transfer the merits thus acquired to the benefit of all beings and thereby help them in the attainment of omniscience. In this way, a king can discharge the duties of his kingdom as well as he can acquire merits for attaining bodhi and bodhicitta 5.

¹ Bodhic., p. 123: Ugraparipṛcchāyām gṛhiṇam bodhisattvam adhi-kṛṭyoktam = Sikṣā., p. 120.

² Sīkṣā., p. 193: Tad evam Ugradattaparipṛcchāvidhinā gṛhadoṣān bhāvayitvā śrutavatā cittaṃ śodhayitum araṇyam āśrayaṇīyam iti.

³ Sikeā., p. 193; Bodhic., p. 285. On the virtues of forest life, see Sikeā., ch. xi.

⁴ In the Pāli *Vinaya* also, one notices that kings' wishes and conveniences were consulted in the framing of rules.

⁵ Sikṣā., pp. 9-10 = Bodhic., pp. 26.

In the $\overline{A}k\overline{a}sagarbhas\overline{u}tra$ are mentioned the five great offences (mulapatti) that may be committed by a king himself or through his officers, and for which he can be condemned to hell. They are.—

- (a) stealing property belonging to a sangha or a stupa;
- (b) reviling the dharma of any one of the three yanas;
- (c) disrobing a monk, who has shaved his head and taken yellow robes according to the Buddhist law, no matter whether or not he be observant of the precepts, and make him a family man and then punish him;
- (d) committing deliberately any one of the five deadly sins;
- (e) disbelieving the causes of actions (ahetuvādī) and the existence of the next world; and
- (f) practising the ten akuśalakarmapathas and persuading others to do the same ¹.

In the Ratnakūṭasūtra is shown how a monk is to receive a king or his officer if he is visited by either in the forest. He should offer him a seat, and should the king take his seat, he should also sit, otherwise not. If the king be fickle-minded (cañcalendriya) he is only to be complimented by being told that he is fortunate in having many śramanas and brāhmanas in his kingdom, and in being free from the infliction of thieves and rebels. If the king be high-principled and serious, then the dharma should be preached to him in various ways suited to his temperament ².

DEVELOPMENT OF BODHICITTA

The Mahāyānists think very highly of the virtue of developing Bodhicitta which throws into the shade all disciplines. An idea about their conception of the efficacy of possessing bodhicitta can be formed from the following stanza:—

kṛtvāpi pāpāni sudāruṇāni yadāśrayād uttarati kṣaṇena, śūrāśrayeṇeva mahābhayāni nāśrīyate tat katham ajñasattvaiḥ.

[After committing atrocious crimes, one can absolve himself from them in one moment by developing (lit. taking refuge in)

¹ $Sik \bar{s}a.$, pp. 59-60 = Bodhic., pp. 159, 160.

² Ibid., p. 197.

bodhicitta, just as some persons can escape punishments by being protected by powerful persons. It is only the ignorant who do not take to such an excellent refuge, the bodhicitta 1]. The Mahāyāna texts are replete with references to the excellences of the bodhicitta, a topic with which the early Hinayānists had no concern. By bodhicitta the Mahāyānists mean the forming of a resolution to attain bodhi and save every being of the world from misery by leading him to Nirvāna or Bodhi.

Though originally the development of bodhicitta was regarded as a matter of long practice and the outcome of qualities that one could possess rarely, it became later a matter of ceremony, and the persons seeking bodhicitta went through some formalities, an idea of which is given in the works of Santideva. The formalities are:—

- (i) Vandanā and Pūjana (worshipping) of Buddhas and Caityas²;
- (ii) Śaraṇagamana (taking refuge) and Pāpadeśanā (confession)³;
- (iii) Puṇyānumodanā (expressions of sincere approval of others' good deeds) 4;
- (iv) Buddhādhyeṣaṇā or Yācanā (entreating Buddhas to be the guides of all beings, ignorant as they are ⁵; and
- (v) Bodhipariṇāmanā (offering up one's merits for bodhi)6.
- I. Vandanā or Pūjana is effected by mentally dedicating all things of the world including his own self ⁷ to Buddhas with their disciples, and the promise of repenting for past sins and

¹ Bodhic., pp. 20.

² According to the Sikṣā., p. 290, Vandanā is included in Pāpadeśanā (Vandanā pāpadeśanāyām antar bhavati).

[§] Sikṣā., p. 290 says that in the Akṣayamatisūtra, ātmaparapāpadeśanā is included in puṇyasambhāra.

⁴ Bodhic., pp. 74-6; Sikṣā., pp. 291, 313; see Aṣṭa., pp. 135, 142, 149 for anumodanā and pariṇāmanā.

⁵ Siksā., p. 290: yācanam adhyesanāyām ekārthatvāt; also p. 315.

⁶ These formalities are collectively called Triskandha. See Sikṣā., p. 290 and also pp. 13, 291 ff.; Bodhic., pp. 73, 152, 154.

⁷ Bodhic., p. 48: dadāmi cātmānam aham jinebhyah, sarveņa sarvam tad ātmajebhyah.

refraining from committing any further evil deeds. The Puja 1 (worship) is to be performed by bathing the Tathagatas and Bodhisattvas, viz., Samantabhadra, Afita, Mañjughosa, etc., in a magnificent bathroom (snanagrha) with scents, unguents, flowers, incense, etc., accompanied by music. This is to be followed by the offering of robes, bowls, food and other requisites. Having thus finished the Snanapūja, Malyapūja and so forth², one is to perform the Dīpapūjā (illumination). Then commences the Dharmapüjā, which consists in decorating or making offerings to the caityas and images of Buddhas and Bodhisattvas. This is followed by Stutipūja 3 (chanting hymns in praise of Buddhas and Bodhisattvas) and Pranāmapūjā (uttering the formulæ of salutation) addressed to Buddha Dharma, Sangha and Tathagatastūpa 4. The Śiksāsamuccaya devotes three chapters 5 to the description of the results obtained by worshipping a stupa 6, or repairing a dilapidated stūpa, by drawing a picture or making an image of Buddha, by praising a Buddha and persuading others to do the same 7, but it gives first place to the three great pūjās, viz., (i) development of bodhicitta, (ii) practising the religion, and (iii) having a compassionate heart towards all beings.

The mental pūjās were all converted into rituals, and ended in the ceremonious worship of the images and caityas of various Buddhas and Bodhisattvas. The underlying object of these Pūjās is, of course, to develop $\acute{S}raddh\bar{a}$ (reverential faith) in one's mind for Buddha, his Dharma and his followers. Be it Hīnayāna or Mahāyāna, Śraddhā is at the basis of all practices 8 . In the $Nik\bar{a}yas$, one of the stock passages is that a disciple

¹ Sīkṣā., p. 290 does not detail the Pūjā and dismisses it simply by saying 'tatra vandanā sarvabuddhān namasyāmīti.'

² Cf. Sikṣā., p. 290.

³ For an instance of stuti, see Siksā., pp. 318ff.

⁴ Bodhic., pp. 44-57. 5 Siksā., chs. xvii, xviii, xix.

⁶ It may be observed in this connection that the *Bodhic*. attaches more importance to reverence shown to Bodhisattvas than to the worship of Caityas, the argument put forward being that Caityas depend for their origin on Buddhas, who issue from Bodhisattvas. For a discussion of the topic that Buddhas issue from Bodhisattvas, see *M. Ava.* (Le *Muséon*, Vol. VIII).

⁷ Siksa., pp. 309, 311, 313.

⁸ Bodhic., p. 87; Sikṣā., p. 2.

must have firm faith (aveccapasadena samannagto bhavati) in Buddha, Dhamma and Sangha¹. Perfection in the practice of Śraddhendriva is laid down in the Hīnavāna works, as one of the conditions which a candidate for Arhathood must fulfil. The Śiksāsamuccaya quotes sūtra after sūtra to establish the necessity of 'śraddhādīnām sadābhyāsah' (i.e. faith, etc., should be constantly practised)2. From the Aksayamatisūtra it cites the definition of Śraddhendriva which runs as follows: One can be said to have Śraddhendriva if he believes that (a) there is a right view (samyagdrsti) for men of the world; (b) one enjoys the fruits of his actions; (c) there is merit in performing the duties of a bodhisattva; (d) things in reality are devoid of any essence (sūnya) and therefore are non-existent. The first two of these debar him from committing any evils for the sake of livelihood, the third from developing a desire for any practice other than Mahāyānic, and the fourth from following anv doctrine other than Mahāvānic 3. Śraddhā comprises the three anusmrtis (i.e. constantly thinking of the excellent qualities) of Buddha 4, Dharma 5 and Sangha 6, the Hinayanists adding to these the three others, viz., caga (gifts), sila (precepts) and deva (gods)7. In short, faith (Śraddhā and Prasāda) in Buddha, Dharma and Sangha is the first essential to be fulfilled by a person aspiring for Buddhahood or Arhathood.

II. After acquiring firm faith, an adept is to take refuge (Śaranagamana) by uttering the formulæ of Triśarana s and confessing (Pāpadeśanā) his past sins. The Pāpadeśanā consists in the candidate's formal confession of all his sins, bodily, mental or verbal, actually committed or approved by him in his previous lives and in the present one, through ignorance or delusion, and in repentance of same, being convinced of the fact that akuśalakarmas lead a being to hell⁹. He is frightened

¹ For passages in the Nikāyas emphasising Sraddhā, see, e.g., Anguttara, I, p. 207; III, p. 153; Majjhima, I, p. 320; Theragāthā, 507, 1253-4.

² Sīksā., p. 316. ³ Ibīd., p. 316. ⁴ Ibid., pp. 318 ff.

⁵ Ibid., pp. 322 ff. ⁶ Ibid., pp. 324 ff. ⁷ Dīgha, III, p. 250.

⁸ Bodhic., pp. 58, 65; p. 66 adds the taking of refuge in Bodhisattvas.

⁹ Ibid., pp. 59, 72; cf. Svayambhūpurāna, p. 116. For the formulæ of Śaranagamana and Pāpadeśanā, see Siksā., pp. 160, 170.

by the prospect of hellish sufferings, and in despair, takes refuge in the three Ratnas and the Bodhisattvas, viz., Samantabhadra, Mañjughoṣa, Avalokita, Ākāśagarbha, Kṣitigarbha and Vajrapāṇi. He absolves himself from his sins by this Śaraṇagamana and Confession.

III. Puṇyānumodanā follows Pāpadeśanā. It consists in the expression of sincere joy by words, mind, or body ³ on seeing beings who after suffering hellish pains enjoy happiness through their good actions, or on seeing people developing citta for Śrāvakabodhi or Pratyekabodhi, or on seeing the great beings, the self-finders of the path, ⁴ continuing to be bodhisattvas or becoming Buddhas and exerting themselves for the welfare of beings.⁵

IV, V. After Puṇyānumodanā, the adept is to perform Adhyeṣaṇā or Yācanā, i.e., to entreat Buddhas not to attain parinirvāṇa but to be the light (of knowledge = dharmapradīpa) to the innumerable beings, who cannot distinguish between the right and the wrong ways on account of their ignorance. This is followed by Pariṇāmanā, when he offers all his merits for the good of all beings and for obtaining the powers and privileges of a Buddha and thus be able to satisfy all beings by meeting the individual needs of each one, no matter whether the need be worldly happiness or salvation.

BODHISATTVA-CARYA

The Bodhicaryāvatāra then points out that a patient cannot derive the full benefit of a medicine, however good it may be, if he does not follow the directions of the physician. So also an adept cannot attain bodhi by simply developing

¹ Bodhic., pp. 66, 67. 2 Ibid., p. 67.

³ E.g., Romaharsa, aśrupāta, gātrakampana. Ibid., p. 74.

⁴ Tāyinām=svādhigatamārgadešakānām, or Tāyah=samtānārthah. Asamsāram apratisthitanirvāṇatayāvasthāyinām. Ibid.

⁵ Bodhic., pp. 76; Siksā., p. 315.

⁶ For Adhyesanāmantra, see Siksā., p. 65.

⁷ This Adhyeṣaṇā or Yācanā is to be found in many Mahāyāna works, see, e.g., Lal. Vis., Ch. xiii: Samcodanāparivartaḥ; Sikṣā., p. 292.

⁸ Bodhic., pp. 77, 78; Siksā., pp. 296, 315, 348, 356.

bodhicitta and not practising the Bodhisattvasamvaras or Śikṣās as laid down by the Teacher.¹ It however asks the readers to consult the Śikṣāsamuccaya for details² and gives briefly the definition of Āpatti. It says that a bodhisattva would be guilty of an offence (āpatti) if for relieving beings from pain, present or future, and for producing joys¹ and comforts for them for the present or the future, he does not strive sincerely by his body, word, or thought, to procure the things needed, remedy the obstacles, suffer pain or loss to avert the pain and loss to others, and utilise the opportune moment. It will be anāpatti (non-offence) if a bodhisattva's efforts be fruitless in matters beyond his power. The āpatti, of which he may be guilty for not properly exerting in a matter really beyond his power, can be remedied by confession.³

Pāramitās

The most essential and primary caryā of a bodhisattva is the completion of the six pāramitās. The Mahāyāna texts enter into the minutest details about the duties of a Bodhisattva for completing each pāramitā in the right way 4. We shall quote here only one passage from the Śikṣāsamuccaya to illustrate what the Mahāyāna texts mean by perfection in a pāramitā:—

(i) Yaḥ kāyasyotsargaḥ kāyaparityāgaḥ kāyānapekṣā iyam asya dānapāramitā (It is bodhisattva's perfection in gift when he offers, gives up, or remains indifferent to his body);

(ii) Yat kāye chidyamāne sarvasattvān maitryā spharati vedanābhis ca na saṃhriyate iyam asya sīlapāramitā (It is his perfection in precepts when he irradiates love towards all beings, and does not contract himself in pain even when his body is dismembered);

(iii) Yat kaye chidyamāne ya evāsya kāyam chindati tesām eva pramokṣārtham kṣamate na ca cittena kṣaṇyate

¹ Bodhic., pp. 91ff.; also p. 87. 2 See infra, p. 320.

³ Bodhic., pp. 93, 94=Siksā., p. 15 (Bodhisattvasikṣāśarīrām). The āpattis and anāpattis are dealt with in the Upāliparipṛcchā. See Bodkic., pp. 139, 153.

⁴ There are many directions for the parisuddhi of pāramitās.

kṣāntibalam copadarśayatīyam asya kṣāntipāramitā (It is kis perfection in forbearance when his mind does not feel anguish and shows forbearance to persons dismembering his body, and pardons them in order that they may attain emancipation);

- (iv) Yena vīryeṇa taṃ sarvajnatāchandaṃ notsrjati, cittabalādhīnāṃ ca pratigṛḥṇāti, saṃsāram eva cānubadhnāti, kuśalamūlārambham eva cārabhate, iyam asya vīryapāramitā [It is his perfection in strength that he does not give up his aspiration to attain omniscience and holds fast to it by force of thought, that he follows the course of the world (without attaining Nirvāṇa which he could) and continues collecting merits];
- (v) Yat kāye vikīryamāne tat sarvajñatācittotpādaratnam kartum na sammuhyati bodhim evāpekṣate śāntapraśāntam eva pratyavekṣate iyam asya dhyānapāramitā (It is his perfection in meditation that when his body is cut in pieces he does not feel any doubt about the jewel of omniscience and aspires to bodhi calmly and sedately);
- (vi) Yat kāye chidyamāne kāyasya tṛṇakāṣṭhakudyavat pratibhāsopamatāṃ pratyavekṣate māyādharmatāṃ ca kāyasyāvatarati, bhūtānityatāṃ bhūtaduḥkhatāṃ ca bhūtānātmatāṃ ca bhūtaśāntatāṃ ca kāyasyopanidhyāyati, iyam asya prajñāpāramitā (It is his perfection in wisdom that when his body is dismembered he regards it as grass, wood, or wall, or as an image or illusion, and thinks of its real transitoriness, unhappiness, essencelessness and unruffledness)¹.

It is difficult to say how far these ideas were put into practice, but at any rate, it is apparent from the avadānas that they cherished these ideas fervently. In regard to the practice of the pāramitās, no distinction was made between a layman and a monk except in matters of ordinary gifts².

KARUŅĀ AND MAITRĪ

An important difference between the Hinayanists and the Mahayanists in regard to the disciplinary rules consists in the

¹ Sikṣā., p. 187; Transl., p. 182.

² See e.g., Siksā., p. 144; a monk's dāna should be ekā catuşpadikā gāthā=Bodhic., pp. 143, 144.

great stress laid by the latter upon Karunā (compassion) and Maitrī (love). It should not be supposed that the Hīnayānists were totally without them, but they did not emphasise them as much as the Mahāyānists did. These are included in the brahmavihāras, and the Hīnayānic monks are enjoined to practise them among various forms of meditation.1 In the Nikāyas we often come across the following passage in connection with the Brahmavihāras: so mettāsahagatena cetasā ekam disam pharitvā viharati. Tathā dutiyam etc. sabbāvantam lokam mettāsahagatena cetasā vipulena mahaggatena appamānena averena avyāpajjhena pharitvā viharati2 (a bhikkhu dwells with his mind full of love towards all beings of all quarters, the love-filled mind being large, profound, immeasurable and free from enmity and hatred). The Visuddhimagga dilates on this passage and explains by quotations from the Vibhanga and the Patisambhidamagga that a person is said to practise the metta-brahmavihara when he can love all beings of the world as he loves a particular person (e.g., his son). The bhikkhus are expected to develop the feelings of amity (mettā), compassion (karunā), joy (muditā) and indifference (upekkhā) towards all beings and wish for their happiness. The Hinayanists deem it sufficient if the bhikkhus can develop that state of mind, though remaining physically inactive and dwelling in a monastery or forest. But the Mahāyānists look upon karuņā and maitrī in quite a different light. The Śiksāsamuccaya brings out its importance as a producer of Buddha by the simile of the growth of the fœtus in the womb. It says that bodhicitta is the kalala (embryo), kṛpā or karuṇā the arbuda (the 2nd pre-natal stage), maitrī the pesī (the 3rd pre-natal stage), āśaya the ghana (the 4th pre-natal stage). These, developed by bodhi-anga, form the Buddha-garbha (mature Buddha-womb³). In short, the Mahāyānists insist that mahākaruņā should be the keynote of all

¹ These are included in the 40 kammatthānas, see *Vis. M.*, p. 110. In the *Prajāāpāramitās* also, these four brahmavihāras are treated as forms of meditation.

² Digha, III, pp. 223-4; Sum. Vil., pp. 115ff.; Vis. M., p. 111; see Mrs. Rhys Davids' paper "Divine States of Consciousness".

³ Sikṣā., p. 103.

bodhisattva practices 1. Śāntideva points out in the first kārikā of his work

yadā mama pareṣāṃ ca bhayaṃ duḥkhaṃ ca na priyaṃ, tadā manaḥ ko viśeṣo yat taṃ rakṣāmi netaraṃ.

(When fear and pain are disliked by myself as well as others, why should I distinguish myself from others that I should seek protection for myself and not for others.) It is mahākarunā, i.e., consideration for others' good that pervades the whole conception of bodhisattva practices2. This has, we must admit, relaxed to a large extent the rigidity of disciplinary rules, a thing which would never be allowed by the Hinayanists. Maitri is, in fact, a corollary to Karuna; it means that a bodhisattva must love all beings as he would love his own son³. Though the two expressions are very often mentioned together, it is mahākarunā that greatly appealed to the minds of the Mahāyānists. At any rate, we cannot but appreciate this ideal of the Mahayanists, if we take into consideration their philosophy of Samatā (equality), for the proper exercises of mahākarunā and mahāmaitrī can really be effective in making the average mind develop gradually the thought of samatā (equality or sameness).

Mahāvānists observe Šiķsā-samvaras

Notwithstanding their idealistic philosophy the Mahāyānists did not underestimate the value of the rules of conduct as formulated by the Hīnayānists. It was regarded as a mūlāpatti (grave offence) if a bodhisattva dissuaded a person from the observance of the Prātimokṣa rules and asked him to read Mahāyāna sūtras 4, and by mistake if one believed that purity could be attained by reading the Mahāyāna texts without observing the rules of discipline 5. But again it is sometimes said that the aspiration for Tathatā or

² Sīlesā., p. 286: Mahākaruṇayā bhagavan bodhisattvānām sarvabuddhadharmāh karatalagatā bhavanti.

¹ Sikṣā., p. 117: yat kiñcid Bhagavan bodhisattvānām kāyakarma yat kiñcit vākkarma yat kiñcit manaskarma tat sarvam sattvāvekṣitam pravartate mahākaruṇādhipateyam.

⁸ Sikṣā., p. 19. 4 Bodhic., pp. 147-8=Sikṣā., p. 61.

⁵ Bodhic., pp. 146, 147.

Śūnyatā or Sarvaiñatā absolves one from all sins1, and hence the observance of samudācāras is not essential. The significance of such a statement is that a person, who is striving to realise Sunvata or Tathata, endeavours to raise his mind to the height where he cannot find any distinction between positive and negative, between offence and nonoffence, vinava (rules) and avinava (absence of rules), sankleśa (impurities) and vvavadana (purification). He endeavours to go beyond the realm of vikalpa or samvrti, under which fall the disciplinary rules, whence it appears to him that there is no such thing as samudācāra (rules of conduct): and he can therefore be regarded as free from karmāvarana (obstacles due to action²). But this aspiration for śūnyatā³ cannot be had without going through a certain amount of samudācāra for it is often said that they who say that bodhi can be attained by one means (ekanavena) and that means is sūnyatā are foolish. Thus we see that the Mahāvānists felt the need of samudācāra or siksāsamvara as much as the Hinavanists, and for this, they drew upon the stock of disciplinary rules of the Hinavanists as also upon the common heritage of the Indian religious orders.

We have seen that as far as the development of bodhicitta and the practice of the pāramitās, and maitrī and karuṇā, are concerned, no distinction is made between a gṛhī bodhisattva and a pravrajita bodhisattva except in regard to a few directions that are necessary for gṛhī bodhisattvas for performing the duties of a bodhisattva compatible with family life. Though the Mahāyānists approved of the family life of a bodhisattva, they do not, in fact, believe that it is possible for a gṛhī bodhisattva to attain bodhi by continuing to be a householder. The life of Gautama

¹ Sīkṣā., pp. 165, 171-2, 178.

² Siksā., p. 172; for details of Karmāvaraņa, see Siksā., pp. 90, 98, 99. Cf. Patañjali-yogasūtra, iv. 31.

³ S'lkaā., p. 97: Buddha after saying that he had practised the pāramitās for countless years said, "tat te mohapuruṣā evam vakṣyanti ekanayenaiva bodhir yaduta śūnyatānayene ti"; p. 117: "kā punar iyam sarvākāravaropetā śūnyatā? yeyam bodhisattvacaryāyā aparityāgenābhyāṣyamānā abhyaṣtā vā sarvabhāvasūnyatā"; see also p. 272.

Buddha, always the ideal of the Mahāyānists in regard to the career of a bodhisattva, shows that at the end, a bodhisattva must retire from the household life in order to attain bodhi. In the description of bhūmis, the Daśabhūmikasūtra also points out that a bodhisattva in the fifth or sixth bhūmi seeks ordination and retires from the world. Evidently, they recognise that the bodhisattvas should, at a certain time, lead the life of a monk and abide by the rules of Vinaya.

MAHĀYĀNIC ORDINATION

The Kriyāsangrahapañjikā¹, though a later work, furnishes us with an account of the procedure of ordination that prevailed among the Mahāyānists. It follows the procedure of the Hīnayānists so closely that it seems that the ceremony of ordination remained almost the same among both the Hīnayānists and the Mahāyānists. It runs as follows:—

The Pravrajyā and Upasampadā are to be effected by an Ācārya and Upādhyāya. If any body seeks pravrajyā, he should be first asked about the restrictions (antarāyikān dharmān)² and then he is to take triśaraṇa, five śikṣāpadas, and the upāsakasaṃvaras (the disciplines that a layman can undertake, viz., the 8 śīlas) by uttering thrice the usual Hīnayāna formulæ. Then for ordination he formally entreats the Ācārya and Upādhyāya who consent to ordain him. His head is shaved and he is told that he is now different from a gṛhī, and is asked whether he is willing to continue to be so. On his answering in the affirmative, he is bathed in the waters of the four oceans ³ and clad in yellow robes, and is asked to utter thrice that he, so-and-so, gives up for his whole life the dress of a householder and adopts that of a monk.

He is now given a new name according to the *nikāya* (school) and with this name he again takes triśaraṇa and the ten śikṣāpadas. He holds a bowl and a robe (pātra-cīvara) and then entreats the Saṅgha to permit him to seek so-and-so

¹ A.S.B. ms., leaf 160a; see H. P. Śāstrī's Cata. of Sans. Mss., vol. 1, pp. 123-6.

² I.e. some diseases, permission of parents, etc. See Pāli Kammavācam.3 Evidently a Tāntric addition.

as Ācārya and so-and-so as Upādhyāya, and promises to make proper use of the bowl and the robe by uttering mantras. The wordings of the $Pa\tilde{n}jik\bar{a}$ are slightly different from those of the $Kammav\bar{a}cam$ but the form and order of procedure are the same.

DISCIPLINARY RULES COMPILED FROM THE Śikṣāsamuccaya:

As the object of the Śikṣāsamuccaya is a general treatment of the duties of a Bodhisattva, it does not present us with a systematic disciplinary code for the monks, but in some places it gives a few rules, which must have been taken from a code followed by the Mahāyānists. It says that the duties of a bodhisattva towards others or his duties on the occasion of hearing or preaching the dharma or performing the worship of the Tathāgatas are prescribed in the Bodhisattva-prātimokṣa.

(A) KALYĀŅAMITRA

(i) Bodhisattvas should have kalvānamitras (spiritual advisers). In the Mahavana texts, the kalvanamitra plays an important rôle. In the Prajñāpāramitās it signifies any person, layman, or monk, who teaches the bodhisattvas that things are transitory, and non-existent in the highest sense, advises them to perform the kuśalamūlas (good deeds), and tries to create in them an interest for Sarvaiñatā (omniscience) through Mahāyāna, avoiding Hīnayāna. Those who advised the bodhisattvas to study the Angas (scriptures) and to practise the various dhyanas, apramanas, arupyasamāpattis and so forth, or in other words, the practices of the Hinayanists, and dissuaded them from practising the pāramitās and studying the sūtrāntas, should be regarded as pāpamitras (evil friends2). It is enjoined upon a bodhisattva never to forsake a kalyanamitra even at the cost of his life, because the duties to be followed by him are all explained in the sūtrāntas which can be learnt only from a kalyāṇamitra 3. A kalyāṇamitra, according to the Bodhicaryā-

¹ Siksa., p. 55.

Sata., pp. 937-1041, 1185, 1190; Pañca. (ASB. Ms.), leaf 216a.
 Sikṣā., p. 41.

vatāra 1, is one who is well versed in the bodhisattvasamvara (discipline) and thoroughly knows the Mahāyāna. One should reverently attend upon him for the sake of detailed knowledge (parijnāna)2. A kalyānamitra protects a bodhisattva from falling into evil courses (durgati), doing improper deeds, frequenting pleasure resorts and so forth. He also brings him out of the worldly life³. The bodhisattvas in their turn should approach the kalvanamitra with a firm and tranquil mind, ready to obey him and carry out his wishes, however difficult they may be, just as a dutiful son would do to his father and a patient to his physician. taking his instructions as medicines, and the consequent attainments as the cure of diseases 4. The Śiksāsamuccaya also quotes many texts about the duties of a kalvanamitra and his disciple 5. According to it, a person, who teaches even a gāthā of four pādas, is a kalvānamitra6: hence a dharmabhānaka is a kalvānamitra. Thus we see that a kalvānamitra is a very wide term and includes both Ācārya and Upādhyāya. Though we do not come across the actual rules observed by the kalyanamitra and his antevasika (disciple) as we get in the Vinaya of the Hīnayānists, we may infer from the above description of the duties of a kalvanamitra and his disciple that the texts have in view the Hinayanic rules of conduct. The term is also found in use in the later Pāli texts. In the Visuddhimagga, Buddhaghosa uses it in the sense of both Acariya and Upajjhāya, and even calls Buddha a sabbākārasampanno kalyānamitta, (a perfect friend or spiritual adviser 7). He also points out that kalvanamitta is a kammatthanadayaka (prescriber of the basis of meditation), which is really the function of an Acariva.8

¹ Bodhic., p. 157. ² Bodhic., p. 157.

³ Ibid., p. 157; Sikṣā., p. 35: niṣkāsayitāraḥ saṃsārapurāt. This is similar to the function of an Ācariya.

⁴ Bodhic., p. 158. ⁵ See e.g. Sikṣā., pp. 34-6. ⁶ Ibid., p. 37.

⁷ Vis. M., pp. 121, 98; also pp. 89, 98, 99. Kalyānamitta is used in a general sense in the *Mangalasutta* and the *Samyutta*, I, p. 88.

 $^{^8}$ For the duties of the Ācariya and the Upajjhāya, see $\it Cv., VIII, 12-14.$

(B) VAIYĀVRTYA-BEIKŞU

(ii) The functions of a Vaiyavrtya bhiksu (i.e., a monk who has taken upon himself the responsibility of serving the Sangha) correspond to those of the Senāsanapannāpaka (arranger of seats, beds, etc.) and Bhattudesaka (distributor of food) of the Suttavibhanga 1. The account of the functions of the Senāsanapaññāpaka and Bhattudesaka is confined to matters relating to the distribution of seats, beds and articles of food to the monks. The quotation in the Śiksāsamuccaya touches on many topics and is interesting from the view-point of the functions of the secretary of a religious organization. It says that the primary aim of a Vaivāvrtva bhiksu should be to win the approval of the Sangha. He should do every act, however small it may be, with the consent of the Sangha. He must see to the needs of monks, who are aranvakas (leading a forest life), pindacārikas² (living on alms under some restrictions), yogācārins (meditating)3, bāhuśrutyas (seekers of wide learning), dharmakathikas (preachers of the law) or are suffering from illness. He should keep separate the money or business relating to the sangha of a particular locality and that of the sanghas of the four regions (cāturdiśa) of all times. 4 He must apply the gifts made specially for a stupa to the use of the stupa and not to any other purpose. He must not lose his temper or give improper directions. He must render account of the gifts received by him from faithful devotees

¹ Vinaya, II, pp. 74-5; III, pp. 158ff.; Suttavibhanga, VIII: Dabba after attaining arhathood wishes "kin nu kho aham samghassa veyyāvaccam kareyyan ti—yam nunāham samghassa senāsanan ca pañnāpeyyam bhattāni ca uddiseyyan ti".

² Cullavagga, VIII. 5, p. 215: piņdacārikā bhikkhū.

³ These three refer to those monks who are observing one of the dhutanga precepts. In the *Vinaya Pitaka* also, there are rules regarding the service to be rendered to, or by, a monk who is an ārannaka. See *Vinaya Pitaka*, Indexes, II, p. 343, V, p. 244, sv. Ārannaka.

Cf. Vinaya, II, pp. 75, 176; Dabba Mallaputta arranged seats and beds according as the monks were bahussutas, dhammakathikas, etc.

⁴ Cf. Agatānāgata-cātuddisasangha in Cullavagga, VI. 1. 4, 9. 1. In the inscriptions also, gifts are found to be made to a particular sangha or the sanghas of the four regions, see ante, p. 14.

at proper time and place. This account is followed by a list of the punishments that will be meted out to him in his future births for the breach, or improper discharge, of his duties.

(C) DRESS

(iii) A monk ordained in the name of Buddha is to put on yellow robes and shave his head and chin. However immoral or sinful he may be, he is immune from injury, punishment, or reproach from unordained persons including a king, because in some ways at least he renders good to the world of the gods and men².

The coloured garments, shaven head and the alms bowl are calculated to destroy his pride³. In order to be free from pride, he remembers that he is like a young caṇḍāla, living on alms, receiving what is cast away by others, and that he is to respect his teacher, please his fellow monks by proper conduct, and so forth⁴.

(iv) A bhikṣu needs dress for decency as also to protect his body from gnats and such other insects, but he cannot have more than three pieces 5. If anybody asks from him the bowl or a robe and if he has not got any to spare, he cannot part with those he has, for they are necessary for him for leading the life of a brahmacārin 6. The yellow robe of a monk is the sign of a śramaṇa and an object of worship to the gods, men, and demons. These are to be worn by monks free from all worldly ties, and as aids to the performance of duties leading to salvation?

(D) Food

(v) For self-preservation, a bodhisattva needs dress and food 8. He should collect food just as much as he needs.

¹ Siksā., pp. 55-6.

² Ibid., p. 68: The yellow robe should be regarded as a moksadhvaja (banner of freedom); see also p. 115.

⁸ Ibid., p. 150. ⁴ Ibid., pp. 150-1. ⁵ Bodhic., p. 141.

⁶ Ibid., p. 142: avisarjanīyam hi tricīvaram uktam tathāgatena. Cf. Vinaya, Mv., VIII. 13. 3; Nissaggiya Pāc., 1 ff.

⁷ Siksā., p. 136.

⁸ Ibid., p. 127. These two are called Satatabhaişajya, and medicines are called glānapratyayabhaişajya., Cf. Bodhic., p. 140.

While going on rounds, he should avoid unseemly places 1. Of the food he collects, he should put aside one portion for his brother monks, two for the poor and the afflicted and keep the fourth for himself. This portion he takes without attachment, greediness, and setting his mind to it 2. He takes it simply with a view to support and maintain his body so that he may not be emaciated.

While going on his round, he must not attend to pleasant or unpleasant things. With senses well controlled, seeing not more than a yoke's length in front, he should proceed from one house to another in regular succession3, without being elated if he gets alms, or down-hearted if he is refused. He should visit only ten houses and not more; if even then he fails to get alms, he should not be sorry. On the other hand, he should think that people are busy with their own affairs and it is so much to the good that they merely notice him, even if they do not give him alms. He should have maitrī and karunā for all persons he comes across, and wish them good fortune. After collecting alms, he should offer a portion to the poor if he can find any; if not, he should set apart a share for the poor as yet unseen. Then he is to sit crosslegged according to the practice of ascetics, and take his food, wishing that by the food taken by him the 80,000 worms of the body may live and be happy. If he has only very small food, he should think that it will keep his body and mind light and that he would be better fit for exertion 4. If he receives an abundant dole, he must be moderate in his food and leave the excess upon a rock for birds and beasts.

He must not enjoy the taste of food and so forth. He is to be pure in mind and body, but not in his food, for he should be conscious of the fact that food turns ultimately into filth. He must not mind the kind of food, i.e., whether it is good or bad, or the persons who give it to him, i.e., whether the giver is man or woman, boy or girl. He should give no

¹ Sikṣā., p. 116.
2 Cf. Mtu., I, p. 139.

³ Cf. Sapadānam (i.e. patipātiyā) piņdāya carati.

⁴ Sikeā., pp. 128ff; Bodhic., pp. 140ff.

thought to the fact of being treated with respect or otherwise, served slowly or quickly. In this way, he should avoid all possible evil thoughts (akuśala-manasikāra).

As a craving for food leads one to hell, a bhiksu must not have desire for flavour (rasatṛṣṇā) of food and must eat it bearing in mind that he takes food to support his body in order to follow the right path.

Should rain prevent him from going on his rounds, he should remain without food for two or three days, remembering all the while that there are creatures in Yamaloka and other evil places who do not get food for years, and so he must not have weakness in body and mind but must patiently endure hunger and thirst.

If any family offers him food, pure according to the Mahāyānic restrictions, he is to take his seat and deliver a discourse on religion; and if the food be not pure he is to rise from his seat and depart. A piṇḍacārika bhikṣu must not make comments on the food received, or indulge in any sort of useless talk. He must be always indifferent to what he gets.

A bhiksu may accept an invitation at a woman's place if thereby he can benefit himself or anybody else 1.

When begging or eating food, a monk should remember the giver, the worms in the body, and the dharma, which causes the good of all beings².

These are the various restrictions, which a monk should observe for his satatabhaiṣajya³. But in any case, he cannot eat fish or flesh prohibited in the Lankavatāra sūtra⁴ and other sūtras. The Śikṣāsamuccaya quotes many sūtras⁵, where fish and meat-eating are condemned, and refers to the three restrictions (trikoṭipariśuddha) observed by the Hinayānists⁶.

¹ Contrast Pac. 44-46.

² S'iksā., p. 138.

³ Ibid., pp. 127-131.

⁴ See Lankā., pp. 244ff. 5 Siksā

⁵ Siksā., pp. 131ff.

⁶ On this topic, see Watters' Yuan Chwang, I, pp. 55f. Vinaya, I, p. 238: tikotiparisuddham macchamamsam adittham asutam aparisankitan ti; Vinaya, II, p. 197: Devadatta's demand that macchamamsam na khādeyya; Sikṣā., p. 135n: tad uddisya hatam svahatam

(vi) In the *Bhikṣuvinaya*, medicines are prescribed for the sick for a yāma (three hours), for a week, or for one's whole life ¹. The Mahāyānic *Vinaya* ordains the use of ghee or oil, juice of roots, or fruits as medicaments for the preservation of the body, which is necessary for the salvation of all beings ².

(E) VĀCIKA

(vii) A bodhisattva should reside in a place suitable for him. He should speak in season, be cognisant of time and place, so that people may not find any occasion to be displeased with his conduct.

(viii) He should speak gently and not volubly. He should not frequent the societies of laymen, but should be fond of solitude. He should maintain a cheerful countenance ³.

(ix) He should not talk aloud 4.

(x) He should not indulge in "despondent, disconnected, frivolous or dramatic talk". In short, he should not do anything that might displease others, and every action of his should be tempered by mahākaruṇā and the desire of doing good to all beings.

(F) Kāyika

(xi) On land or water meant for use, he should not answer the calls of nature 7.

(xii) He should not use a toothpick, nor drop phlegm before teachers, as a mark of respect.

(xiii) He should not at the time of eating fill his mouth, make a noise, or open his mouth wide 8.

hanymānam dṛṣṭaṃ; De Groot, op. cit., p. 42. See also Prof. La Vallée Poussin's remarks in the Foreword.

¹ Bodhic., p. 141.

- ² Sikṣā., p. 135; cf. Vinaya, Mahāvagga, VI ff, for diseases and medicines.
 - 8 Bodhic., p. 132; Sad. P., p. 265.

⁴ Cf. Sekhiya, 13. ⁵ Sikṣā., p. 126.

- 6 Ibid., p. 127: sankṣepatas tu paraprasādarakṣā. Cf. Bodhic., p. 149; Sikṣā., p. 117.
- 7 Sikeā., p. 125; Transl., p. 124; Bodhic., p. 148; Cf. Bhikkhupāti-mokkha, Sekhiya, 73, 74; Bhikkhunivibhanga, Pāc. 8, 9.

8 Cf. Sekhiya, 39, 50, 51.

(xiv) He should not be unrestrained in hand and foot 1. "sit with dangling legs2", and rub hands.

(G) DHUTAVĀDINS

(xv) If an abhyavakāsika monk (living in an unsheltered place) falls ill, he should reside in a monastery without having any attachment to the monastery or making it his home, and wishing good to the giver of the monastery.

(xvi) An āranyaka monk (i.e., living in a forest) in choosing his place of residence should pay heed to the facts (a) that it is not very far from or near to a place wherefrom alms are to be collected. (b) that pure water is easily available for drinking. (c) that there are trees with leaves, flowers, fruits as also caves. cliffs and quiet places, and (d) that there are no wild animals in the locality 3.

(xvii) Should an āranyaka bhiksu desire to hear the dharma or see his ācārya or upādhyāya or consult physicians about some illness or have śayanāsana in a village, he should come and go only in the evening 4.

se-

(H) ATONEMENT

ipatti;

òΪ

(xviii) A bhiksu should atone for his sins in four ways:

(a) Vidusana-samudācāra = repentance and self-reproach the five by mentally entreating the various Buddhas to forgive him for the sins committed by him 5. It includes confession resorted to a: by Buddhist monks generally;

Pratipaksa-samudācāra = performing some good deed and thrice which counteract the evils committed by him;

tct! observedy for the (c) Pratyāpattibala = adopting the duty

² Cf. Sekhiya, 15, 16. 1 Siksā., p. 116.

3 Siksā., pp. 196-7. This is followed by an account of the mental that an āraņyaka bhikṣu should possess.

4 Ibid., p. 200. It is to be noted that the rules relating to the t of alms, use of medicines, etc. were the few special rules observed followers of the dhutanga precepts particularly Aranyakas, Pind pointed out (Siksa., Smāśānikas, Paścādbhaktikas and Abhyavakāšikas. See Siksājive himself from all 135, 137; Pañca. (ASB. ms.), leaf 218b, 284 for dhutangas. Shisattva. Groot, op. cit., pp. 69f for some other rules.

5 For formulæ, see Bodhic., p. 154.

samvaras (disciplinary checks) and not committing evils any more; and

(d) Āśrayabala = taking refuge in Buddha, Dharma, and Sangha and developing bodhicitta.

(I) ĀPATTIS

In the $Up\bar{a}lipariprcch\bar{a}$, the light and serious offences (\bar{a} patti) are distinguished in detail. The \bar{a} pattis may be broadly divided into two classes:

- (i) Those committed through hatred (dveṣasahagata). They are considered serious in view of the fact that they indicate a bodhisattva having a mind full of aversion (parityāga) towards beings. A bodhisattva is to confess his sins falling under this head before a chapter of ten monks.
- (ii) Those committed through attachment (raga). These are not serious, and even sometimes may be regarded as anapattis (non-offence) in view of the fact that they indicate the bodhisattva's favourable attitude towards other beings. A bodhisattva is to confess offences falling under this head before a chapter of five monks.

The Śikṣāsamuccaya mentions a few other āpattis, viz., stryā·
patti, dārikāpatti, hastāpatti, stūpāpatti and saṅghāpatti (i.e.,
offences relating to women, girls, hasta, stūpa and saṅgha), but it
a does not give details about the nature of their commission and
confession ¹.

bed Except for a little Mahāyāna colouring here and there, the (bove rules of discipline are apparently derived from those of make Hīr.ayānists.

hany d (J) ĀPATTIS PECULIAR TO MAHĀYĀNA

- 1 Bod form an idea of the nature of the disciplinary rules made 2 Sikelly of the Mahāyānists, we shall mention here some of medicinoffences, which are considered serious (mūlāpatti) by
 - 3 Bodh A bodhisattva should not
- 4 Cf. Streach the deeper teachings of Mahāyāna to a person 149; Sikṣā neetent to grasp them and thus frighten him away
- 7 Siksā., higher teachings and resort to śrāvakayāna; mokkha, Sel
 - 8 Cf. Sekhipp. 160; 164, 168, 169; Bodhic., pp. 153-4. See ante, p. 306.

- (ii) discourage persons from practising the pāramitās and ask them to take to śrāvakayāna;
- (iii) dissuade persons from observance of *Prātimokṣa* rules and advise them to read only the Mahāyāna texts;
- •(iv) disparage Śrāvakayāna and advise persons to give it up, or praise Mahāyāna and ask people to take to it in order to attain bodhi;
- (v) show disrespect to Śrāvakayāna and Pratyekabuddhayāna;
- (vi) read, teach or preach Mahāyāna for the sake of gain and honour; speak ill of others or show some supernatural powers with a view to lessen the gain of others and increase his own;
- (vii) be proud of one's own learning of Mahāyāna texts and imparting the same to others; or boast of his learning or his compassion to his hearers;
 - (viii) be proud of the gifts received from one's admirers;
- (ix) be instrumental in punishing bhiksus and compelling them to commit offences against the sangha;
- (x) give out false doctrines and thereby taint the morals of the bhiksus and thus discredit them in the eye of the house-holders 1;
 - (xi) reproach a gṛhī- or pravrajita-bodhisattva for any āpatti;
 - (xii) show disrespect to a bodhisattva;
- (xiii) show displeasure at a bodhisattva's enjoying the five pleasures of the senses;
 - (xiv) cause mental or physical pain to a bodhisattva;
 - (xv) address an unkind word to a bodhisattva;
- (xvi) fail to honour a bodhisattva thrice in the day and thrice at night;
- (xvii) fail to give away kingship, wealth or body for the completion of the resolution formed by him;
 - (xviii) hesitate to dwell with a person as low as a candala;
 - (xix) praise oneself and disparage others;
 - (xx) stop at a place to avoid quarrels, etc.;

¹ S'ikṣā., pp. 60 ff; Bodhic., pp. 160 ff. It is also pointed out (S'ikṣā., p. 64; Bodhic., p. 163) that a bodhisattva can absolve himself from all these sins by simply worshipping Ākāśagarbha Bodhisattva.

(xxi) profess himself as an observer of dhutangas or silas, or as one vastly learned;

(xxii) give out his good points and conceal the bad1;

(xxiii) fail to examine his own self;

(xxiv) wish the company of persons with little learning;

(xxv) be fond of assemblies;

(xxvi) fail to reside in solitary places and practise self-

(xxvii) hanker after gain and honour, frivolous talk, sleep, control; slumber and so forth; and

(xxviii) fail to serve or praise the Tathagatas.

These rules are more like pious advice than a code of discipline meant for the bodhisattvas. They lack a system and have in view only the ideal life, which a Bodhisattva should lead.

¹ For these and such other rules, see Sikea., pp. 98, 104, 105, 148, 309, 274.

APPENDIX

A Note on the Prajñāpāramitā

It need not be pointed out how great is the importance of the $Praj\bar{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ in the history of the Buddhist literature and how much the history of the origin and development of Mahāyānism depends on them. From the large number of works on $Praj\bar{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ existing in Sanskrit, Chinese and Tibetan, a list of which is to be found in Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Buddhist Tripiṭaka and Walleser's Die Vollkommenheit der Erkenntnis, it is apparent that at a certain stage of Buddhism the $Praj\bar{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ were considered by the Buddhists the most holy and the most valuable of all works. Nāgārjuna considered it worth while to undertake the task of writing a commentary on one of them while Asanga and many others devoted much time and energy to comprehend the philosophy embedded in them.

The earliest Prajñāpāramitā

The dates of Chinese translations of the various $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}$ - $p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ help us very little in ascertaining which of them is the oldest; nor is the theory, which is so often launched by scholars, that the more concise a book the earlier it is, of much consequence in regard to this class of literature. The earliest Chinese translation, we are told, was made of the $Daśas\bar{a}hasrik\bar{a}$ $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}$ by Lokarakṣā about 148 A.D.¹ Curiously enough this particular version of the $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}$ - $p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}$ was not known to the Sanskritists. The $Mah\bar{a}$ -vyutpatti² mentions six of them without referring to it while

² Mvyut. 65 mentions Satasāhasrikā, Pancavimšatisā°, Astasā°, Pancaśatikā, Trisatikā and Saptašatikā.

¹ Nanjio's restoration of the name Daśasāhasrikā, it seems, was made from the Tibetan name Ses-rab-kyi-pha-rol-tu-phyin-pa-khri-pa (10,000), for, there is nothing in the Chinese title to indicate that it is Daśa and not Aṣṭa or any other Prajñāpāramitā. Again, Nanjio points out that this Daśa was the same as Aṣṭa.

Bendall, R. L. Mitra, and H. P. Śāstrī catalogued many manuscripts on Prajñāpāramitā but did not come across any of the Daśasāhasrikā. Besides these facts it should also he noted that Santideva or the author of the Lankavatara had occasions to refer to the Sata. and the Asta. but never to the Daśa.1 The only explanation that can be offered for this silence of the Sanskritists is that either this Prajñāpāramitā is of non-Indian origin or is only a version of the well-known Asta. Profs. Nanjio², Walleser and a few other scholars prefer the latter view on account of the fact that the Chinese version of the Daśa, follows more or less that of the Asta. But then again the question arises, why in the Chinese collection there should be versions of the Asta. too? A very close study of the various Chinese versions may vield some definite results but the names of chapters as given in the Chinese versions help us very little, specially in view of the fact that the titles of chapters were mostly invented by the Chinese translators and were not translations of the titles of the Sanskrit originals.8

If we are to rely on the Tibetan traditions, we should regard the Aṣṭa. as the oldest, for it was the first Prajñāpāramitā preached by Maitreya.⁴ Adding to this the opinion of Profs. Nanjio and Walleser about the identity of the Daśa. and the Aṣṭa., it would not be wide of the mark to hold that the Aṣṭa. was the oldest. The Nepalese tradition, however, makes it to be the latest abridgment made from the original Prajñāpāramitā, which extended over a hundred and twenty-five thousand ślokas,⁵ the earliest abridgment being the Śaṭa. followed by the Pañcaviṃśati. and the Aṣṭa.

We might have made a better approach to the truth if we had known the text upon which Nāgārjuna commented and

¹ Henceforth Sata., Daśa., and Aṣṭa. will be used for referring to the Satasāhasrikā, Daśasāhasrikā and Aṣṭasāhasrikā.

² Nanjio, Catalogue, p. 3(d).

³ E.g. in the Sanskrit original of the Satasāhasrikā the chapters are indicated by numbers only without any name but the Chinese version gives the names of chapters. Evidently the names were chosen so as to indicate the subject-matter of the chapter.

⁴ Tāra., p. 58.

⁵ Mitra, Intro. to the Asta., p. iv.

produced his famous $Mah\bar{a}praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s\bar{a}stra$. Rosenberg informs us that the text used by $N\bar{a}g\bar{a}rjuna$ was the $Pa\tilde{n}cavimsati$, but he does not indicate his source of information.\(^1\) A view current in Japan at the present moment is that $N\bar{a}g\bar{a}rjuna$'s $S\bar{a}stra$ was written upon the $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}$ called F (Ta-ming-tu-ching)\(^2\). According to Nanjio's information this is a version of the Asta or Dasa, at least the fact that the Fa-ming-tu-ching contains also thirty chapters like some of the versions of the Asta and Dasa points towards the probability of its being a translation of a version of the Asta but on comparison we see that this text does not literally follow the present Sanskrit text. Besides, the number of chapters in the Sanskrit original is thirty-two while that in the Chinese is thirty and so if it be a translation of the Asta it must be of another version of the same.

INTERNAL EVIDENCES: (I) CONCEPTION OF TRIKĀYA

There are also internal evidences which throw light on the antiquity of the Asta. and its priority to the Śata. and the Pañcaviṃsati. They are mainly the conceptions of Sambhoga-kāya and the ten bhūmis.

It has been shown before 3 that the Yogācārins were responsible for the Trikāya conception and that Nāgārjuna in his Mahāprajāāpāramitāšāstra spoke only of two kāyas, viz., rūpa and dharma kāyas, and not sambhogakāya. The Sambhogakāya is expressly mentioned in the recast version 4 of the Pañcavimsati. but the nature of its description shows

¹ Rosenberg, *Die Probleme der buddhistischen Philosophie*, p. 273. Rosenberg's statement is not based on any authority. This tradition is also recorded by Przyluski (see *I. H. Q.*, vol. V, p. 2).

² Forming no. 135 of the Taisho edition, vol. VII, pp. 475ff. It was translated by Chi-Chien of the Wu dynasty (222–280). The Japanese view was communicated to me by Prof. E. Tomomatsu.

³ See ante, Ch. III (b), pp. 96, 97, 114.

⁴ The extant Sanskrit Mss. of the *Pancavimsati*. do not represent the original *Pancavimsati*., from which the Chinese and Tibetan (bkah-hgyur) translations were made. For detailed reasons see my *Intro*. to the *Pancavimsati*.

that its Sambhogakāya (=embodiment of Bodhipakṣika and other pure dharmas) corresponded to the Dharmakaya of the early Mahāyānists, and Svasambhogakāya of the later Yogācarins. Now the question arises, when did this conception of Sambhogakāya come into vogue? The first definite conception of it appears in the Lankavatara where the name given to it is not Sambhogakāya but Nisyanda- or Dharmatānisvanda-Buddha¹. The Lankavatara is not a very early treatise and is undoubtedly later than the Śatasāhasrikā, to which it refers by name 2. In the Sata., the term Nisyandakāya or Sambhogakāya does not appear but there is the graphic description of Śākyamuni's Sambhogakāya, which there Prakrtyātmabhāva or Āsecanakakāva³. is called This description of the Asecanakakāya serves as a prelude (nidāna) to the discourse on the Prajnāpāramitā. Pañcavimsati. follows the Sata. almost word by word in this description, and therefore needs no separate comment. The Gandavyūha surpassed the Prajñāpāramitās in its description of the Buddhakāya, and it seems that imagination could not be let loose further than what the compiler of the Gandavyūha has done. The description of the Āsecanakakāya appears in the Saddharmapundarika as well but it is more guarded and less imaginative. It is striking that this description of the refulgent body of Buddha, throwing its rays of light all over the universe and making every being happy, is absent in the Asta. The Asta. starts directly with the topic of the Prajñāpāramitā, which has been taken up by the Sata. in its second and fourth chapters 4. The silence of the Asta. about the refulgent kāya of Buddha is clearly indicative of its being earlier than the Sata., Pañcavimsati., Gandavyūha, etc., and was the production of a time when the Sambhogakāya or Āsecanakakāya had not yet been conceived of.

¹ See ante, Ch. III (b), p. 120.

² Lankā., p. 8.

³ See ante, Ch. III (b), pp. 118-9.

⁴ E.g. Sata., p. 504=Asta., p. 7

[&]quot; p. 324= " p. 4.

(II) CONCEPTION OF DASABHUMI

Another internal evidence, proving the greater antiquity of Asta. is its conception of Bhūmis. We have seen that in the evolution of the Bhumi conception, the Mahavastu represents the earliest stage, the Sata, and the Pañcavimsati, the middle, and the Daśabhūmikasūtra and other works the latest 1. Asta. does not refer to the Bhumis at all. Objection may be taken to such negative evidences, but if the Asta. and the Sata. be compared, it will be found that the evidence, though negative, is strong enough to prove our contention. The account of the Bhūmis occurs in the tenth chapter of the Sata., in which the topic has been introduced by the line: Katham bodhisattvo mahāyāna-samprasthito bhavati (how a bodhisattva is regarded as having started on the great way?)2. This is preceded by an elaborate answer to the question, "What is Mahāyāna?"3, giving opportunity to the Sata. to dilate on all the practices, which a bodhisattva is expected to accomplish. The chapter that follows the account of the Bhumis deals with the metaphysical interpretation of Mahayana, which is identified there with the highest truth, the Śūnyatā, and compared to Ākāśa 4. The Asta. answers the question as to who is Mahāyāna-samprasthita by one word: pāramitābhih samprasthitah (started by practice of the pāramitās). This is preceded by a brief answer to the question "What is Mahāyāna?" and followed by the remarks about the metaphysical aspect of Mahāyāna without any reference to the Bhūmis. It may be contended that the Asta. for the sake of abridgment omitted many topics and the account of the Bhumis was one of them. An objection like this cannot be answered except by a further negative evi-It is a common practice with the Prajñāpāramitās to enumerate all the various practices and even stages of sanctification of a Śrāvaka, Pratyekabuddha or Bodhisattva and show that they are non-existing or that Bodhisattvas remain dissociated from them or that they are only dreams but taken as real by the dreaming masses. None of the Prajñāpāra-

¹ See supra, Ch. IV.

³ S'ata., p. 1405=Asta., p. 23.
⁴ S'ata., p. 1530=Asta., p. 24.

² Sata., p. 1454=Asta., p. 23.

mitās mention these Mahāyānic bhūmis though they speak of the Hīnayānic stages of sanctification in such enumerations. This strengthens our position that the conception of Bhūmis was not known to the early Mahāyānists authat they were invented later on and incorporated in the larger Prajñāpāramitās, leaving untouched the older enumeration of Śrāvakabhūmis 2.

By such internal evidences it can be definitely stated that the Asta. preceded the Śata. and the Pañcavimśati. as well as the Lankāvatāra, Saddharmapundarīka, Gandavyūha and Daśabhūmikasūtra. By means of these tests of the conceptions of Sambhogakāya and Bhūmi, we may thus arrange the texts chronologically,—

- (1) Asta. and Daśa.,
- (2) Saddharmapundarīka, Śata., and Pañcavimśati. (recast version),
 - (3) Gandavyūha and Lankāvatāra, and
 - (4) Daśabhūmikasūtra.

The earliest Chinese translation of the Daśabhūmikasūtra was made by Dharmarakṣa in the third century A.C. proving the existence of the Sūtra itself in the second century. Two centuries may well be allowed for the evolution of these conceptions of the Sambhogakāya and the Bhūmis, and the expansions of the Prajūāpāramitās. We nay therefore hold that the Aṣṭa. or the Daśa. was in existence towards the end of the first century B.C.

RELATION AMONG THE VARIOUS Prajñāpāramitās

It is generally believed,—there is also a tradition to this effect,—that there has been a gradual abridgment of the original $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}$ and this has given rise to the various treatises called the $\acute{S}atas\bar{a}hasrik\bar{a}$, $Pa\tilde{n}cavim\dot{s}atis\bar{a}^{\circ}$, $Ast\bar{a}dasa\bar{a}^{\circ}$, $Da\dot{s}as\bar{a}^{\circ}$, $Astas\bar{a}^{\circ}$, $Saptasatik\bar{a}$, $Ardhasatik\bar{a}$, ending with $Ek\bar{a}ksar\bar{a}$. Strictly speaking all these $Praj\tilde{n}\bar{a}p\bar{a}ramit\bar{a}s$ excepting the first three or four are not really abridgments of the larger ones but are independent works devised and written by different compilers at different times. The main

¹ See ante, Ch. IV, p. 241.

² See Sata., p. 1473.

theme of all the works is, of course, the same, viz., the establishment of the new Śūnyatā philosophy, and the assertion that the Truth can be realised through the practice of the prajñāpāramitā only. There are many extraneous matters, which have been discussed incidentally in the larger Prajñāpāramitās and passed over in the smaller ones, e.g., the sense of the 18 śūnyatās, 118 samādhis, the various cakṣus, the bodhipakṣikadharmas. It seems to me that the larger Prajñāpāramitās are not merely unnecessary expansions of the smaller ones, and that it is perhaps an exaggeration to say that the Vajracchedikā is an abridgment of the Śata., or the Ekākṣarī gives all that a Prajñāpāramitā can give.

And then as against the tradition that the smaller $Praj\tilde{n}\tilde{a}$ pāramitās are abridgments of the larger ones, a view is current among modern oriental scholars that the truth lies in the opposite direction. Dr. Tucci is an advocate of this view. In his introduction to the Saptašatikā, he says "Save rare exceptions, bigger compilations do nothing but expand in an emphasizing way those fundamental concepts, which constitute the kernel of Prajñāpāramitā. Those fundamental concepts are to be found more succinctly and without excessive repetitions in shorter manuals. The Saptaśatikā goes immediately into the core of the subject-matter and without so many repetitions expounds in one dialogue the theme, the interlocutors being Buddha, Manjusri and Śaradvatiputra"1. Prof. Tucci overlooks the fact that the Saptasatikā touches the fringe of a wide range of topics discussed in the other Prajnaparamitas and cannot be taken as giving the gist of a large Prajnaparamita. To carry to the extreme his line of thought we may say in one word that Sūnyatā is the teaching of the Prajnapāramitās and it contains the gist of the whole literature. The view which Tucci endorses is really the outcome of the critical study of the brahmanic literature. It has been found that in some cases the brahmanical works were originally short and

¹ Saptasatikā Prajnāpāramitā (Memorie della R. Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei), 1923, vol. xvii, fasc. iii.

simple, and in course of time they became voluminous by glosses or philosophical interpretations. The Buddhist literature stands on quite a different footing, and what may be true for the brahmanic literature is not necessarily true for In the latter case we find that the langthe buddhist. uage of the older texts is simpler although they are more verbose and full of repetitions, while the later texts are concise, less verbose, and have fewer repetitions. Again, the voluminousness of the earlier Prajñāpāramitās was due to repetitions and not to glosses and philosophical interpretations. Hence the relation between the smaller and the larger Prajñāpāramitās should be ascertained by an independent enquiry and not by any general theory. It can only be possible when we have the Prajñāpāramitās in handy editions. So, for the present, we must confine ourselves to a comparison of the Asta., 12 (out of the 72) chapters of the Sata. and the recast version of the Pañcavimsati., which is in the course of publication. The relation between the Asta. and the Sata. can be hardly called that of abridgment or expansion as it can be said between the Sata. and the Pañcavimsati. The Asta. does not contain a word about the glorious Buddhakaya and other matters of the Nidana. It starts directly with the question as to the propriety of Subhūti in teaching Mahāyāna, a topic taken up in the second chapter of the Śata.2 In the first chapter, the Asta. discusses when a bodhisattva is to be regarded as mahāsannāhasannaddhah (well-armoured), which is treated in the seventh chapter of the Sata.3 Then the question "What is Mahāyāna?" is answered at the very beginning of the Asta. while it is taken up in the eleventh chapter of the Sata.4 Instances of agreement, sometimes verbal, like those mentioned above can be multiplied to show that the Asta. and the Sata. deal with identical topics, but the arrangement and the emphasis

¹ There is another *Prajňāpāramitā* published first by Prof. Leumann (Schriften der wissenschaftlichen Gessellschaft in Strassburg, 1912) and then by Messrs. H. Izumi and S. Toganov (Kyoto, 1917) called *Prajňāpāramitā-nayaśatapaňcāstika*.

² Asta., p. 4=Sata., ch. II.

^{3 ,,} p. 23 = ,, p. 1405. 4 Aeta., p. 24 = Sata., p. 1530.

laid on a particular topic are quite different. Besides this, the Śata. introduced new topics like bhūmis and expositions of the various śūnyatās, samādhis, etc., which were only enumerated or referred to in the Asta. So it may be said that the Śata. utilised the Asta. and not vice versa. Again, some of the Prajñāpāramitās were evidently abridged from the Śata. The Pañcavimsati. is clearly an abridgment of the Śata. effected by an omission of set enumerations and repetitions by the use of words, such as yāvad, peyyālam or by sometimes mentioning only the positives in full without the negatives. In short, the Pañcavimsati. tried to preserve the original with the utmost accuracy.

Very recently a fragment of a Prajñāpāramitā manuscript (48 leaves) found in Central Asia has been published in the Memoirs of the Archæological Survey of India (No. 32). The editor, Mr. Bidyabinod, believes on the evidence of the Upright Gupta characters used in it, that the fragments belong to a date earlier than 580 A.C. He has also shown that the subject-matter and phraseology of the fragment resemble those of the Sata. and that the portion contains a slightly shorter version of chapters vii-xi of the latter. The fragment contains the sections on the interpretation of the Pāramitās, Śūnyatās, Samādhis and the Bodhipakṣika dharmas and closely follows the corresponding passages of the Pañcavimsati., having slight difference like dharmebhyah for dharmaih, or bāhya for bahirddhāh. The fragment might be regarded as a copy of the original Pañcavimsati. but the portions found in it are so very common that it is difficult to say definitely that it is a copy of the Pañcavimsati. and not of the Astadasa. or any other work. It can, however, be said that it is not a copy of the Sata., for in some places the abridgments have been made on the lines of the Pañcavimsati. In Ceylon also some inscriptions have been discovered recently, containing fragments of the Prajñāpāramita.2 They correspond to the nidana-section of the Sata. and the Pañcavimsati.; the agreements though quite close

¹ See, e.g. Sata., Ch. VIII ff.

² Ceylon Journal of Science, II.

cannot be called literal. So it seems they are taken from a recension of either the Pañcavimsati. or the Aṣṭādaśa.

The comparison of the Śata., Pañcavimśati. and Aṣṭa. confirms our contention that the generalisations regarding abridgment and expansion of the Prajñāpāramitās are not possible and that each book must be judged by its contents. If we consider the Saptaśatikā, which is supposed to be older than the expanded ones, we notice that the interlocutors are Mañjuśrī and Śāriputra, and not Subhūti and Śāriputra, the most common figures of the very early Mahāyāna treatises. There is a class of literature like the Ganḍavyūha, in which Mañjuśrī plays the chief rôle, and so it may be that this Prajñāpāramitā was the production of a class of devotees who held Mañjuśrī in great veneration. The mention of the Nirālamba-bhaginī, i.e., concretisation of an abstract idea, hints rather at its posteriority than priority to the larger Prajñāpāramitās.

NATURE OF THE REPETITIONS

We shall now proceed to form an idea of the nature of the repetitions resorted to in the Prajñāpāramitās and the reasons therefor. In these days, when so much attention is given to the conservation of time and energy, one is apt to get weary of repetitions, and particularly of the mechanical repetitions, which are so often found in the Prajñāpāramitās. Writers on philosophical subjects very naturally ring the changes on the theme that they desire to establish; but so long as they do it skilfully, and without tiring their readers there can be little objection to their enthusiasm. One notices these repetitions in the most modern of philosophical works of the west and the east, as well as in the masterly Buddhist works of Nagarjuna and Asanga. For the fulfilment of its object a new philosophical work is necessarily burdened with the unpleasant and arduous task of first wiping out from the minds of its readers several old ideas, some of them deep-rooted, in order to implant new ideas in their places. Again, to deepen the impression it has to revert to its topic over again in different ways and lead its readers unconsciously to the new

point of view. The early Buddhist literature, specially the Prajñāpāramitās, sadly lacked the knowledge of artful repetitions and consequently it is tiresome. Compared with the great philosophical works produced in India before or about the time of the Prajñāpāramitās, the Prajñāpāramitās are conspicuously lacking in philosophical precision and phraseology, deficiencies which it tried to remedy by repetitions. For instance, when it endeavours to establish the thesis that everything is śūnya (non-existent), a doubt may be left in the mind of the reader whether the Tathagata or the Asamskrtadhātus like the Ākāśa or Nirvāna are excluded or included, so the Prajñāpāramitās have punctiliously mentioned that each of them whether Tathagata, Nirvana or Ākāśa, even the various Śūnyatās, are śūnya in the sense that Caksu or Caksuvijñāna is śūnya. A modern reader can certainly complain of this defect in view of the immense literature that he has to wade through within a short space of time but the writers of the Prajñāpāramitās had at their disposal ample time and patience to read and write works like these.

The Prajñāpāramitās also like all other philosophical works had to eradicate many of the old deep-rooted ideas. They directed their attention mainly to their predecessors, the Hīnayānists. The Hīnayānists, as is well known, had already enjoyed a long lease of life and developed a fair amount of literature on their doctrines, the classification of dharmas, psychological analyses, etc. The Prajñāpāramitās took the most popular of these doctrines and disciplines, and tried to show that from the new point of view, which the Prajñāpāramitās set out to inculcate, they were all to be treated as mere names having no existence whatsoever. To give an illustration: They preach that a bodhisattva while practising the prajñāpāramitā does not consider himself attached or unattached to any (mentioning each and every one) of the 5 skandhas, 6 indrivas, 6 ayatanas, 6 vijnānas, 4 mahābhūtas, 12 links of the pratītyasamutpāda, 6 pāramitās, 18 śūnyatās, 37 bodhipaksikadharmas, apramāņas, samādhis, samāpattis, āvenikadharmas, balas, vaišāradyas, phalas, tathatā, ātman, sukha, nirvāna, and so forth.

They repeated the same list over again to maintain that each of them was not bodhisattva or that each of them was not different from bodhisattva. In short, the Prajñāpāramitās in order to establish Śūnyatā have shown that there is nothing in the world of our knowledge which has any real existence. Everything that we are conscious of has only dreamy existence, and that all the 84,000 dharmaskandhas supposed to have been preached by Buddha are only expedients (upāyakauśalya) adopted by him for the benefit of ignorant and deluded beings, and consequently a bodhisattva while practising the prajñāpāramitā should treat them as mere apparitions devoid of reality.

FUNCTION OF PRAJNAPARAMITA

The function of the prajñāpāramitā is to make a bodhisattva bear in mind that the pāramitās, samādhis, samāpattis, phalas or bodhipaksikadharmas, which he has been practising, are only aids and expedients invented by Buddhas to help beings to the realisation of the ideal. Unlike the other pāramitās, the prajñāpāramitā is not to be practised. It is really a state of mind to be acquired by the help of the six paramitas and the various Buddhistic practices. A bodhisattva may perfect himself in the danaparamita, but as there is every possibility of his forming a conception of the danaparamita as having a sort of existence (svabhava), it may become for him an object of grasping (grāhya). He may also have a conception of the giver and the receiver and the thing given. It is to counteract all these conceptions, which are really misconceptions, that the prajfiaparamita steps in and makes the bodhisattva try to develop a state of mind in which the danaparamita would appear to him as devoid of signs (alaksana), without any independent existence of its own, and at the same time eliminate from his mind any conception regarding the giver, the receiver or the thing given. In short, the function of the prajñāpāramitā is to convince a bodhisattva that the danaparamita or whatever it may be is really formless, baseless and is indistinguishable from śūnyatā. It serves as a guard to the bodhisattva, who has risen much above the average and

acquired various meritorious qualities, but still may cling to some idea or concept which in itself may be highly pure and meritorious, but being an attachment must be got rid of. It is for this reason that the prajñāpāramitā has been extolled over all other pāramitās or virtues, and has been designated as the chief (nāyikā, pūrvaṅgamā) of all pāramitās.¹ The Aṣṭasāhasrikā² compares the prajñāpāramitā to the earth, on which all the other pāramitās rest, grow and produce the fruit of sarvajñatā (omniscience), and hence it is the producer of the Sarvajñas, the Tathāgatas.

¹ Asta., pp. 80, 81. 2 Ibid.



TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS

A .= Atthakathā

Anguttara Anguttara Nikāya (P.T.S.)

Aṣṭa.=Aṣṭasāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā (A.S.B.)

As. Res. = Asiatic Researches

Attha. = Atthasālinī

Ava. Ś.=Avadāna Śataka (Bibliotheca Buddhica)

B. Bh.=Bodhisattva Bhūmi (edited by J. Rahder as an Appendix to the Daśabhūmikasūtra)

B.E.F.E.O. = Bulletin de l'École Française d'Extrême-Orient

Bodhic.=Bodhicaryāvatāra (A.S.B.)

B. Phil.=Buddhist Philosophy by A. B. Keith

B.T.S.=Buddhist Text Society, Calcutta

Buddhismus etc.=Der Buddhismus, seine Dogmen, Geschichte und Litteratur by B. Wassilief

Cal. Rev.=Calcutta Review

Catena etc. = A Catena of Buddhist Scriptures by S. Beal

Comp. of Phil.=Compendium of Philosophy (translation of the Abhidhammatthasangaha—P.T.S.)

Catalogue=A Catalogue of the Chinese translations of the Buddhist Tripiṭaka by B. Nanjio

Con. of N.=Conception of Nirvāṇa by Th. Stcherbatsky Corpus=Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum by Hultzsch (1925)

Cv.=Cullavagga of the Vinaya Pitaka

Cy.=Commentary

Daśa.=Daśabhūmikasūtra ed. by J. Rahder

Dh. P.=Dhammapada

Dh. S.=Dhammasangani (P.T.S.)

Divyā. = Divyāvadāna (Cowell's ed.)

Der individualistische etc.=Der individualistische Idealismus der Yogācāra-schule by J. Masuda

Dīgha=Dīgha Nikāya (P.T.S.)

Early History etc.=Early History of the Spread of Buddhism and Buddhist Schools by N. Dutt

E.B.=Eastern Buddhist (Japan)

Ep. Ind.=Epigraphia Indica

E.R.E.=Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics

Geschichte, etc.=Geschichte der indischen Litteratur (vol.

II) by M. Winternitz

Handbook etc.=Eitel's Handbook of Chinese Budohism

I.H.Q.=Indian Historical Quarterly (Calcutta)

Intro.=Burnouf's Introduction à l'histoire du Bouddhisme indien

Ind. Ant. (or I. A.)=Indian Antiquary

Ind. Phil. = Indian Philosophy

Itiv.=Itivuttaka (P.T.S.)

J.A.=Journal Asiatique

J.A.S.B.=Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal

J.P.T.S .= Journal of the Pali Text Society

J.R.A.S.=Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society

Jāt.=Jātaka (Fausböll's edition)

Kārikā=Abhisamayālankārakārikā (Bibl. Buddhica)

Kāś. P. = Kāśyapa Parivarta ed. by Holstein

Kośa=Abhidharmakośa (Fr. Transl. by L. de la Vallée Poussin)

Kośavyākhyā=Abhidharmakośavyākhyā, pt. i (Bibl. Buddhica)

Kvu.=Kathāvatthu (P.T.S.)

Lańkā. = Lańkāvatāra Sūtra ed. by B. Nanjio

Lal. Vis.=Lalita Vistara (Lefmann's edition)

List=Lüder's List of Brahmi Inscriptions (Ep. Ind., vol. x)

Lotus etc.=La Lotus de la Bonne Loi, Burnouf's Fr. Transl. of the Saddharma Pundarika, 1925

M. Ava.=Madhyamakāvatāra (Fr. Transl. in Le Muséon)

Majjhima=Majjhima Nikāya (P.T.S.)

Manual etc.=Manual of Indian Buddhism by H. Kern

Manuscript Remains etc.=Manuscript Remains of Buddhist Literature found in Eastern Turkestan by A. F. Rudolf Hoernle

Mil.=Milindapañha (Trenckner's edition).

Masuda. See Origin etc.

Mtu. = Mahāvastu (Senart's ed.)

Mv.=Mahāvagga of the Vinaya Piṭaka

M. Vr.=Madhyamaka Vrtti (Bibl. Buddhica)

Mvyut.=Mahāvyutpatti (Bibl. Buddhica)

Nep. B. Lit.=Nepalese Buddhist Literature by R. L. Mitra

Netti. = Nettippakarana (P.T.S.)

Origh etc.=Masuda's Origin and Doctrines of Early Indian Buddhist Schools (Asia Major, II)

Pañca. or Pañcaviṃśati=Pañcaviṃśatisāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā (A.S.B. or Cambridge ms.)

Patis. M.=Patisambhidāmagga (P.T.S.)

Pug. P. or P.P.=Puggala Paññatti (P.T.S.)

Pundarīka. See Sad. P.

Sad. P.=Saddharma Pundarika (Bibl. Buddhica)

Sad. San. = Saddhamma Sangaha (J.P.T.S., 1890)

Samyutta=Samyutta Nikāya (P.T.S.)

Śata. = Śatasāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā (A.S.B.)

Siddhi.=Vijnaptimatratasiddhi ed. by Sylvain Lévi

Šiksā. = Šiksāsamuccaya (Bibl. Buddhica)

Studies etc.=Studies in Indian History and Culture by N. N. Law

Sum. Vil.=Sumangala Vilāsinī (Supplement to I.H.Q.) ed. by N. Dutt

Sūtrā.=Sūtrālankāra ed. by Sylvain Lévi

Systems etc.=Systems of Buddhistic Thought by Yamakami Sogen (Calcutta University)

Tāra.=Tāranātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus in Indien by A. Schiefner, 1869

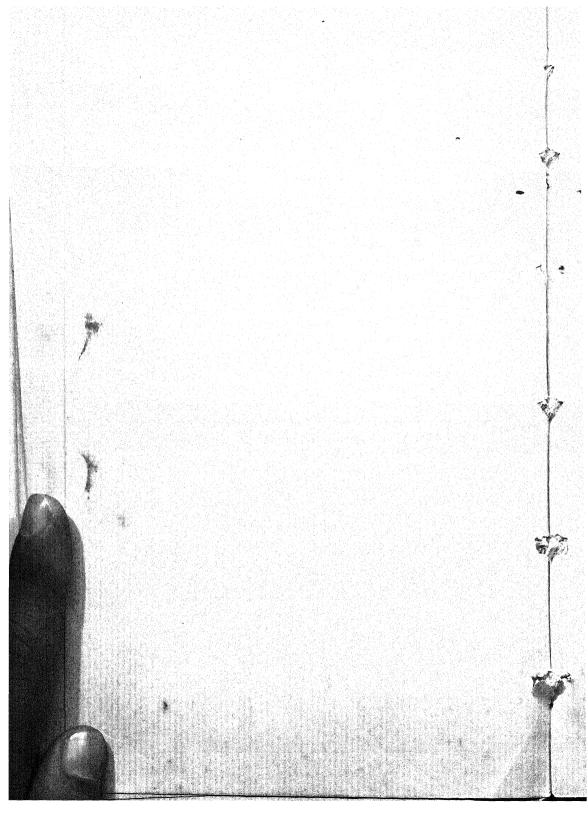
Trimsikā. See Siddhi

Ud.=Udāna (P.T.S.)

Vibh.=Vibhanga (P.T.S.)

Vis. M. = Visuddhimagga (P.T.S.)

Z.D.M.G. = Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft



LIST OF PALI AND SANSKRIT WORDS*

Aggasāvaka, the foremost disciple, 75

Agrabodhi, the highest knowledge, 93, 113

Anga, division of the Buddhist scriptures

Advaya, non-duality

Advaidhīkāra, inseparability, indivisibility

Adhicitta, higher mental practices

Adhipañña, higher practices for insight into the Truth

Adhimukti, aspiration, 85, 243

Adhisīla, higher practices relating to control of body

Adhisthana (adhitthana), resolution, 12, 280

Anātman (anattan), the doctrine that every being is constituted of vanishing elements and hence is without any permanent substance as soul

Anābhoga, not requiring power or exertion, i.e., spontaneous, self-created (Tib. lhun-grub), 273, 280

Anitya (anicca), the doctrine that things of the world are transitory, impermanent

Animitta, signless and baseless, 94, 131f, 172, 191, 273

Animitta-vimokṣa-mukha, mental dissociation from the things of the world by meditating that they are baseless and signless, 274

Anupādāya, without attachment

Anusaya, dormant passions, desires, 30, 177, 263

Anusmṛti, constant remembrance, 304

Apratisthita (apatitthita), footingless

Apranihita (appanihita) -vimokṣa-mukha, mental dissociation from the things of the world through meditation devoid of all desires, 94, 274, 132

Apramāṇa, immeasurable, it usually refers to the four brahmavihāras (q.v.), or to powers and attainments of Buddhas

Abhijñā (abhiññā), the six supernormal powers attained by arhats, 168, 266

^{*} Words appearing in the Index or only once in the text with their English rendering have been omitted here.

Abhinirhāra, resolution to achieve something, 284

Abhinivesa, adherence to a dogma, 250; occupied with

Abhisamaya, comprehension, full knowledge

Ariyapuggala, persons on the way to salvation

Avyākrta (avyākata), indeterminable, unmanifest

Aśūnya, real, non-relative

Aśaiksa (asekha), arhats who have nothing more to learn

Astāngikamārga (atthangikamagga), the eightfold path, i.e., the eight kinds of practices prescribed for the attainment of emancipation

Asamsāra, transcendental

Asamskrta, unconstituted

Ādikarmika, beginner

Apatti, breaches of the monastic laws, hence, any offence

 $\overline{A}yatana$, spheres; sources or planes of the origin of senses (Tib. skye-mched)

Āryasatya, the fourfold truth, or the fourfold method of analysis followed by the Buddhists for examining worldly things

Alambana (arammana), basis, support

Ālaya-vijñāna, the store-consciousness, the substratum of samsāra

Avenika-dharma, it refers to the eighteen qualities which a bodhisattva acquires without any flaw (cf. Tib. chosma-hdres-pa)

Āsaya, mental disposition, intention

Āśraya, substratum, support

 $\bar{A}srava$ ($\bar{A}sava$), (four) impurities

Indriya, organs of sense, faculty, power

Upāya, expedient, mean s

Upanissaya, previous merits, 173, 248

 ${\it Up\bar{a}d\bar{a}na}, \ {\it substratum} \ {\it of future births} \ {\it due to attachment to four wrong ideas}$

Rddhi (iddhi), supernatural powers

Karma, action

Kalpanā, imagination, thought-construction, net of fancies

Kušalamūla, merits acquired through good actions

Kleśa (kilesa), impurities, passions, afflictions, defiling elements $Ksin\bar{a}srava$, arhats who are free from impurities

Gotra, a category of beings having a certain degree of religious aspiration, 55, 84f

Carya, practice, conduct

Citta = manas = manovijnāna, mind, thought

Caitta, mental functions

Chanda, intention; strong

Jhāna (dhyāna), trances

 $Tathat\bar{a}$, thatness, i.e., the Mahāyānic principle that things in reality remain the same and is without origin and destruction

Dulkha (dukkha), the doctrine that existence in any of the various worlds, or attachment to the things of the world is associated with pain, misery and so forth

Dṛṣṭi (diṭṭhi), view: samyak, right, and mithyā, wrong

Dvesa (dosa), hatred

Dharma (dhamma), truth, doctrine, existent things and conditions, nature of things, qualities acquired by an adept, discourses

 $Dharmat\bar{a} = Tathat\bar{a} \text{ (q.v.)}$

Dhātu, elements, worlds, viz., kāma, rūpa, and arūpa, sometimes also apariyāpanna or lokottara; also relics

Dhāraṇī, the twelve qualities which firmly uphold a bodhisattva (Tib. gzuńs; Chi. 公 士 = chueh-ch' ih), 282

Nāman, sign, name, 234n.

Nāmarūpa, usually translated as "name and form"; nāma denotes four of the five khandhas, viz., vedanā, saññā, saṅkhārā and viññāṇa, while rūpa denotes only the material aggregates of a body (rūpakkhandha)

Nimitta, sign, basis, 131, 232, 234n

Nirnimitta, signless, baseless

Nirodha, cessation; the third truth that duhkha can be ended

Nisprapañca, inexpressible

Nairātmya, non-existence of soul (ātman), want of substance in both Pudgala (individual) and Dharma (things of the world)

Pakatisāvaka, a common disciple

Paramārtha, the highest truth

Paryavasthānas, pervading passions, 27n, 30

Pāramitā, the six or ten virtues which a bodhisattva must completely acquire before he can become a Buddha *

Pudgala (Puggala), soul, individual

Prajñapti, description, communication

 $Praj\tilde{n}\tilde{a}$, knowledge; intellectual exercises for obtaining insight into the truth

Pratigha (Patigha), repugnance

Pratityasamutpāda, the theory that all things originate out of some causes and conditions. It is usually translated as "Law of Causation", "Causal Law", and recently as "Theory of relative existence"

Pratibhana, readiness in speech, self-confidence in speech

Pratisamkhyā, knowledge

Pratisamvid (patisambhidā), understanding (Tib. so-so-yan-dagpar-rig-pa), analysis; (for detailed treatment see Points of the Controversy, pp. 377-382). It is of four kinds: artha, dharma, nirukti and pratibhāna, 277, 283

Prapañca, describing a thing which is indescribable, hence a mere thought-construction; looking upon unity as manifold, 125, 187, 192, 197f., 213f

Phala, Hinayanic fruits or stages of sanctification

Bala, powers, qualities

Buddhaksetra, it refers to the belief that every Buddha presides over a world of beings, 67n, 89, 121

Bodhicitta, the resolution made by an adept to become a Buddha; it is of two kinds, (i) Bodhipranidhi and (ii) Bodhiprasthāna, 247

Bodhipakṣika (bodhipakkhika or bodhipakkhiya) dharma, the 37 qualities which an adept is to attain for full enlightenment, 4, 33, 91, 107, 246, 270

Brahmavihāra, meditation induced by altruistic concepts, 267, 308

Bhāva, existence

Bhāvanā, dwelling on something constantly i.e., repeated darśana

Bhūtakoṭi, limit or end of existence (Tib. yod-pa-ñid-kyi-mthah, also yań-dag-pa-ñid-kyi-mthah—dharmadhātu)

Bhūmi, stages of sanctification

Mārga, (i) the eightfold path, see aṣṭāngikamārga; (ii) the four of the eight Hīnayānic stages of sanctification Moha, delusion

Yāna, vehicle, or path which leads an adept to liberation

Rāga, passion, attachment

 $R\bar{u}pa$, material aggregates of a body; form

Lakṣaṇa, percept, properties, characteristics
Lokadhātu, a sphere, a unit of the universe

 $V\bar{a}san\bar{a}$, unconscious impression left by past actions, 197n., 234

Vasitā, control acquired by a Bodhisattva over his mind, requisite length of life, action, birth, aspiration, doctrines, resolution, miraculous powers, and knowledge, 117, 281

Vikalpa, thought-construction

Vimokṣa, liberation, release; it usually refers to the three meditations induced by śūnyatā, animitta and apraṇihita, (q.v.) 160, 274

Vimukti, emancipation, liberation, deliverance

Vaisāradya (vesārajja), four acquisitions which make Buddhas fearless, 75, 85, 108, 247, 281

Vicikitsā (vicikicchā), perplexity, doubt about the efficacy of following the Buddhist dharma

Vihāra (bhūmi), stages of sanctification

Vipassanā, deep vision, insight (Tib. lhag-theň)

Vyāpāda, hatred, ill-will

Śamatha, quietude, an absolute inexcitability of mind (Tib. shi-gnas)

Sarana, taking refuge in the three ratnas, Buddha, Dharma and Sangha

Śāśvatavāda, eternalism, 87, 170

Siksāpada, set of precepts, 311

Śīlavrataparāmarśa, taint due to belief in the efficacy of rites and ceremonial observances

Śūnya, devoid of attributes, non-existent

 $\dot{S}\bar{u}nyat\bar{a}$, the Absolute which is devoid of all attributes $\dot{S}raddh\bar{a}$, reverential faith

Śrāvaka (sāvaka), usually it means disciples; the Mahāyānists, however, refer by this term to the Hīnayānists because the latter are initiated into the Truth by hearing discourses from Buddhas and their disciples

Satkāyadṛṣṭi (sakkāyadiṭṭhi), belief in the existence of one's own individuality

Samatā, the sameness of things of the world in reality, i.e., things are without origination and destruction, not to speak of their distinctions

Samādhi, concentration

Samāpatti, the eight trances, i.e., including the four jhānas

Samudaya, origin, it usually refers to the origin of misery or sufferings of the world, 49, 82, 227

Samudācāra, conduct, set of precepts, 310

Samgrahavastu, elements of popularity

Samvara, discipline

Samvṛti, conventional truth, as distinguished from Paramārtha (q.v.)

Samyoja na, (ten) fetters, tieing a being to the world

Samsāra, world, existence, 46, 82, 94

Skandha (khandha), (i) the five constituents of a being, $r\bar{u}pa$ (material aggregates), $vedan\bar{u}$ (feeling), $samj\bar{n}\bar{u}$ (perception) $samsk\bar{u}ra$ (impressions) and $vij\bar{n}\bar{u}na$ (consciousness), 117, 136, 142, 163, 201–202

(ii) five groups of acquirements, viz., šīla, samādhi, prajñā, vimukti and vimuktijñānadaršana, 104, 108

Samskrta, constituted

Smṛtyupasthāna (satipatthāna), intent contemplation and mindfulness, 108, 230, 236

Svabhāva, existence, reality

Sāmānya, general

INDEX

Abbhutadhamma. one the Angas, 8 Abhāva (absence, or non-existence), 172, 177, 181f, 188f, 197f, 214f, 223: Nirvana equated to, 162, 172, 175f Abhidhamma literature, growth of, 5-6, 34 Abhidhammikas, 17, 61 Abhidharmakosa, 146, 155; on forms of truth, 237; on kaya conception, 105-7; on Nirvana, 176-184, 198; on stages of spiritual culture, 239 Abhimukhī (a bhūmi), 273-5, 288 Abhisamaya-gotra, 85 Abhiseka (a bhūmi), 128, 241, 283, 289 Abhyavakāšika monks, 319 Vedāntic Absolute. 204. Brahman. Acariyaparamparā, traditions of, Ācārya (ācariya), 291, 311, 313 Acalā (a bhūmi), 239, 280-2, 289 Action. See Karma. Ādarśajñāna, 122 Adhicitta, 260, 265-8, 287 Adhimukticaryābhūmi, 243-6, 260, Adhiprajñā, 260, 269f Adhišīla, 259, 260-3, 287 186. Advaya advaidhīkāra, 38, 201 Agama, divisions in, 60; Samyukta, 179, 181 Agotra, 84 Āhāra, 136, 206, 209 Ahetuvādī, 301 Akāša (infinite space), 47, 133, 139, 164f, 177, 183, 197, 201, 215 Ākāsagarbha (Bodhisattva), 291,

305

Ākāsagarbhasūtra, 291, 301 Ākāsānancāyatana, 137n. Aksavamatisütra, sraddhā defined Ālayavijnāna, 86, 127, 195, 231f Alokasamvrti, 218. See Samvrti. Amatadhātu, 165 Amatapadam (immortality), 151f. Anābhoga-nirnimitta-vihāra bhūmi), 260, 280-2, 289 Anāgāmi (a stage of spiritual progress), 176, 238f, 267f, 287 Anāgatabhaya, 59 Anaksara (unutterable), 222, 231 Ananda, 16, 18, 103, 159 Ānantarya (ānantarika), 79, 245 Anāthapindika, 296 Andhakas, 23, 285 Angas, 7f. 27, 312; Mahāyānic expositors on, 9-11. See Navanga and Dvādaśānga. Anivartanacarya, one of the four classes of practices, 37, 288 Anivatagotra, 55, 84f Antarāparinibbāyi, a stage of spiritual progress, 268 Anulomacaryā, one of the four classes of practices, 37 Anupādisesanibbāna, 85, 153, 178 Anuruddha, 162 Anutpāda-Anirodha, 122, 197, 198, Anutpādajñāna, 40, 106 Anutpattikadharmakṣānti, 40, 94, 153, 273, 280 Aparasailas, 22 Apatitthita-viññāņa. See Viññāņa Apariyāpanna-dhātu, 137, See Lokottara-dhātu. Apatti, 88, 291, 320-2; definition of. 306 Apratisamkhya-nirodha, 177f

Jñeva.

Avalokita (bodhisattva), 305

Avatamsaka-sūtra, 63-4

definition of, 134 Avivartyabhūmi, 282, 289

Āvaraņa, 133f, 183, 196, 201, 310; absence of, 266. See Kleśa and

Avastuka-dharmas, 181. See Vastu.

Avidyā (avijjā), 29, 94, 128, 134,

135, 142, 163, 208f, 216, 274:

348 Apratisthita-nirvāna, 199, 200n. Āranyaka monks, 314 Arcismatī (a bhūmi) 259, 270, 288 Arhat, 275-6; Buddhas compared with, 35, 198, 285; Mahāyānie notion about, 140; misconceptions of, 228-9 Arhatta, 238f, 288 Arūpabrahmaloka, 137n. Arūpadhātu (a sphere of beings), 19, 137, 168, 254 Arvadeva, 42, 43 Aryahood, 242 Āryasatya, 27. 205f, 212, 215; Asanga on, 230; Hīnayānic treatment of, 49-50; Mahāyānic treatment of, 49-50, 211, 225-7: 225; Mañjusripariprechā on. Prajñāpāramitās 227-8; on, Yogācāra treatment of, 230-1 Asamskrta (unconstituted). 137, 163, 176f, 180, 183, 189 Asanga, 45, 56, 323; on antiquity of Mahāyāna, 58-9; on Ārvasatya, 230; on forms of truth, 232-3 Asankhāraparinibbāyi, a stage of spiritual progress, 268 Asaya, 55, 76-8, 260-1, 265, 271, 289, 294, 308; gotrabheda the main reason for difference in, 84-7

Asecanaka-kāya, 119, 123, 326

19-21; dhamma of, 19, 32

Astāngikamārga, 183, 202

324f

Astivāda, 27

Atheists, 187

Asūnyavādin, 225

conception in, 36

Astamaka (bhūmi), 87, 241, 286

Astasāhasrikā prajňāpāramitā,

Atonement, rules of, 319-320

Avaivartika (bodhisattva), 92

Avadāna, 7f, 10, 33f, 36, 307; appearance of, 6-11; Bodhisattva

Aśoka, Buddhism propagated by.

Avyākatas, 48, 49, 192 Baddhamānā (a bhūmi), 241, 287 Balapāramitā, 283 Beings, classes of, 94. See Gatis. Bergson, 143 Bhaisajyarāja, 257 Bhānaka. 141. See Dharmabhānaka. Bhattudesaka, 314 Bhāvanāmārga, 253-5, 275 Bhavatanhā, 209 Bhāvaviveka, 194 Bhiksu-Vinaya, 291, 318 Bhūmis, 32f, 81, 238; correspondence of maggas and phalas with, 259-260, 269, 276-7, 284, 286-8; date of Prajñāpāramītās ascertained by the conception of, 327-8: Avatamsaka-sūtra (Chinese) on. 241n.: Madhvamakāvatāra on, 240f; Mahāvastu on, 37, 24ln., 286-9 Bhūtakoti, 79, 203, 279 Bimbisāra, 103 Bodhicitta, 67, 79, 242, 299, 310; development of, 301-5 Bodhipariņāmanā, 302, 305 Bodhiprapidhicitta, 247 Bodhiprasthānacitta, 247 Bodhisattva, conception of, 31, 34; qualities of, 81; rules for lay, 295-301; śrāvakas to become, 66-7; samvaras of, 246 Bodhisattva-bhūmi, 241,288; treatment of bhūmis in, 240f, 286 Bodhisattvacarya, 305-311

Bodhisattvajātika (monks), 40 Bodhisattvacaryānirdeša (a sūtra), 290

Bodhisattva monks, 40

Bodhisattva Prātimokṣa Sūtra, 290f, 372

Bodhisattvayāna of the Hīnayānists, 37-8

Brahmajāla-sūtra, 293-5

Brahmaloka, 87, 98, 152, 168

Brahman. See Vedantic Brahman.

Brahmavādins, 87

Buddha, appearance of, 95; Arhats compared with, 35, 98, 135, 198, 285; conception of, 31; disciples of, 62-3, 65-6; forms of teaching of, 65f, 216; Hīnayāna conception of, 284; in preaching hesitation of, 68-9; jarāyuja or upapāduka, 110-1; method of preaching of, 69-70; Mahāsānghika conception of, 110-1; Mahāyānists influenced by the realistic conception of, 117-8; Nikāya passages on the non-realistic conception of, 98-101; parinibbana of, 159, 161; realistic conception of, 97-8; theory of the origin of being propounded by, 208-211: truth preached by, 52-4

Buddhabhūmi, 241, 256, 289

Buddhādhyeşaṇā, 302, 305

Buddhaghosa, 14; causal law treated by, 208-211; Nibbāna explained by, 176-6, 182-4. See Visuddhimagga.

Buddhahood, goal of, 25-6

Buddhajñāna, 71, 72, 81

Buddhakāya, 326

Buddhayāna, 53, 59, 74. See Mahāyāna.

Buddhi, 218, 219

Buddhism, Asoka's part in the propagation of, 23-5; doctrines of early and mixed Hinayana, 4, 33-4; early or pure Hinayana, 1-4; history of, 32-4; influence

of Sāmkhya on, 163-4; Japanese tradition about the chronology of the development of, 63; mixed Hīnayāna, 4-34; place of laity (q.v.) in, 3; popular form of, 6f, 33; propagation of, 3, 13-16, 19-21 23-25; sources of information of, 1-2, 5n., 39, 43-5; relation of Yoga with, 152; result of research. es relating to early, 3-4; three periods in the history of, 1; two forms of, 151

Caityakas, 22

Candrakīrti's comments on Kāya, 125-6; on Nāgārjuna's definition of Nirvāṇa, 187; on Nirvāṇa, 192-4

Caryā (duties) of a Bodhisattva, 37 Caturdharmakasūtra, 292

Causal Law, 223, 229; three parts in, 229n. See Pratītyasamutpāda.

Causes, different kinds of, 110 Cintāmayī Prajñā, 246

Cittamātra, 195

Cittāśava. See Aśava.

Cittavistarā (a bhūmi), 241, 287

Cittaviprayukta, 171, 188

Central Asia, Prajñāpāramitā found in, 331

Confession. See Pāpadeśanā.

Dānapāramitā, 11, 259 Daršanabhūmi, 241, 287

Darśanamārga, 82, 241, 250, 253-5

Daśabhūmi. See Bhūmi.

Daśabhūmikasūtra, 44; on Bhūmi, 240f, 286

Dasasāhasrikā-prajnāpāramitā, 324f

Death or eternal Nirvāņa, 161-4. See Samjñāvedayitanirodha.

Devadatta, 110

Devakulankula, a stage of spiritual progress, 264

Dhamma, Brahman equated to, 99

Dhammakathikas, 314

Dhammānusārī, a stage of spiritual progress, 250, 251, 255, 276, 286 Dhanakataka, 22, 23, 42 Dharmabhānaka, 109, 272, 282 Dharmacakra, 258 Dharmadhātu, 38, 55, 88; sameness Dharmakāya, 26, 35, 38, 53, 96f, 101f, 106, 123-8, 183n., 189f, 203, 326; Bodhisattva's goal of, 128; Brahmakāya equated to, collection of dharmas same as, 108; existence of, 124; Sarvāstivādins on, 106-7; Satyasiddhis on, 103-9; two kinds of, 127; Yogācāra conception of, 108 Dharmakāyajñāna, 105 Dharmālokas, 270 Dharmameghā (a bhūmi), 239, 283-4, 289 Dharmanairātmya, 86, 128f, 130f Dharmasamatā, 34, 138. See Samatā. Dharmaśūnyatā, 27, 34f, 38, 108, 133, 211, 229, 238 Dharmatā, 48; pratītyasamutpāda equated to, 60 Dharmatā-niṣyanda-buddha, 96. 120, 326 Dhātus, four, 136-7 Dhîtika, 17f Dhuras (courses), two, 250 Dhutanga, 262 Dhutavadins, rules observed by, 319 Dhyānapāramitā, 272 Dhyana school, ordination for the monks of, 293 Dhyāyitamusti-sūtra on the origin of duhkha, 225-6 Divyāvadāna on kāya conception, 103-4 Ditthippatta, a stage of spiritual progress, 250, 251, 286 Disciplinary rules of the Mahāyānists, 309-311, 312-322 Dona brāhmaņa, 100

Drstiprāpta. See Ditthippatta.

Dress of monks, rules for, 315
Duḥkha-kāṇḍa, 229n.
Duḥkhatā, three kinds of, 129;
liberation from, 129-130
Dūraṅgamā (a bhūmi), 277, 280
Durārohā (a bhūmi), 241, 286
Durjayā (a bhūmi), 241, 287
Dvādašāṅga, 27n., 33, 250. See
Navaṅga.
Dvikāya, 119

Ekabījī. See Ekavīcika. Ekavīcika, 240, 255, 263-5, 287 Ekayāna (=Mahāyāna), 54, 56, 57 Ekayānatā, 52-54, 57

Flesh-eating, 317 Food of monks, rules regarding, 315-8

Gandavyūha, 9, 44, 64 Garbhāvakrānti, 31n., 82n. Gatha, one of the Angas, 8 Gatis (existences), 111, 116, 171 Geyya, one of the Angas, 8 Gifts, rules for, 297-8, 299 Gopaka-Moggallāna, 99 Gotrabheda, 55, 84-7 Gotrabhū, 86f, 249-250, 260, 286 Gotrabhūmi, 241 Gotrabhurastamaka, 87 Gotravihāra, 244-7, 249, 260, 286 Grdhrakūta, 117 Grhi-Bodhisattvas, rules for, 295-301 Grhī, 117f; retirement of, 310-1. See Laity.

Harivarman, 64, 108 Hastikakṣyasūtra, 225 Hinādhimukta (lower aims), 70, 76f, 80

Hīnayāna, an upāyakauśalya, 65f; Arhathood according to, 203; forms of truth in, 235-7; later phases of, 35, 36f; Mahāyāna later than, 52, 57f; Mahāyānic scriptures evaluate the doctrines of, 91-5; Mahāyānic kāya conception in the works of, 104; Nāgārjuna summarises the doctrine of, 186, 212; Nirvāṇa according to, 129-169; Prajñāpāramitās mention the doctrines of, 91; reasons for the superiority of Mahāyāna over, 75-80; steppingstone to Mahāyāna, 54, 91-5. See Mahāyāna.

Hinayāna and Mahāyāna, comparison of the doctrines of, 91f; fundamental points of difference between, 95, 238; points of agreement between, 54-7; Pundarīka reconciles, 65-8; schools half-way between, 64-5

Hīnayāna Vinaya, Mahāyānic Vinaya influenced by, 290f

Hinayānic interpretation of the truths and the Causal Law, criticised by Nāgārjuna, 223-5

Hīnayānism, Lankāvatāra and Siddhi on, 230-1; Mahāyānists criticise, 87-90

Hīnayānists, become bodhisattvas 66-7; Nāgārjuna criticises, 212-3; not selfish, 78

Householders, discourses suitable for, 296. See Grhī.

Hsien Shou school, 63

Idappaccayatā, 208, 209. See Pratītyasamutpāda.

Immortality. See Amatapadam. Indeterminable problems, See Avyākatas.

Itivuttaka, 169, 175; one of the Angas, 8

I-tsing on Vinaya, 290

Janmanidesa (a bhūmi), 241, 288
Japanese scholars on the authenticity of Mahāyāna, 58f, 61-5
Japanese tradition on the chronology of Buddhist teaching, 63
Jarāyuja (Buddha), 110-1

Jātakas, 4, 6f, 33-36; appearance of, 6-11; Mahāyānic traces in, 284-5

Jhānas, 159, 167

Jñāna, 12, 191; four kinds of, 122 Jñānakāva. 127

Jñānapāramitā, 284

Jñeyāvaraṇa, 35, 55, 128f, 132; whether removed by the Hīnayānists, 134

Kaccāyana, 17, 19, 32 Kajangala, 23

Kāla (time), 80, 239

Kalpas, 84n.

Kalyāṇamitra (spiritual guide), 83, 89, 243, 257, 312-3

Kāmadhātu, 19, 136, 254

Kammatthāna, 149n.

Kammavācam, 312

Kaņāda, 187

Kapila, 187. See Sāmkhya.

Karma, 144, 202; Buddhas not free from the effects of, 109-110

Karmābhisamskāra, 226

Karmakānda, 229n.

Karuṇā, 57, 81, 94, 266, 316; practice of, 307-9

Kaṣāyas, five, 70

Kāśyapa-parivarta, 133

Kathāvatthu, 146, 170-1; on Nibbāna, 162, 165, 170, 182-4, 198

Kaundilya brāhmaņa, 113

Kāya conception, 26, 31, 35; Abhidharmakoša on, 105-7; Buddhaghosa on, 101-2; Divyāvadāna on, 103-4; Lalitavistara on, 104-5; Masson Oursel on, 100; Prajnāpāramitās on, 96, 325-6; Vibhāsā on, 107-8

Kāya conception, at the beginning of Mahāyāna, 111-3; of the Sarvāstivādins, 102-7; of the Theravādins remained unchanged, 101-2

Kāyakarma, rules regarding, 318-9

Kāyasakkhī, a stage of spiritual progress, 251 Keith on Nirvāna, 157-8 Kriyāsangrahapanjikā on ordination, 311-2 Kleśakānda, 229n. Kleśāvarana, 35, 128, 132f Kleśavimukti, 55 Kṛṣṇa (Kāla), 24 Krpana, meaning of, 103 Krtāvibhūmi, 241, 288 Krtyānusthānajñāna, 114, 122 Ksanikatva, 31, 217 Ksāntipāramitā, 11, 12, 267 Ksava. See Nirvāna. Ksayajñāna, 40, 106 Ksitigarbha (Bodhisattva), 305 Kulankula (Kolamkola), a stage of spiritual progress, 240, 263-5, 287 Kuśalakarmapatha, 81, 261, 262, 299 Kuśalamūla, 88, 247f Laity, place of, 295-6; special rules for royal, 300-1. See Grhī. Lalitavistara on kāya conception, Lankāvatāra, 44; on Hīnayāna, 230-1; on Nirvana, 195-8; on Srotāpannas, 265 Laukikadhātu, 135f Laukikajñāna, 135, 139 La Vallée Poussin on Nirvāna, 151-4, 159-160, 184 Ledi Sadaw on forms of truth, 236 Litsavi-kumāra, 113 Lokadharmas, 298 Lokānuvartana, 104, 113 Lokottara, 30f, 111, 115, 135f, 199 Lokottaradhātu, 135f, 137, 159 Lokottarajñāna, 135 Lokottara state, 172 Lokottaratama, 199 Lokottaratamajñāna, 139 Lokottaravādins, 25, 32, 64 Madhyamakāvatāra on Bhūmi. 240f

Madhyamā pratipad, 46, 215 Madhyas, 80, 82, 85 Mādhyamikas. See Nāgārjuna. Mādhyamikavrtti on Nirvāņa, 198 Madhyāntika, 18, 32 Maggas, 137, 175-6, 198, 249, 286 Maggas and Phalas, correspondence of Bhūmis with, 259-260, 269. 276-7, 286-8 Mahāparinibbāna Sutta, 160, 161 Mahāprajñāpāramitāśāstra, 119, 325, 326 Mahāsānghikas, 25f; career of, 21-3; Hīnayānic doctrines of, 28-30; Buddha's birth according to, 111; Mahāyānic traces in the tenets of, 31 Mahāvastu, 64; bhūmis treated in, 241, 286 Mahāyāna, authenticity of, 57f, 68-74; Asanga on antiquity of, 58-9; beginning of, 1, 34-45; contribution of Sarvāstivāda to, 26-7; doctrines of, 34-5; forerunners of, 27-8; geographical data about the origin of. Hīnayāna earlier than, 52, 57; Hīnayāna inferior to, 75-80; Jātakas contain traces of, 284-5; Nirvāņa according to, 199-201; origin of, 28; persons responsible for handing down, 62-3; reasons for the superiority of, 57-8, 133; sacrificing spirit of the followers of, 77; sources for the early history of, 1. See Hinayana. Mahāyānic Vinaya, 290f, influence of Hīnayānic Vinaya on, 290-322 Mahāyāna works, chronological arrangement of, 328; nature of the contents of, 43-5 Mahamati, 128 Maitreya, 112, 324 Maitrī, 12, 57, 94, 258, 316; practice of, 307-9 Majjhima-janapada, 14-15, 28

180-1

Mālava, 24, 32 Mañjughosa (bodhisattva), 305 Manjuśripariprecha, 225; Āryasatvas treated in, 225 **F198** Manomaya-dharmakāya, 122, 123, Manusyakulankula, a stage of spiritual progress, 264 Māyā, 125, 185, 196 Māyāpurusa, 186 Methods of teaching, two forms of, 216, 221 Milindapañha on Nibbāna, 165 Missionary activity, 21 Mithyā-samvrti, 218. See Samvrti. Moggaliputta Tissa, 18, 21 Moksa, 191, 196f, 200 Monism, 158. See Vedāntic Brahman.

Nāgārjuna, 22, 42f, 114, 119f, 157, 323, 325; Hīnayānie position criticised by, 186, 212-3, 223-5; on Āryasatyas, 225-6; on kāya conception, 96, 125-6; on Nirvāṇa, 186-194; on Paramārtha and Saṃvṛti satyas, 216-8, 219-222

Mūlāpatti, 88. See Apatti.

Nāgasena, 18, 23; on forms of truth, 236

Nairātmya, 196; sameness of, 55 Nairātmyabhāva, 75

Nanda, a Hīnayānist monk preaching Mahāyāna, 41

Nāstikas, 187

Muditā, 266

Nāstitva. See Nirvāņa.

Navanga, 7f, 33, 72

Negativism of Nāgārjuna, 193-4 Neyyārtha, 30n., 220n.

Nibbāna. See Nirvāna.

Nidana, 119; one of the Angas 9f, 33

Nikāyas, a mosaic of materials of different times and places, 145-7; loss of sūtras of, 147; strata in, 2n. Nirālamba, 127 Nirālamba-bhaginī, 332 Nirmāṇakāya, 35, 56, 96f, 101f, 105f, 111, 113-7 Nirmitabuddhas, 102, 116, 117 Nirodha, 279; a thing in itself.

Nirvāna, 4, 19, 33, 47, 66, 68, 76, 86f, 129, 205, 226, 232; Buddhas have one, 174; comparison of the Hīnayāna and Mahāyāna conceptions of, 198-201; different uses of the term, 153; early Mahāyāna works on, 138-141; early Buddhist conception of, 166-9; ethical conception of, 167; four interpretations of, 145; Hînayānic conception of, 92, 95, 129-169, 185, 201-3; metaphysical conception of, 168-9; Nāgārjuna defines, 186; Nikāyas differently interpret, 144-5; non-Yogācāra interpretation of, 195-6; positive conception of, 182, 183; psychical conception of, 167-8; samsāra contrasted to, 132, 187, 204; synonyms of, 203-4; threefold conception of, 166-9; two forms of, 186, 200; want of description of, 174.

Nirvāṇa=abhāva, 172-175, 189 , acetasika, 162

= ākāśa, 165, 183

= amatapadam, 151f

= bhāva, 189

= eternal death, 156, 161-4

= ksaya, 173, 188

= liberation from duḥkhatā, 129-130

=negation of both bhava and abhava, 191

= neither bhāva nor abhāva, 190

= not annihilation, 141-4

= not anu, 174

= not nihilism, 150

= paramārthasatya, 219

= passage from Nimitta to Animitta, 130-2 = removal of kleśāvaraņa, 132-5

= samatā, 138-9

= samjñāvedayitanirodha (quiescence), 159-161

= samudda, 165

, sāntam, 47 [151] = the infinite consciousness, 147,

= transition from laukika to lokottara, 135-7

= visamyoga, 176-7

Nirvāṇa, Abhidharmakośa on, 176-182; Buddhaghosa on, 150; Itivuttaka on, 169; Kathāvatthu on, 170-1; Keith on, 157-118; Kevaddha-sutta on, 147-151; Lankāvatāra on, 195-8; La Vallée Poussin on, 151-4; Madhyamakakārikā on, 186-192; Majjhima Nikāya on, 166; Paramatthamañjusā on, 175-6; Prajñāpāramitās on, 184-6; Stcherbatsky on, 154-7; Stede on, 167; Visuddhimagga on, 171-5

Nirvāṇadhātu, 130; a vastu, 164-6 Nisyanda-Buddha, 96, 120, 326 Nītārtha, 30n., 220n. See Saṃdhābhāsā.

Niyatagotra, 84f

Obhāsa, 168n.
Odivisa (Orissa), 28, 32, 41
Opakammika, 110
Opapātika. See Upapāduka.
Orambhāgiyas, 267
Ordination, 270, 293, 298; procedure
for, 311-2

Pakativādins, 208. See Prakṛti.
Pañcaviṃśatisāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, 325
Paññābhūmi, a stage of spiritual
progress, 275, 249

Paññādhura, a stage of spiritual

progress, 251

Paññāvimutta, a stage of spiritual progress, 251, 276, 288

Pāpadeśanā (confession), 291, 302, 304-5 Pārājikā, 294 Paramatthamañjusā on Nibbāna, 175-6Paramārtha, 27, 57, 62n, 91, 205, 232, 236-7. See Samvrti. Paramārthasatya, 218f; inexplicability of, 221-2 Paramavihāra, 260, 283-4, 289 Pārami, 285; Theravādins incorporated, 11-13 Pāramitā, 3-4, 10, 25, 35, 38, 67, 79, 278, 282, 297, 300, 306-7, 334; in the doctrines of Mahāsānghikas and Sarvāstivādins, 11-13 Pararthatva, 77-78 Parasambhogakāya, 115, 117f Paratantra, 27, 50, 120, 205, 232f Parikalpita, 27, 50, 120, 140, 205, Parinibbuta-puggala, 183 Parinirvāņa, 56, 75, 85 Parinispanna, 27, 50, 188, 232, 238 Parināmanā (transference of merit), 302, 305 Phalas, 83, 187, 224, 249, 296. See Maggas. Piņdacārika, 314, 317 Pitāputrasamāgama-sūtra, 225 Pluralism of the Hinayanists, 155 Poussin. See La Vallée Poussin. Prabhākarī (a bhūmi), 265-7, 287 Prādešika, 76 Prajnā (Pannā), 52-3, 88, 108f; function of, 134, 4, 11f Prajñākaramati, 216 Prajñāpāramitā, 10, 28, 29, 59, 64, 108f, 119, 275; Buddhas issued from, 109 Prajnāpāramitās, 44, 64; abridgments of, 329-331; a note on, 323-335; function of, 334-5; in Ceylon inscriptions, 331-2; nature of repetitions in, 332-4; on

Nirvāņa, 184-6, 192-4, 198; on

Āryasatyas, 227-8; on Bhūmis,

240-1, 286; relation among, 328-332; śūnyatā treated in, 333f; the earliest, 323-5; time of composition of, 39, 323 Prajňāpāramitāvihāra, 274 Prakṛti, 163, 164, 208 Prakrticarya, one of the four classes of practices, 37, 244, 286 Prakrtyātmabhāva, 118, 119, 123, Pramuditā-bhūmi, 245, 256-9, 260, Pranidhāna, 12, 33, 81, 257-8, 282 Pranidhānacaryā, 37, 244n., 286 Prapañca, 187, 192, 197f, 213 Prātimoksa rules, 3, 79; inadequate for the Mahāyāna ideal, 292-3, 295, 309f; followed by the Mahāyānists, 309f Prātimoksa-sūtra, 292f Pratisamkhyā-nirodha, 177f, 245 Pratisamvidvihāra, 260, 282-3, 289 Pratītyasamutpāda, 27, 69, 85, 91, 130f, 205, 208-211, 225, 60: dharmatā equated 50f; Hinayanic treatment of, Lankāvatāra on, 231; links of, 142-3; Mahāyānic interpretation of, 50f, 211, 214-5; object of, 208; Yogācāra treatment of, ₽ 230-1 Pratyātmavedya, 198 Pratyaveksanājñāna, 122 Pratyekabodhi, 13 Pratyekabuddha, See 80-4. Madhyas Pratyekabuddhabhūmi, 241, 288 Pratyekabuddhayāna, 53, 321 Pravrajyā, 311. See Ordination. Prayoga (exertion), 79 Pre-Bodhisattva stages, 242-7, 286 Pre-Sotāpanna stages 247-255, 286 Prthagiana. See Puthujjana. Pubbaseliyas, 22; on amatadhātu, 165-6 Pudgala (Puggala), 55, 141, 170,

Pudgalanairātmya, 130f, 218
Pudgalaśūnyatā, 35, 38, 133, 205, 238
Pūjana, 302-4
Punyānumodanā, 302, 305
Puruṣa, 163
Puṣpamaṇḍitā (a bhūmi), 241, 287
Puthujjana, 81, 87, 115, 136; definition of, 242, 247, 248-9, 256, 260, 286. See Pṛthagjana.

Rājāvavādaka Sūtra, 300
Ratnakūtasūtra, 301
Ratnameghasūtra, 291, 292
Ratnarāśisūtra, 291
Realists, 225
Rucirā (a bhūmi), 241, 287
Ruciraketu, 113
Rūpabrahmaloka, 136n.
Rūpadhātu, 19, 136, 254
Rūpakāya, 26, 35, 96f, 101f, 106, 111; whether vipākaja, 109-110
Rūpavatī (a bhūmi), 241, 287

Sābhisamskārasābhoga - nirnimittavihāra, 260, 277-280, 289 Saddharma-Pundarika, 9, 44 Saddhānusārī, a stage of spiritual progress, 250, 251, 255, 276, 286 Saddhāvimutta, a stage of spiritual progress, 250, 251, 286 Sādhumatī (a bhūmi), 239, 282-3 Sahā lokadhātu, 118 Sakadāgāmi, 238f, 262, 287 Sakadāgāmimagga, 176 Śākyamuni, belief about the historical existence of, 111-3; Mahāyāna preached by, 58f Samādhirājasūtra, 9 Samantabhadra (bodhisattva), 305 Samatā, 95, 121f, 138-9, 171, 184, 201, 273, 280, 309. See Dharmasamatā. Samatājñāna, 112 Sambhogakāya, 36n., 96f, 117-123, 325-6

356

Semi-mahāyāna, 36f Sambhūta Sāņavāsi, 16, 18 Samdhābhāṣā, 66. See Nītārtha. Samgrahavastu, 27n., 116, 259, 262, 267, 270, 278 Samjñā (saññā) -vedayitanirodha, 153f, 164, 167f; death compared to, 159-160; similarity of Nirvāņa with, 158-161 Sāmkhya, 208; Buddhism influenced by, 163-4 Sammitīyas, criticised by Nāgār. juna, 190 Sammuti, 205, 236-7. See Samvṛti. Samsāra and Nirvāņa, 132, 195, 205 Samskārā (sankhārā), 82, 94, 117, 142, 159f, 163, 210 Samvrti, 7, 27, 62, 91, 123, 205, 220, 237, 271, 310; exposition of, 216-8 Samvṛtisatyas, two kinds of, 218 Sangha, cāturdiśa, 14, 314 Śāntideva, 293-4; on the authenticity of Mahāyāna scriptures, 59-61; on Paramartha and 216-8, 219-222, Samvrtisatyas, Saptasatika-prajñāpāramitā, 329. 332 Saranagamana, 106f, 302, 304-5 Śāriputra, repentance of, 66 Sarvajñatā, 109, 200 Sarvāstivādins, 87; doctrines of, 26-7; kāya conception of, 102-7; Mādhyamikas criticise, 187 Sasańkhāraparinibbāyi, a stage of spiritual progress, 268 Śatasāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, 324f Sattakkhattuparama, a stage of spiritual progress, 251, 255, 263, 287 Satyasiddhis, 65; dharmakāya conception of, 108-9 Sautrāntikas, 61, 176, 188, 198; abhāva theory of, 162, 172, 177-8; Nirvāņa according to, 182; Pratisamkhyā and Apratisamkhyā

nirodha interpreted by, 177-9

Senāsanapaññāpaka, 214 Shwe Zan Aung on the conception of soul, 143 Siddhi on the Hinayanists, 230; on forms of truth, 233 Śikṣāsamvaras, 309-311 Śilapāramitā, 262 Sopadhiścza Nirvāna, 153, 160, 178 Sotāpanna, 80, 240, 255, 287 Sotāpatti, 238f, 262 Sotāpattimagga, 176 Sotāpattiyangas, 252 Soul, 17n.; denial of the existence of, 141-4. Speaking, rules regarding, 318 Spiritual guide, 312-3. See Kalyana-Śraddhā (Saddhā), 30, 303-4 Śrāvakas, 34n., 113; definition of, 80f; poor intellect of, 95; Mahayana works reverently refer to, 90 Śrāvakabodhi, 13 Śrāvakagotra, 55, Śrāvakayāna, 53-4, 55, 59, 75-6, 85-89, 321 Śrīlābha, a Sautrāntika teacher, 177, 178 Śrona Kotikarna, 103 Śrutamayī-prajñā, 116, 246 Stcherbatsky, on Nirvāņa, 154-7, 158-9, 161-4, 184; on Soul, 144 Stede, on Nibbana, 167 Sthiramati, 233 Subhūti, 28 Sudhanu, 44 Sudurjayā (a bhūmi), 271-2, 288 Sukhāvativyūha, 117, 299 vidaršanā) Śuklavipasyanā (or (a bhūmi), 240, 286 Sūnya, 26, 33; meaning of; 47, 54, 132n. Śūnyatā, 19, 37, 90, 94, 203f, 222f, 228, 310; abhāva distinguished from, 223; exposition of, 214-5; extent of agreement regarding the conception of, 47-9; lakṣaṇas of, 214; Mahāyānic interpretation of, 48, 50; object of teaching, 213; Prajñāpāramitās deal with, 383-4 Śūnyatāvādins, 186, 223 Sūtras, Vinaya rules in, 290-2

"Sutta, one of the Angas, 8 Suvarnaprabhāsa, 113, 121 Svārtha of the Śrāvakas, 78 Svasambhogakāya, 26, 98, 108, 115,

117f, 326 Svābhāvikakāya, 97, 115, 120

Ta-ming-tu-ching, 325 Tanubhūmi, 241, 287 Tathagata, 47; according to the Yogācārins, 197-8; existence of, 193-4 Tathāgatabhūmi, 116, 196, 284 Tathāgatagarbha, 49 Tathāgatajñāna, 68, 266, 272 honour Tathāgatakāya, 125; shown to, 108-9 Tathāgatavihāra, 245, 289 Tathatā, 34, 104, 193, 203, 205, 310 Tathya-samvrti, 218. See Samvrti. Teaching, two forms of, 65f, 69. See Samvrti.

Teaching in nine forms, 72. See Navanga.

Theravādins, 285; kāya conception of, 101-2; Nirvāṇa according to, 201-3; pāramis included in the doctrines of, 11-13

Tien Tai (sect), 63

Trances. See Jhānas.

Trikāya conception, an evidence for ascertaining the date of Prajūāpāramitās, 325-6. See Kāya.

Triratna, 295 Triyāna, 57. See Yānas. Triśarana, 3, 304 Truths, 108, 219-222, 223, 229, 232-3. See Aryasatyas, Samvṛti. Ubhatobhāgavimutta, a stage of spiritual progress, 251, 276, 288 Ucchedavāda (doctrine of annihilation), 141

Udāna, one of the Angas, 8 Uddhamsota Akanitthagāmi, a stage of spiritual progress, 269 Ugradattapariprochā, 291, 299 Unity, 201. See Advaya.

Upādāna (grasping of wrong ideas), 142, 189, 211

Upadeśa, 79, 239; one of the Angas, 10, 33

Upādhyāya, 291, 311, 313 Upagupta, 16f, 103

Upahacca-parinibbāyi, a stage of spiritual progress, 268

Upāli, 17

Upāliparipṛcchā, 291, 320 Upapāduka (opapātika), self-born

3ln., 111, 268 Upāsaka, 107; samvaras of, 311. See Grhī, Laity.

Upasampadā. See Ordination. Upastambha (support of merits), 79-80, 239

Upāyakauśalya (expedients), 12, 65f, 71f, 81, 91, 112, 277-8, 281, 334

Vaibhāṣikas, 161, 188, 190-1 Vainayika, 61 Vaipulya Sūtras, 72 Vaiyāvṛtyabhikṣu, duties of, 291, 314f Vajrapāṇi, 117, 128, 305 Vakkali, 99, 149, 169 Vandanā, 302-4 Vāsanā, 85f, 197, 219 Vastu, 164-6, 181-2

Vasubandhu, 45, 105, 143, 176, 184 Vedalla, one of the Angas, 82 Vedāntic Brahman, 145, 152, 154, 158, 184, 194, 201

Veyyākaraņa, one of the Angas, 8f, 33

Vibhāṣā on kāya conception, 107-8 Vibhajyavādins, 155 Vidyās, 92n. Vihārabhūmi, 244n. Vijnāna, 189, 191. See Vinnāna. Vijnanakaya, five or six, 29 Vijnānavāda anticipated, 169 Vijnaptimātratā, 188, 195 See Vijñaptimātratāsiddhi, Siddhi. Vimalā (a bhūmi), 260-2, 287 Vimokṣa 92, 117, 276 Vimokṣa of cetas, 161, 162, 181 Vimoksamukha, 274, 284 Vimukti, 34n, 36, 78, 108, 138, 199; sameness of, 37n., 55 Vimuktikāya, 128, 200 Vinaya rules in sūtras, 290-2 Viññāṇa, 117, 142, 149, 191, 210; abhisankhārā, 163; ananta, 169; apatitthita, 149, 169; patisandhi, 149, 150, 169 Vipākaja-kāya, 109-110, 120 Viparyāsas, 212, 226, 232; Arhats have, 228-9

Virāga (=Nirvāṇa), 78, 179
Vīryapāramitā, 11f, 89, 270
Visamyoga (=Nirvāṇa), 176f, 183
Viśoka, 103
Viśuddhis, 116, 175-6, 249
Visuddhimagga, on Nirvāṇa, 171-6, 182-4, 198; on stages of spiritual progress, 239
Vitarāgabhūmi, 241, 287
Viveka-khyāti, 163
Vyavahāric truths, 126, 221. See Samvṛti.

Yācanā, 302, 305
Yānas, 26n., 36f, 66; oneness of, 52-4; three, 53, 57, 74, 301
Yauvarājya (a bhūmi), 241, 289
Yoga, 152
Yogācārins, criticism of, 188, 193;
Mādhyamikas compared to, 195;
Nirvāṇa according to, 195-8
Yogins, 213

CORRECTION SLIP

Page '' '' '' '' '' '' '' '' '' '' '' '' ''	89 102 114, 116 120 121 152 166 174 200 225 231 296	fn. line l15 fr line fn. line fn. line fn. line fn.	14 5 2 1 3 24 2 28	read ,,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, delete	Kūś. Atthasālinī Der Śrutamayī Kāyaḥ Sahā loka déliverance Papañcasūdanī asiddhatta Der Mahāyānic 3 comma after History	for	Kas. Atthasālini Die Srutamayi Kāyah Sahāl oka délivrance Papaācasūdani asiddh atta Die Mahāyanic
상점 취임	296	fn. fn.	2 3	delete	", Studies		